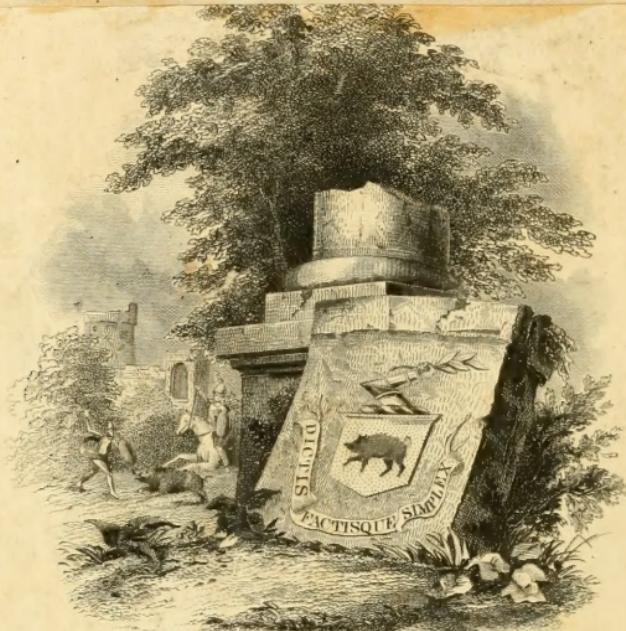




LIBRARY  
OF THE  
Theological Seminary,  
PRINCETON, N. J.

Case SCC Division  
Shelf 3439 Section  
Book V. I No.



HENRY D. GILPIN.

1187

H.D.Gilpin

69

*L. Gipin*  
A  
**H I S T O R Y**

OF THE

**PEOPLE CALLED QUAKERS.**

From their first Rise to the present Time.

Compiled from AUTHENTIC RECORDS, and  
from the WRITINGS of that PEOPLE.

By JOHN GOUGH.

---

VOL. I.

---

D U B L I N:

PRINTED FOR ROBERT JACKSON, MEATH-STREET.

---

M.DCC.LXXXIX.

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
Princeton Theological Seminary Library

---

---

## P R E F A C E.

THE people who are the subjects of the ensuing history, beside the great sufferings in person and property they endured at their first appearance, from the spirit of persecution, prevalent in that age, were exposed to another species of persecution in ungenerous attacks upon their reputation, through the misrepresentations of prejudice; the malignity or ignorance of those, who did not love, or those who did not know them; particularly the public preachers of that æra, too many of whom, provoked at their testimony against formality, priestcraft and preaching for hire; from the pulpit, and from the press, published them to the world under very obnoxious descriptions. To these, their regard to the reputation of the truth they professed, induced

P R E F A C E.

duced one or other of them to reply, in defence of themselves and their principles, and it was no difficult task for them to disprove assertions, which had no foundation in fact. They proved themselves to impartial judges guiltless of the charges exhibited against them, and refuted the fabulous invectives of their antagonists, so that few or none of these early calumnies passed unanswered; added to which, the tried innocence and integrity of their lives giving a more convincing refutation, and religious controversy at length going out of fashion, this species of abuse seemed in process of time to die away, and the world in general to look upon them in a more favourable light, not as deceivers, but as men of sincerity, probity and virtue.

Yet some modern authors of reputation in the learned world have thought it worth their while to revive long refuted calumnies, and debase the page of history with a delineation of this people, copied from the distorted caricatures of their bitterest antagonists; the consideration whereof pointed out the propriety of a new review of their real history, drawn from authentic memoirs, and genuine records, preserved in their own archives; that

that by comparing their own accounts of themselves, with those of their adversaries, a more impartial judgment may be formed of their real character: That as these authors, particularly Mosheim, and Formey after him, have not thought it beneath them to draw from oblivion, long refuted and long forgotten misrepresentations of men of worth (if solid virtue, and real religion are considered as constituent parts of worth) an attempt to rescue deserving characters, worthy of imitation in the general tenour of their lives, from the contempt and censure endeavoured to be thrown upon them, seems an act of justice, not only to them, but to the world at large.

Incited by these considerations, the compiler of the ensuing sheets hath not been discouraged by the prospect of the laborious undertaking, the scantiness of his leisure, nor his advanced stage in life, from engaging in the business of collecting and digesting the materials preserved by them, in the following history; and although the like laborious task hath before employed the pen of William Sewel, yet fresh occasion being offered, seemed to demand a fresh revisal of the real history of this people: In the prosecution

secution whereof, I propose to lay before the reader my objections to those passages, which we consider as misrepresentations, partly in notes, as occasion arises from my subject, and partly in an appendix to the history, if my life and health shall be prolonged to bring it to a conclusion, towards which it is already considerably advanced.

The reader is not to expect, in the history of this pacific body to meet with a recital of those splendid actions, or schemes of policy, which are apt to dazzle the eyes of mankind, while they generally contribute very little to the felicity of the greater part, are often productive of great damage and destruction to many; and the happiness they convey to individuals, in the splendour of a name, is but a poor recompence for the mischief they occasion, and but of short duration: But what is of much more importance to the generality of the human race, he will meet with many examples (worthy of imitation) of stedfast resolution and inflexible perseverance in prosecuting through life the great end of our being, happiness in a future state. But few men have the ability, the power or opportunity of conquering nations or governing

governing kingdoms ; but all men have immortal souls to be saved or lost, in consequence of the manner of passing the time of their sojourning here.

For this reason I have been more particular in the biography, in the accounts I have collected of the lives and deaths of several of the most serviceable members of this society, with design to point out the beneficial effects of a life of pure religion and virtue at that solemn period, which mocks the splendour of triumphs, and lays human honours in the dust ; more with a view to inspire their survivors with a desire of copying their virtues, than to build the tombs of the prophets, or garnish the sepulchres of the righteous.

I foresee an objection may possibly be made to the partiality of this history, as being taken from the memoirs and records of the people whose history it is. In many cases, and this in particular, no other authentic records can be met with, but what are preserved amongst the people themselves ; notwithstanding which, histories founded on such records, have obtained a reception ; whilst those founded on public rumour or uncertain

tain and obscure tradition obtain but little credit. Who that hath read Moses's plain account of the descendants of Israel, regards the fabulous narrative of Justin? If we had no accounts of the primitive Christians but in the works of the Gentiles, would not christianity itself be contemptible, as well as Quakerism so called? But with us who are favoured with the writings of the evangelists, the acts of the apostles, and other records of the primitive Christians themselves, the Gentile descriptions of them are thought worthy of little regard. Societies whose virtues have been more active in private life than in the bustles and notoriety of public affairs, escape the public attention, so far, as to leave few genuine records of transactions in which they are engaged, except such as are preserved amongst themselves.

The authorities I have chiefly followed are William Sewel's history of this people compared with Joseph Besse's collection of their sufferings, in the compilation whereof he informs us he "had recourse  
" to their own manuscript records, where-  
" in is preserved a genuine account of  
" such of the sufferings of their friends  
" as were transmitted to them; and also  
" consulted

" consulted several printed accounts, which  
" were published at or near the time of  
" the transactions related." I have been  
further assisted by the perusal of the jour-  
nals of several members of this society,  
who have left us memoirs of their lives  
and travels, and of the transactions in  
which they were engaged: For the ac-  
count of the settlement of this people  
in Pennsylvania and some other parts  
of America, I am much indebted to  
the assistance of my esteemed friend  
James Pemberton, and some other friends  
of Philadelphia, who with singular in-  
dustry, have procured and furnished me  
with a transcript of their history in ma-  
nuscript, drawn up by *Samuel Smith*, but  
never published; and other authentic  
manuscripts.

In fine, if I have succeeded in my en-  
deavours, to avail myself of the materials  
in my hands, so judiciously as to answer  
the expectations of my friends in a toler-  
able degree, and to convey some satis-  
faction and profitable reflection to the  
readers in general, my design in under-  
taking this work will not be entirely frus-  
trated: If otherwise, I hope I shall rest  
satisfied in the conscious reflection of en-  
deavouring to be of some usefulness in  
life,

P R E F A C E.

life, to dedicate a portion of my time to the service of society, and to promote religious consideration in an age too much relaxed by dissipation, by levity of conduct, by spiritual indolence, and great forgetfulness of the concerns of their immortal part.

## ADVERTISEMENT.

OUR antient friend William Penn (for whose writings I have a high esteem) having given us a concise recital of the various religious dispensations, and of various professions of christianity, preceding that to which the contemptuous denomination of Quakers was affixed, in his introduction to *the Rise and Progress of that People*, I thought at first I could not chuse a more suitable introduction to the ensuing history than that, enlarged with explanatory and historical notes: But on further consideration, the mode I have adopted seemed more eligible. I have kept his said introduction in my eye: but have preferred a paraphrase, before a literal transcript with notes, as exhibiting one continued narration, without the frequent breaks, which the other method must necessarily occasion.



## INTRODUCTION.

---

### S E C T. I.

*Of the different Dispensations, or Means whereby God hath condescended to reveal the Knowledge of himself and his Will to Mankind.*

THE universal consent of all nations <sup>S E C T.</sup> hath been advanced as a proof of the <sup>I.</sup> Being of a God: That in almost all ages and places of the world, the inhabitants had some notions of a Supreme Being; some way of worship; and some sense of religion amongst them: But the various erroneous notions, imperfect conceptions and absurd fictions, concerning the supreme Being, that religion which recommended man to his favour, and that worship which he required at his hand, which have been adopted by all nations whether civilized or not, the Greeks no less than the Barbarians, amount to a presumptive proof of the advantage and necessity of a divine revelation, to rescue men from error, to illuminate their dark understand-

## INTRODUCTION.

SECT. I. ings, and to convey more just notions of God, of true religion, and acceptable worship. Proving the truth of the apostle's reasoning, 1 Cor. ii. 11, 14. “*What man knoweth the things of a man, save the Spirit of man, that is in him? even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. The natural man knoweth not the things of the Spirit of God; for they are foolishness unto him; neither can he know them; because they are spiritually discerned.*”

The Creator of man, in his unsearchable wisdom, hath chosen different means by which to reveal this knowledge of himself to different ages of the world: First (according to scripture testimony) to the Patriarchs by Angels; next to the Jews by the Law of Moses. “This dispensation,” saith William Penn, “was much outward, and suited to a low and servile state, called therefore by the apostle Paul that of a School-master, which was to prepare the people to look and long for the MESSIAH to deliver them from the servitude of a ceremonious and imperfect dispensation, being only the shadow of good things to come, by discovering to them the knowledge of the reality and substance of pure religion, typified by the shadowy ceremonies of the law.”

W. Penn's rise and progress, &c. The ministrations of the prophets were the summit of the legal dispensation, and more immediately preparatory to the introduction

introduction of the Gospel of Jesus Christ,<sup>SECRET.</sup>  
 as more clearly pointing out its nature and  
 advantages above the dispensation of the  
 law ; and preparing that people for the  
 reception thereof, by representing the legal  
 ceremonies ineffectual to please God, with-  
 out ceasing to do evil and learning to do  
 well. This dispensation ended in the mi-  
 nistration of John the Baptist, the fore-  
 runner of the Messiah, as John's was fi-  
 nished in him, the fulness of all.

Now God, who at sundry times and in  
 divers manners spake to their fathers by  
 his servants the Prophets, spake to men by  
 his son, whom he made heir of all things.  
 And the religion, which this teacher come  
 from heaven introduced, excelled every  
 other, as far as the divine author excelled  
 the sons of men. I should think it bor-  
 dering on blasphemy to bring into any  
 comparison with it, the vanities of the  
 Gentiles, who knew not God : But a short  
 view thereof, compared with the Mosaic  
 dispensation, may conduce to the elucidation  
 of its superior excellency.

The law of Moses was an outward and  
 partial law, written on tables of stone ;  
 the grace and truth which came by Jesus  
 Christ was an inward and universal law,  
 written on the living tables of the hearts  
 of men. The dispensation of the Gospel  
 being the new covenant prophesied of by  
 Jeremiah : “ And it shall come to pass in Jer. xxxi.

## INTRODUCTION.

SECT. I. "the last days, saith the Lord, that I will make a *new Covenant* with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah—I will write my law in their hearts, and put my spirit in their inward parts," &c.

Under the legal dispensation the worship of God was more particularly restricted to the temple at Jerusalem built of stone; but this restricted worship was abolished under the universal Gospel of Jesus Christ, being to be no longer confined to time or place; neither to Jerusalem, nor to the mountain of Samaria; but the true worship of God was to be performed in spirit and in truth. God was now declared not to dwell in temples made with hands, but in the living temples of the purified hearts of true believers. The law of Moses as an outward law reached the outward action; the Gospel of Christ as a spiritual dispensation laid the axe to the root of the corrupt tree, to manifest and destroy sin in its first conception in the heart, in the root and ground thereof: "His fan is in his hand," said John, "and he will thoroughly purge his floor." The law of Moses made not the comers thereunto perfect as pertaining to the conscience; but the bringing in of a better hope did. The inside of the cup and platter was to be cleansed, that the outside might be clean also. Thus the Gospel appears in its direct tendency

dency designed to rectify the heart, and <sup>I.</sup> ~~secr.~~ purify the conscience from the corruptions of human nature, that the efficient cause of sin and evil being destroyed, the effect may cease; and the tree being made good, the fruit thereof may be good also, that is if the heart be made right in the sight of God, the whole conversation of consequence will be unspotted, and productive of every religious, social and moral virtue.

Thus the Christian religion in its original purity, as it was delivered to the world by its divine author and his apostles, carrieth in it the plain marks of its divine origin; as being calculated to answer the important ends of true religion, according to the prophetic anthem of the heavenly host, in the prospect of the great benefits it would confer on the human race, *Glory to God in the highest; on earth peace, good will to men.* It is plain, practical and spiritual; not a system of nice speculations, accommodated only to the understandings of the narrow circle of the wise and the learned of this world; but of important and practical truths adapted to the comprehension of common capacities, as being designed for the common benefit of mankind; not amuse the heads, but to amend the hearts of men: To instruct all who are sincere in their enquiry after salvation, in the most excellent

SECT. I. cellent wisdom, and most solid virtue, for the attainment thereof. It abolished the ceremonial part of the law, which was to continue but for a season, refneth and establisheth the moral part, as being in its nature of perpetual obligation, resoving it into two very comprehensive, but very intelligible precepts, viz. "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy soul, with all thy mind, and with all thy strength, and thy neighbour as thy self." "Whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so unto them."

Notwithstanding the evident importance and advantages of the doctrines of the Gospel, the propensities of human nature inclining men to sensual gratifications, and selfish indulgencies, in a direct opposition to the tenour of these doctrines, He, who knoweth all things, knowing this, lays it down as a radical principle requisite in a Christian, *to take up his cross daily, deny himself, and follow him.* And for his direction and assistance in reducing this doctrine to practice, hath, by his mediation and intercession, procured for him the Gift of the Holy Spirit and Grace of God, both to illuminate his darkened understanding with the clear discovery of sin and evil, in its conception in the heart; and to assist him to subdue his natural propensity thereto. "The Law was given Johni. 17. " by

“ by Moses ; but Grace and Truth came <sup>S E C T .</sup>  
“ by Jesus Christ.” “ If I go not away, <sup>I.</sup>  
“ the Comforter will not come ; but if I <sup>John xiv.</sup>  
“ go away, I will pray the Father, and <sup>17.</sup>  
“ he will send you another Comforter,  
“ even the Spirit of Truth, whom the  
“ world cannot receive, because it feeth  
“ him not, neither knoweth him ; but ye <sup>xv. 13.</sup>  
“ know him, for he is with you and shall  
“ be *in* you.” “ When the Spirit of  
“ Truth is come he will guide you into all  
“ truth.”

To these great and beneficial ends of the dispensation of the Son of God did the Apostles bear testimony, whom he had chosen, and qualified by his spirit, to turn the Jews from their prejudice and superstition, and the Gentiles from their vanity and idolatry, to the light and spirit of Christ, that they might be quickened from the sins and transgressions in which they were dead, to serve the Lord in the newness of the spirit of life. It was upon this inward principle, which cleanses the inside by the washing of regeneration, and the renewing of the Holy Ghost, that they endeavoured to build up and establish the primitive believers, as the surest foundation of real piety and moral rectitude. The primitive Christians were of consequence eminently distinguished for a purity and integrity of life, representing the essence of Christianity not to confest

**S E C T.** first in refined speculation or elegant expression, but in living well, exemplifying their faith in Christ by an uniform observance of his divine precepts ; and approving themselves (by walking in the light) children of the light, born not of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of the will of God, by doing his will, and denying their own.

Through the successful and effectual labours of the Apostles the Church maintained her brightness during their age, being dignified with all the beauty of holiness, as a city set upon a hill her light shed a lustre, attracting both Jews and Gentiles to the sense and love of truth ; the multitude of Christians increased greatly. Yet even during that age some symptoms of declension were discovered, of which these faithful pastors were not wanting to give timely warning to the believers, as well as of a greater degeneracy, which they foresaw would overspread the Church to eclipse the brightness thereof. As the Apostle Paul,

**1 Tim. iv. 1, 2, 3.** in his first epistle to Timothy, “ Now the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits and doctrines of devils ; speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their consciences feared, forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from meats.” And in

## INTRODUCTION.

,

in his epistle to the Thessalonians, cau-<sup>s</sup> S E C T .  
tioning them not to be troubled, as if the <sup>I.</sup>  
day of the Lord was at hand, he adds,  
“ That day shall not come, except there <sup>2</sup> Thess.  
“ come a falling away first, and the man <sup>ii. 3.</sup>  
“ of sin be revealed, the son of perdi-  
“ tion.” The apostle Peter also expresseth  
a clear foresight of a future apostacy:  
“ There were false prophets among the <sup>2</sup> Pet. ii.  
“ people, even as there shall be false teach- <sup>1.</sup>, 3.  
“ ers among you, who privily shall bring  
“ in damnable heresies, even denying the  
“ Lord that bought them, and bring  
“ upon themselves swift destruction; and  
“ through covetousness shall they with  
“ feigned words make merchandize of  
“ you.”

---

## S E C T . II.

*Of the gradual Declension and Apostacy of the professed and visible Church.*

THESE predictions were soon verified <sup>s</sup> E C T .  
by the consequential degeneracy of the <sup>II.</sup>  
Christian Church, from the internal life of  
godliness into external observations of  
days and meats; into useless ceremonies  
and unimportant debates. As early as the  
second century we find the churches of  
the East and West involved in a warm  
dispute

SECT. II. dispute upon a point of no greater consequence than whether Easter should be celebrated on the day whereon the Jews celebrated the passover, according to the law of Moses, or on the first day of the succeeding week. Frivolous as the subject of this controversy was, it was carried on with as much zeal and earnestness as if the present and future happiness of mankind depended thereupon; and so great was the animosity it occasioned, that Victor, bishop of Rome, excommunicated, or threatened to excommunicate, the Asiatic churches, because they dissented from his decision.

The fourth century produced a revolution in the Christian Church which, in its consequences, brought on an almost total reverse to the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and the doctrines of his apostles. Constantine, emperor of Rome, embraced the profession of Christianity, whereby that profession, from an object of persecution, aversion and contempt, became the religion in vogue. The Gentile priests, and people of course, adopted this profession, not so much from a conscientious conviction of the truth and purity thereof, as from the frivolous motive of complying with the fashion, or the more unchristian motives of securing and advancing their secular interests, or gratifying their lust of power. These pagan priests, accustomed

tomed to a ceremonious and pompous <sup>SECT.</sup> religion, introduced the impure mixture <sup>II.</sup> into the Christian Church, before too much declined : But from this period corruption overspread to an extensive degree. " An attachment to heathenish and " jewish ceremonies, the introduction of " images into the public places of wor- " ship, the canonizing and invoking of " saints," and revering Christianity into idolatry, from which it is most abhorrent, are flagrant instances that Christianity, thus metamorphosed, had no title to the character of the Church of Christ, being in its spirit and tendency the very reverse thereof.

Yet though the visible church had lost <sup>W. Penn.</sup> the nature, she endeavoured to keep up her good name of *The True Church*, and mother of the faithful. Her bishops and priests having, many of them, adopted the profession of Christianity from worldly motives, manifested their conversion to be only in name, their minds remained worldly still. They were more intent upon recommending worship by ostentatious pomp and splendour, to catch the eyes of men, than the humility and sincerity of heart, which in the church's original state of purity had made it acceptable to God. What now continued to be professed for the Christian religion degenerated into form, and even that form became

## INTRODUCTION.

SECT. II. became exceedingly marred by the introduction of unedifying ceremonies and insignificant observations. Then human invention took the seat of divine wisdom, human policy was substituted for divine Grace, the ordination of men in the stead of the call of the Holy Ghost, and temporal revenues, powers and honours became more sought after than divine favour.

Not very long after another incident succeeded, which increased the degeneracy and distractions of the visible church, viz. the irruption of the northern nations of Europe into the Roman empire, marking their progress with desolation and destruction by fire and sword wherever they came; perfect strangers to decorum and civilization, what religion they had was idolatry of the grossest kind, or a profession of Christianity little better: Idolatry, paganism and gross ignorance again overspread all Europe, and for a season overran the nations thereof, so that even the name and profession of Christianity became greatly obscured. After the Goths and Vandals, and the other northern invaders, had subdued all opposition, they settled down quietly in their conquests, having left no enemy able to withstand or oppose them; and by this means the states returning to a settlement, though an imperfect one, the monks and other

other ecclesiastics, about the seventh century, employed themselves zealously to convert these pagan nations to the profession of Christianity, and met with considerable success; but the doctrines which they taught, and the ends which they had in view, were very different from the purity of the apostolick age, the heavenly doctrines of Christianity being vastly corrupted by the impure mixture of superstition; and the end in view being the advancement of clerical interest and power, they chiefly influenced their converts to submission to the power of the Pope, and liberality to the priesthood.

The effect of their labours, and the Robert-temper of their converts, as they are de-<sup>scrib</sup><sub>fon.</sub> scribed by an eminent historian, evince the nature of their doctrines: "The bar-  
"barous nations, when converted to  
"Christianity, changed the object, not  
"the spirit of their religious worship.  
"They endeavoured to conciliate the fa-  
"vor of the true God by means not  
"unlike to those they had employed to  
"appease their false deities. Instead of  
"aspiring to sanctity and virtue, which  
"alone can render men acceptable to the  
"great author of order and excellence,  
"they imagined they satisfied every obli-  
"gation of duty by a scrupulous obser-  
"vance of external ceremonies. Religion,  
"according to their conception of it, com-  
prehended

SECT. II. " prehended nothing else; and the rites  
" by which they persuaded themselves  
" they could gain the favour of heaven,  
" were of such a nature as might have  
" been expected from the rude ideas of  
" the ages which devised and introduced  
" them. They were either so unmeaning  
" as to be altogether unworthy of the Di-  
" vine Being to whose honour they were  
" consecrated, or so absurd as to be a dis-  
" grace to reason and humanity."

This was another revolution in the visible church, which encreased her degeneracy, eclipsed her beauty, and established a kingdom of priests. These barbarians, grossly ignorant themselves, destroyed the monuments of literature and science in their way, as objects of little value with them, and introduced a general barbarity wherever they settled : " The human mind, uncultivated and depressed, sunk into profound ignorance." In this age of intellectual darkness, the brightness of the christian religion suffered an additional eclipse, for " although its precepts are delivered in scripture with a precision which should prevent their being wrested or corrupted," yet a body of men, who from the highest to the lowest could few of them write or read, could draw no intelligence of duty from that fountain, but simply rested upon the word of the priest for instruction. And notwithstanding

ing the priests were, for the most part,<sup>SECT.</sup>  
<sup>II.</sup> involved in the general gloom and ignorance, insomuch that many of them did not understand the breviary they were obliged daily to recite, and several of them could not read it, they had nevertheless the craft to avail themselves of the ignorance and prejudices of the people, to procure the guidance of their consciences, emoluments and power to their own order, and a superstitious veneration to their persons.

From this time ecclesiastical history (too much fullied before) becomes deformed with instances of ambition, avarice, political intrigues, persecution, cruelty and revenge, (qualities diametrically opposite to the purity and nature of Christianity) in an equal or superior degree to the annals of most secular kingdoms. "The Formey.  
" bishops in general, who had the chief  
" authority in church affairs, had, for a  
" succession of ages, lost daily more and  
" more the proper qualifications of over-  
" seers in the Church of Christ, true piety  
" and ancient simplicity of manners; and  
" were so taken up with the desire of en-  
" larging their pretensions and preroga-  
" tives, that the promotion of pure reli-  
" gion, or the salvation of those souls  
" committed to their charge, seems to  
" have been the least of their concern.  
" Nor were they content with grasping  
" most

S E C T. II. " most or all the power and possessions of  
" their respective fees into their own  
" hands, but by the impulse of their un-  
" bounded ambition they entered into  
" shameful and unchristian contentions  
" with each other for pre-eminence in  
" dignity, and supremacy in power."

Formey. " The fees of Alexandria, Rome and  
" Constantinople became, in a short time  
" after Constantine's public profession of  
" the Christian faith, possessed of so much  
" power and wealth, that to gain posse-  
" sion of them engaged the emulous ef-  
" forts of the principal ecclesiastics; and  
" the means employed to attain their de-  
" sire were as irreconcileable to the pure  
" principles of Christianity as the object  
" thereof, being frequently pursued by  
" indirect means, frequently by violence  
" and force of arms. And in a like man-  
" ner they possessed them in too general a  
" way, living on the spoil of the churches  
" in splendor and luxury, inconsistent with  
" the humility and temperance prescribed  
" by the Gospel of Jesus Christ."

The bishops of Rome, through the fa-  
vour and assistance of the western poten-  
tates, succeeded at length in the struggle  
for supremacy, in claiming and procuring  
to themselves the titles of *Universal Bishop*,  
*Vicar of Jesus Christ*, and *Infallible Head of  
the Church*. These claims, chimerical in  
themselves, and quite opposite to the ge-

nius

nious of the Christian religion, could hardly have been advanced with any reasonable prospect of establishing them, but in such an age of gross ignorance and credulity as this : Yet on these visionary foundations the ecclesiasticks found means to raise a superstructure of priestly dominion, which not only gave to the papal decrees a sanction and obedience from all degrees of people, as divine and infallible oracles, but made even kings and emperors feel the effects of the plenitude of that power, which they had artfully established over the consciences and understandings of mankind.

Splendour and magnificence, the attendants of ambition, are generally the parents of avarice, as they create many unnecessary wants, and much superfluity of expence ; the clergy, therefore, were not wanting to turn the influence they had acquired to their own secular advantage, by a continual augmentation of their property as well as their power. In the primitive church, as in all visible societies, it was necessary to raise some contributions for the public uses of the church, of which the support of the poor, and the public edifices, seem to be the principal part : These contributions were purely voluntary, and the distribution thereof entrusted to the deacons, the apostles having assigned this charge to them. And as they were

SECT. II. content with food and raiment, their demands upon the public stock were proportionably moderate, if any. Their principal concern was to gain souls to Christ, not to extort or secure property to themselves. They sought not theirs, but them.

Foster in reply to the Bishop of London's Co-  
dex. The church continued for some ages to defray the necessary expences, by the voluntary contributions of its members, and while she was under a state of suffering and persecution it is natural to suppose she was preserved in humility and heavenly mindedness: for what could nourish pride in men treated with universal contempt and hatred, as the scum and off-scouring of all things? what temptation could they have to enlarge their worldly prospects, who lived every hour in jeopardy? or what could support them under the cruel persecutions they were exposed to, or enable them, in testimony to the truth in which they most surely believed, to meet a violent death in all its terrors and tortures with calm fortitude and religious joy, but a mind redeemed from the earth, and panting for the full fruition of happiness in a future state? This temper of mind reduced their wants within narrow limits, which were easily satisfied: And being connected in gospel fellowship by the strong bonds of mutual benevolence and brotherly kindness, they who had to spare communicated to the wants of the church and

and of their brethren, according to their <sup>SECT.</sup> abilities with liberality.

II.

But when Christianity, from a state of persecution became the reigning religion of the empire, and the church was enriched with secular possessions; when princes and nobles had adopted the Christian profession, and a notion was artfully propagated, that munificence to the church would atone for sin, and purchase future felicity, and the great found it easier to give freely than live well, her possessions vastly increased by donations of lands, and pecuniary oblations: But as her portion increased, her beauty decayed. They whose office should have been exercised, after the original pattern, in diligent labour and vigilance to prevent the introduction, and overspreading of corruption in the church, became no less conspicuous for their avarice than their ambition. The bishops, as it might seem, in order to <sup>Foster.</sup> get the revenues of the church into their possession, relieved the deacons from the charge of the administration, and took it upon themselves. When the bishops of Rome, assuming the title of Universal Bishop, affected the state of secular princes, they soon found means to appropriate the lands of the church of Rome to the see. Other bishops soon followed their example, and engrossed to themselves the patrimony of the churches under their

SECT. care, of consequence, the poor and other  
II. necessary charges of the church, were but  
scantly provided for.

Amongst the rest the inferior orders  
of the clergy, who were dependent on the  
bishops, had been destitute of support by  
other means, than their portion of the  
income of the church lands. It seemed  
necessary to devise means for their sup-  
port, independent of this income, and  
with that view they cast their eyes upon  
the tithe of the produce of lands, after  
the Jewish model; these were accordingly  
preached up with remarkable zeal: " So  
Hume.  
" that during some centuries (saith a mo-  
" dern historian) the whole scope of ho-  
" milies and sermons was directed to in-  
" fluence the people to punctuality in  
" paying them; and one would have ima-  
" gined, from the general tenor of these  
" discourses, that all the practical parts  
" of Christianity were comprehended in  
" the exact and faithful payment of tithes  
" to the clergy." In addition to this ex-  
tenfive revenue, various other pretexts were  
contrived to encrease it still more: Purga-  
tory, penance, dispensations, indulgences,  
were crafty impositions upon the credulity  
of these dark ages to extort gain to the  
priesthood: The living were deceived into  
liberality; and the dying, in their  
weakest moments of despondency and  
approaching dissolution, were beset by de-  
signing

signing ecclesiastics, to obtain bequests <sup>SECT.</sup> under the notion of purchasing a com- <sup>II.</sup> munion of the good works of the church, in order to encrease the estate and revenue thereof.

About the end of the thirteenth century the apostacy was come to the height. There appeared little in the professing Christian church which bare any resemblance to the religion of Christ and his apostles. The holy scriptures being lock'd up in an unknown tongue, beyond the comprehension of the ignorant people of this illiterate age, they were deprived of their means of discovering the traces of pure Christianity, and the corruptions which had crept into the church. They had no means of knowing what Christianity was but through the corrupt representations of their teachers. The rules of their conduct were not the sacred precepts of the Gospel, but the decrees of Popes; and innovations, and unmeaning fancies of visionary Monks; which, instead of promoting the true spirit of religion, appear studiously calculated to draw off the human mind from researches of this nature, as such enquiries must have a tendency to detect the deceptions of these (apparently pious) impostors.

Yet as in the purest ages of the church there were some members who were not sincere and steadfast in the faith, or fell away

**S E C T.** away therefrom, so in the most corrupted  
 II. state thereof, I believe, there were several  
 who, through all the mist of ignorance  
 and superstition, were faithful according  
 to their knowledge, and sincerely disposed  
 to do the will of God, as far as they could  
 discover it; but being few were hidden  
 Rise and obscure. "For it was now," faith  
 Progress. William Penn, "the true church fled into  
 " the wilderness, that is from superstition  
 " and violence, to a retired, solitary and  
 " lonely state, hidden, and out of the  
 " sight of men. In this state many at-  
 " tempts she made to return, but the wa-  
 " ters yet too high blocked up her way,  
 " and many of her excellent children in  
 " several nations fell by the cruelty of  
 " superstition, because they would not fall  
 " from their faithfulness to the truth."

---

### S E C T. III.

#### *Of the gradual Advancement of the Reformation.*

**S E C T.** EVEN during these ages of gross dark-  
 III. ness there arose a few individuals endued  
 with light and sense to discern the enor-  
 mities abounding in the church, forti-  
 tude to bear their testimony against them,  
 and fidelity to seal their testimony with  
 their

their blood. For the general darkness was <sup>S E C T.</sup> too gross as yet to admit a full display of light, and the dominion of priestcraft over the consciences of the people so riveted, and its power so firmly fixed, that every attempt to remonstrate against corruption, and to let light into the minds of the people, whereby the sources of the wealth and power of the priesthood might be in danger of being exhausted, was frustrate, and generally terminated in the punishment of those who made such attempts with death. For the visible church of those ages, that she might manifest her variance with the true church of Christ in all her fruits, in her treatment of those who opposed her doctrines, or exposed the futility of her claims, gave a scope to her vindictive resentments in the exercise of unparalleled cruelty, not only opposite to the meekness and forbearance prescribed by the doctrines of the gospel, but disgusting to the feelings of common humanity.

In the 12th century Peter Waldo, a ci-<sup>Formey.</sup> tizen of Lyons, about the year 1140, applying himself to the study of the scriptures, and finding therein no grounds for several of the popish doctrines and practices, publicly opposed them. He translated the scriptures into the vulgar language, and from them taught and inculcated a doctrine much more conformable

S E C T. ble to the gospel of Christ than that professed in the Roman church. His followers were denominated Vaudois or Waldenses. In the same century arose another body of men of like sentiments, who also perceiving the palpable errors and shameful vices of the Romanists, thought it their duty to separate from their communion, and to exert their endeavours for a reformation. These were the Albigenses, who were so named from Albi, a considerable town of Languedoc, near which Peter and Henry Bruys, the first preachers of this sect, formed their assemblies.

The popes and the clergy, having long enjoyed an uninterrupted dominion over the consciences of mankind, as far as their power extended, and stopped up the avenues of free enquiry, by implanting in the human mind an implicit trust in their doctrines and decrees, were very much alarmed and exasperated at these efforts to cast off the yoke, and unveil the mystery of iniquity. And accordingly made these Vaudois and Albigenses feel the weight of their resentment in all its strength and violence. Most of their teachers were dragged to the stake ; and it was only the encreasing number and power of their adherents, rendering them formidable, which for the present rescued them from sharing the same fate.

But

But in the succeeding century, under <sup>SECT.</sup> <sup>III.</sup> the despotic papacy of Innocent III. whose haughtiness made kings and emperors submit to his imperious sway, a cruel and bloody war, to which the blasphemous appellation of the *Holy War* was affixed, in order to enflame and deceive the people, was raised and carried on by the instigation of the pope and his dependant ecclesiastics, who called in the force of arms against these Vaudois and Albigenses to gratify their implacable aversion: They invited the princes to assist them, particularly Philip Augustus, King of France. They raised numerous troops, who set up the cross\*, indulgences were freely

\* The Cross was the badge worn by those who engaged in the Crusades, or wars undertaken against the infidels to dispossess them of the Holy Land (so called). These wars were termed *holy*, and those who engaged in them (besides many other privileges) were persuaded that they were engaged in the cause of heaven, and under its immediate protection: They received a plenary indulgence for the remission of all their sins, &c. In imitation of these appendages of the Crusades, those of this war were assumed; to fix an impression on the minds of the men employed therein, that they were embarked in a sacred cause; that their exertions therein would atone for their sins, and that the gates of heaven were open to such as should fall in the holy warfare. By such artifices the Pope and his Clergy raised armies in their cause, regardless of the guilt of sanctifying the most flagitious crimes, under colour of means to obtain eternal happiness. Formey writes, " Amongst the most zealous promoters of this war, called **HOLY**, but that in reality was most execrable, we find Dominick Guzman a Spaniard, who founded the order of Preachers called Dominicans, and contrived the dreadful tribunal of the inquisition: And Francis of Assises, who, about the same time, gave

**SECT.** freely given, and the war was carried on  
III. with cruelty almost unequalled, in order  
 to effect the entire extirpation of these  
 sects: But they failed of accomplishing  
 this design; for their barbarous treatment  
 of such of the Vaudois as fell into their  
 hands struck the rest with such horror,  
 that when they were reduced by war, so  
 as to be unequal to further resistance,  
 they avoided the tortures designed for them,  
 by dispersing, and spreading themselves  
 and their tenets in different parts of Eu-  
 rope, Divine Providence so ordering it,  
 that by these means the seeds of the refor-  
 mation were widely scattered.

The next essay towards a reformation,  
 which claims our attention, took its rise in  
 England, through divine goodness one of  
 the first states of Europe favoured with the  
Formey. dawn of the light of reformation. John  
 Wickliffe, rector of Lutterworth in Leic-  
 estershire, lived in the latter end of the  
 reign of Edward III. and the beginning  
 of that of Richard II. about 130 years  
 before Luther, a man of good understand-  
 ing, great courage, and solid piety. The  
 doctrine he publicly preached was di-  
 rectly opposite to the received notions.

He

“ gave rise to the order of Minorites or Franciscans. These  
 “ two men were afterwards ranked by the Catholics in the  
 “ number of their Saints, and not undeservedly, if the most  
 “ bloody fury, and the most extravagant notions, could give  
 “ them a right to sanctity.”

He particularly insisted on the vices of <sup>SECT.</sup>  
the priests, the tyranny of the court of <sup>III.</sup>  
Rome, and the insatiable avarice of the  
monks, who invaded every thing; and  
persevered with great zeal and intrepidity  
to oppose superstition and unmask hypo-  
cify. Being appointed by Edward III.  
one of the members of an embassy sent  
in 1373 to Pope Gregory at Avignon, to  
remonstrate against the heavy taxes with  
which England was burthened by the  
popes, he was furnished with an oppor-  
tunity of seeing the papal court, observing  
the nature of its policy, and the licenti-  
ousness of its morals, at which he con-  
ceived much disgust, persuading himself  
it was the see of Antichrist.

He applied himself with diligence to  
the study of the sacred writings, and was  
the first who translated them into English.  
From this source drawing purer instruc-  
tion concerning the nature and spirit of  
the Christian religion than that which  
was conveyed through the vitiated chan-  
nel of the clerical doctrines and exposi-  
tions of those times, he clearly perceived  
the nullity of various papal pretensions;  
that the Pope had no valid claim to infal-  
libility; that the power he had assumed  
over all the church, and over the princes  
of Christendom, was a mere groundless  
imposition, without authority from reason  
or revelation. He opposed the worshiping  
of

SECT. of saints and images, indulgences, the celibacy of the clergy, the doctrines of transubstantiation, and auricular confession. <sup>III.</sup> He maintained that the New Testament was a perfect rule of faith and manners, and therefore ought not to be kept from the people, but divulged amongst them that they might read it; and that tithes were pure alms, which should not be extorted by compulsion, but accepted as the voluntary oblations of the donor. His doctrines thus derived from the same original, viz. the scriptures, and the practice of the primitive church, are represented to be nearly the same with those propagated by the reformers in the sixteenth century.

Notwithstanding this bold and open opposition to doctrines and practices, which had passed for certain and reasonable, and received the sanction of the assent and approbation of several ages, this reformed was favoured beyond the preceding reformers, to escape the punishment of his heresy, as it was termed, and died of a stroke of the palsey in the year 1385, at his rectory of Lutterworth. This was not owing to any relenting temper or tenderness in the ecclesiastics: They wanted power more than inclination to punish the man who had the audacity to undermine their credit and authority. It was a great mortification to them that he had escaped their

their vengeance while living, which they <sup>SECT.</sup>  
 wreaked upon his memory and reputation <sup>III.</sup>  
 after his death, blasphemously and mali-  
 ciously asserting that he was gone into  
 eternal damnation, and that his last dis-  
 temper was a judgment upon him for his  
 manifold heresies and impieties \*. Besides  
 this, ecclesiastical malice, unlimited in cru-  
 elty, and unabated by time, vented itself  
 in a ridiculous and senseless persecution of  
 his remains, his body being dug up and  
 burned by a decree of the council of Con-  
 stance forty years after his decease. The  
 same council condemned to the flames  
 two Bohemian disciples of his, John Hus  
 and Jerome of Prague, in violation of  
 good faith, they having attended the said  
 council under promise of protection by  
 the emperor's safe conduct.

Edward the IIIId. a prince of great wis-  
 dom and fortitude, had penetration to per-  
 ceive the pernicious tendency of the papal  
 encroachments, and the nullity of their  
 pretensions to revenues and dominion in  
 England; and the spirit to with-hold the  
 one and withstand the other. And this  
 spirit in the prince seems to have spread  
 amongst

\* What these impieties were, we may easily apprehend; when we consider that what past for religion at this *Aera* was devotion to the interests of the Clergy, and veneration to their order. For as to his moral conduct we are informed that "Wickliffe himself, as well as his disciples, was distinguished "by a remarkable austerity of life and manners."

S E C T. amongst the people, which opened the  
<sup>III.</sup> way for the reception of Wickliffe's doc-  
trines, amidst a general discontent at the  
usurpations both of the pope and their  
own priests. Above the rest John of Ghent,  
Duke of Lancaster, brother to the King,  
and during the minority of Richard re-  
gent of the kingdom, encouraged his prin-  
ciples, and protected his person against  
the vindictive measures of the clergy, to  
bring him to punishment, which they re-  
peatedly attempted, but were disappointed  
of effecting their purpose. Such was the  
disposition of the nation at this time, that  
the proselytes to his doctrines, who re-  
ceived the appellations of Wickliffites and  
Lollards, became very numerous; and al-  
though the priests in the succeeding  
reigns regained power to persecute them  
with violence, they could not thoroughly  
eradicate the principles he had propagated  
from the minds of many of the people of  
England; who were thereby prepared  
more readily to fall in with the more ex-  
tensive reformation of the following age.

When the professors of Christianity in  
the papacy of Urban II. in the eleventh  
century, were almost universally seized  
with the extravagant passion of recovering  
Palestine out of the hands of the infidels,  
and resolved upon those expeditions, which  
were distinguished by the denomination  
of Crusades, from the standard of the  
cross

cross erected by the pope, and the sign <sup>SECT.</sup> <sup>III.</sup> thereof worn by the soldiers employed therein, the pope and the clergy, actuated by an extraordinary zeal to forward this pious undertaking (as they would have it esteemed) amongst other immunities and privileges granted those who should engage therein a plenary indulgence, and remission of all their sins. The gates of heaven (they were made to believe) were set open to them, without any other proof of their penitence than engaging in these expeditions. The prevalent effect of these indulgences upon the superstititious imaginations of the people, in bringing vast numbers to enlist under the banner of the cross, encouraged the ecclesiastics to continue them after the Crusades were laid aside, on every future occasion of suppressing all who became obnoxious to ecclesiastical power, under the notion of *heretics*, a term of reproach and odium applied to all such as exposed the futility of their usurpation of power over the consciences and rights of mankind. Their wars against the Vaudois, it hath been remarked, they termed *holy*, in imitation of the Crusades, and like indulgences were promised to the adventurers therein.

But these indulgences were not confined merely to the purpose of encouraging religious wars: When the priests and monks had

SECT. III. had wrought upon the superstitious minds of their followers, to bring them into the delusive persuasion of the efficacy of them, they converted them into a very lucrative and scandalous traffic, which obtained and gained ground till the popedom of Leo X. a man more celebrated for a taste in literature and elegance, and the encouragement thereof, than for experience in religion, or promoting it in purity: The liberality of his disposition, and his affectation of great splendour and magnificence, ran him into a profusion of expence, to which even the revenues of the papal see were inadequate. So that in order to provide a more ample supply, he resorted, amongst other means, to a sale of indulgences; the dispersing of which in Saxony was committed to one Tetzel, a Dominican friar. This man and his associates scandalized the more serious and thinking part of the people, both by the extravagance of their assertions in favour of their merchandize, and by the licentiousness of their morals. Martin Luther, an Augustine monk, offended at Tetzel's absurd and wicked assertions in recommendation of his wares, stood forth in open opposition thereto, and in his sermons and writings zealously endeavoured to open the peoples eyes to discern the fraudulence and impiety of this imposition. The gross darkness of the night of apostacy

apostacy was drawing to an end, wherein <sup>SECT.</sup> mankind had been artfully kept in ignorance of their rights and real interest; and the dawning of clearer light was fast advancing, and opening the understandings and minds of many for the more ready reception of the purer doctrines of the gospel. Luther's doctrines gained ground in Germany, in spite of the united efforts of the secular and ecclesiastical powers. Even the Pope's Bull, which had been so formidable to the greatest potentates, made little impression on Luther and his followers; he disregarded all their menaces, and attempts to stop his progress; and being supported by fundry princes of the empire, particularly the Electors of Saxony, he proceeded strenuously and undauntedly in the work of reformation, in which he was effectually seconded by Philip Melancthon; and soon after Zuinglius embarking in the same cause in Switzerland, the principles of these reformers spread widely through Germany, and from thence through other parts of Europe.

In England the sparks of light kindled in many hearts by the preceding labours of John Wickliffe in the cause of reformation, which had been smothered rather than extinguished by the persecutions to which the Lollards were exposed, revived

SECT. by means of several works of the German  
III. reformers translated into English. William Tindal and some others, who were inclined to the reformation, dreading the effects of King Henry's arbitrary temper, had fled to Antwerp: During their abode there, besides other books against the corruptions of the Church of Rome, Tindal employed himself in translating the scriptures into the English language; these books they sent into England privately, and by that means made many converts: But the pertinacious jealousy, which the Romish ecclesiastics entertained of divulging the Bible in the vulgar tongue, betrays a consciousness that the dominion they had established upon the superstitions, and the credulity of ignorance, would not bear the test of reason enlightened by revelation: And that while they were pretending to instruct the people in religion, and artfully making it the supporter of their usurped prerogatives, they dreaded nothing more than that the people should be supplied with the means of becoming acquainted with the pure source of religious truth, exhibited in these sacred records.

The Bishops strenuously decried Tindal's translation, as abounding in errors to that degree that it was not fit to be corrected, but utterly suppressed. Tonstal, Bishop of

of London [afterwards of Durham] pro-  
secuted all the copies at Antwerp to be  
bought up, and burned publicly in Cheap-  
fide: But this did no service to the clerical  
cause; for a considerable body of the  
people, who were now brought over to  
feel more reverence for these inspired  
writings, than for the priesthood, took  
occasion of much offence and reproach at  
committing to the flames those volumes,  
which they considered as the word of God.  
Neither did it answer the Bishop's intention,  
for Tindal soon after published a  
more correct translation of the New Testa-  
ment, copies of which were sent over to  
merchants in London, who dispersed them  
privately amongst their friends and ac-  
quaintances; and after some time his  
translation, being revised and corrected by  
Archbishop Cranmer, was established by  
authority, and in the year 1538, by com-  
mand of King Henry VIII. was set up in  
every parish church, (so called) in order  
that the people might read it. This was  
a great step in favour of the reformation,  
and greatly increased the adherents there-  
to. But this was the utmost of the refor-  
mation in this reign; King Henry contin-  
ually wavering between the old religion  
and the new, kept and left the reforma-  
tion in an imperfect state. It was consider-  
ably advanced in the minor reign of  
King Edward VI.

SECT. III. But the succeeding reign of Queen Mary, an arbitrary, weak and cruel princess, educated in the Romish superstition, to which she was a bigot in the extreme, overturned the reformation, diverted the national religion into the old channel, and reintroduced popery, with all its train of superstition, bitterness of enmity, and severity of persecution. This revolution proved literally a fiery trial upon the sincerity of the reformers, many of whom were brought to the stake, and suffered martyrdom with remarkable fortitude and piety, bearing a noble testimony to the truth they believed in, and against the errors, corruptions and cruelty of the church of Rome, to the last. Unshaken from their faith by flattery or menaces, they supported their testimony in the midst of tortures, and undauntedly sealed it with their blood. It was computed that no less than two hundred and seventy-seven suffered by fire, besides those punished by imprisonment, fines and confiscations, and the numbers who sought safety in flight. Divine Providence was pleased to deliver his people by cutting short this barbarous reign, the Queen being removed by death, after a reign of about five years and four months.

She was succeeded by her sister Elizabeth, who from her education, temper and

and intellectual abilities, formed a ~~con-sect.~~  
trast greatly to her advantage over her <sup>III.</sup> ~~predecessor.~~

She is said to have resolved upon furthering the reformation while she was held in the constraints of a pri-<sup>Gold-</sup>  
~~son,~~ and upon her coming to the crown <sup>finith.</sup> immediately set about it. The parliament compleated what she had begun, and in the course of a single session the reformation was established in that form which constitutes the present system of the church of England ; to the ready accomplishment whereof, it is apprehended, the disgust conceived by the people at the frequency and barbarity of the late executions greatly contributed.

It is justly to be esteemed a signal favour, demanding the grateful acknowledgments of the inhabitants of these nations, that divine Providence, in abundant mercy to Great Britain and its dependencies, was pleased to rend the veil of superstition, disperse the cloud of papal darkness, and cause the morning of Gospel light to dawn upon them ; and those pious worthies, who by the purity of their manners and doctrines, by the tenor of their lives, and their faithfulness to death in testimony to the truth, were the principal instruments of bringing about and forwarding the reformation, are justly entitled to honorabl esteem

SECT III esteem, and doubtless enjoy the reward of well-done. But as the apostacy from primitive purity was gradual, and did not arrive at the height in one day or age, so it is not to be expected in the nature of things, that a complete reformation should be effected at once : multitudes attached to opinions long received as unquestionable truths, were prepossessed against the reformed doctrines ; and the majority of the ecclesiasticks, repugnant to a reformation which threatened the diminution of their gain and authority, violently opposed the attempts of the reformers as dangerous innovations, insomuch that these were forced to win their way step by step ; and at last, when by the successive revolutions of two reigns the ardour of that zeal which gave rise to and promoted the reformation began to wear away, and the protestants, harassed and driven into exile by the persecutions under Mary, naturally wished for a quiet settlement in their native country on any tolerating terms, the protestant religion was established in England under Elizabeth ; but in this establishment the maxims of human policy seem to have had too much influence, whereby those of the scripture were so qualified and restricted as to leave too many vestiges of the declension from the original purity of

of the Gospel dispensation remaining, di-  
vers things being reserved in use, for  
which we find no precedent in the pre-  
cepts or practice of our Lord Jesus Christ,  
or his apostles after his ascension.

Priestcraft, which ever sullied and obscured the brightness of Gospel light, had too much scope, and retained too much influence in the established system. In imitation of the Romish hierarchy, the clergy of the church of England assumed to themselves the *title* and *property* of the *Church*, which originally belonged to the *whole body or congregation of the believers*. The first ministers of the Gospel claimed *neither* to themselves, as they aimed at no power or dominion over their flocks, no reverence to their persons or their order, but what naturally resulted from the superiority of their spiritual gifts, the excellency of their ministry, and their exemplary lives. They claimed no share of the church's stock, but what necessity required; they had no idea of engrossing the whole to themselves, and leaving the poor, and the building or repairing the places of worship, an additional burden upon their hearers.

And although the reformation in some degree diminished both the power and the property of the priesthood, yet it left them more than enough of both to answer

SECT. <sup>III.</sup> fwer the end of a perfect reform, or to redress all the grievances complained of under the former hierarchy. It left them titles of distinction unheard and unthought of in the primitive church, such as archbishops, deans, archdeacons. It left in possession of the superior orders not only the title of lords of the realm, but the power and honours appendant to that high rank, and allotments of lands sufficient to support the state and dignity of that station, which, however consistent with human policy, appear to be irreconcilable to these precepts of Christ and his apostles. *The princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great, exercise authority upon them : but it shall not be so among you.* Matt. xx. 25, 26. *A bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God ; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker ; not given to filthy lucre, but a lover of hospitality ; a lover of good men ; sober, just, holy, temperate, &c.* Titus, i. 7, 8. *Feed the flock of God, which is among you, taking the oversight thereof, not by constraint, but willingly ; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind : Neither as being LORDS over God's heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.* 1 Peter, v. 2, 3.

The vesting in the Bishops such a portion of honour, power and property, had no tendency to advance reformation; bearing

ing too near a resemblance to those badges S E C T. of distinction borne by those of the Church III. of Rome, it was thought by many a refuming of the spirit, and principles of the former hierarchy, and defeating the ends of separating from that church, and protesting against the impositions and domineering spirit thereof.

For although we admit that many respectable characters have adorned the bench of Bishops at and since the reformation, yet it is too manifest that these honours and emoluments of the office have proved a tempting bait to ambition to too many others, probably the greater part, whereby they have been drawn into negligence of their pastoral charge, to frequent the courts and palaces of princes, to hunt after greater preferments; and to pay more attention to their secular, than their spiritual calling.

The power also left in their hands proved a temptation to revive the spirit of persecution amongst them; soon forgetting all the ill usage and hardships their predecessors had undergone, during the bitter intolerance of the last reign, from the Romish Bishops; the Protestant Bishops were hardly firmly seated in their stalls, till they exerted their endeavours to force an uniformity, which comprehended an universal assent to the propriety of their prerogatives,

SECT. III. prerogatives, and a submission to their power and decrees in matters ecclesiastical, by the penalties of imprisonments, confiscations, banishment, and (in some instances) of death. In their legislative capacity they were too generally zealous promoters of penal laws against non-conformists, and in their official and executive capacity strenuous aiders and abettors in carrying them rigorously into execution.

The reservation of tithes for the maintenance of the priests is another of the reliques of the apostatized church, an imposition which even ecclesiastical avarice did not extort till the ages of gross darkness and ignorance ; and the grounds on which they were claimed, the return of Gospel light clearly manifested to be merely nugatory, and that they could not be retained in any reformation reverting to primitive purity, as no vestige of such a demand could be derived from the new testament, or the original practice of the Christian church.

Sundry other articles of the former superstitution were reformed but partially : Ostentatious splendor and human contrivance in worship, and in the decoration of temples ; the clerical vestments, pluralities and non-residence of the clergy, appear plain instances of a deviation from the simplicity, disinterestedness, and conscientious

scientious concern for the propagation of <sup>SECT.</sup> <sub>III.</sub> pure religion, conspicuous in the primitive age of Christianity ; and the latter, of a spirit of avarice approaching to injustice.

William Penn, who lived nearer those times, and whose introduction to his account of the rise and progress of the people called Quakers I have had my eye upon in the progress of this part of my work, having described the successive steps of the reformation in general terms, I quote his description, with some explanatory notes, as the readiest method to bring this introduction to a conclusion.

“ The last age did set some steps towards reformation, both as to *doctrine*,  
“ *worship* and *practice*; but *practice* quickly failed, for wickedness flowed in a little time, as well among the *professors* of the *reformation* as those they reformed from; so that by the fruits of conversation they were not to be distinguished. And the children of the reformers, if not the reformers themselves, betook themselves very early to *earthly policy* and *power*, to uphold and carry on their reformation that had been begun with *spiritual weapons*; which I have often thought has been one of the greatest reasons the reformation made no better progress as to the

SECT. III. "the *life* and *soul* of religion. For whilst  
"the reformers were lowly and spiritu-  
"ally-minded, and trusted in GOD, and  
"looked to him, and lived in his fear,  
"and consulted not with flesh and blood,  
"nor sought deliverance in their own  
"way, there were daily added to the  
"church such as one might reasonably  
"say should be saved; for they were not  
"so careful to be safe from persecution  
"as to be faithful and inoffensive under  
"it; being more concerned to spread the  
"truth by their faith and patience in  
"tribulation, than to get the worldly  
"power out of their hands that inflicted  
"those sufferings upon them: And it  
"will be well if the LORD suffer them  
"not to fall by the very same way they  
"took to stand.

"In *doctrine* they were in some things  
"short; in other things, to avoid one  
"extreme they ran into another; and  
"for *worship*, there was for the genera-  
"lity, more of *man* in it than of GOD.  
"They owned the *spirit*, *inspiration* and  
"revelation indeed, and grounded their  
"separation and reformation upon the  
"sense and understanding they received  
"from it, in the reading of the scrip-  
"tures of truth. And this was their  
"plea; the *scripture* is the *text*, the *spirit*  
"the *interpreter*, and that to every one for  
"himself.

“ himself. But yet there was too much of <sup>SECT.</sup>  
 “ human invention, tradition and art <sup>III.</sup>  
 “ that remained both in praying and  
 “ preaching ; and of worldly authority  
 “ and worldly greatness in their ministers,  
 “ especially in this kingdom, *Sweden*,  
 “ *Denmark*, and some parts of *Germany*.  
 “ GOD was therefore pleased in *England*  
 “ to shift us from vessel to vessel,\* and  
 “ the

\* These were first distinguished by the appellation of Puritans, and afterwards by that of Presbyterians. During the persecution under Mary's cruel and bigotted reign many of the reformed Church had sought an asylum from the fury of the persecution in those foreign countries where the Protestant religion had obtained an establishment, particularly at Frankfort and Geneva. Here a disagreement arose between them respecting ceremonies, discipline and modes of worship. Those who had taken up their residence at Frankfort adhering to the regulations established in England under King Edward, and those at Geneva adopting the doctrine and discipline established there by Calvin. When the persecution in England terminated with the life of Mary, the exiles returned and brought their difference along with them. The Puritans, so called from their singular purity of life and manners, in which I have no doubt many of them were very sincere, being represented of exemplary lives, diligent in preaching, and moral in their conduct, desirous of a greater reformation, and wanting the useless ceremonies and clerical habits to be laid aside, or at least not to be imposed upon them against their consciences ; they also wished the Common-prayer Book to be left indifferent, i. e. to be used or not, as every minister or congregation might be fully persuaded in their own minds : Although these demands appear reasonable, both the civil and ecclesiastical rulers thought otherwise, and insisted upon an absolute and entire conformity to that model of religion which they had agreed to establish for the observation of the whole kingdom.

The Puritans appear not at first to have entertained any design of separating from the established Church : their teachers

SECT. " the next remove bumbled the ministry,  
 III. " so that they were more strict in preaching,

ers had no aversion to a participation in her revenues, or to have officiated as parish ministers, if they might have been indulged to officiate in consistency with their religious scruples; and many efforts they made in this and the succeeding reigns to procure for themselves a comprehension in the church. But the Bishops, averse to every concession whereby any part of the ecclesiastical revenues might be possessed without an unreserved conformity to their prescriptions, and submission to the decrees of their convocations, in conjunction with the ecclesiastical commissioners appointed by the Queen, proceeded first to silence the puritan preachers, and deprive them of their benefices; and afterwards to persecute and imprison them. The Puritans, hereby despairing of a coalition with the established Church, withdrew from it, and formed themselves into a separate society; but with as much privacy as possible, to escape the edge of the penal laws.

It doth not appear, that during their endeavours to keep their places in the church, they made much objection or opposition to the order of Bishops; but seemed content to act under them, if they might be allowed the liberty of disusing the vestments, which they looked upon as reliques of popery, and of using such parts of the liturgy only as they might judge for edification. But for their non-conformity in these frivolous and unnecessary matters, being prosecuted with rigour by the Bishops, they were confirmed in a dislike to episcopal government; and when they separated into a select society, in the place of Bishops they chose ruling Elders, or Presbyters, from among themselves, from whence they received the appellation of Presbyterians.

Although in their first separation from the church of Rome, and afterwards in their dissent from the church of England, the Puritans were, many of them, actuated by pure conscientious motives, and were men of circumspect lives, and a pious, religious turn of mind; yet in process of time, historians remark, the sincerity of their successors, and their zeal for religion, degenerated into formal preciseness, and outward show of purity, while their actions manifested, that their real views were more turned to the acquisition of secular power than holiness. To wrest the sword out of the hands of their executors, they formed a party in the state, and when they had carried

“ ing, devout in praying, and zealous for <sup>SECT.</sup>  
 “ keeping the LORD’s DAY, and cate-  
 “ chizing of children and servants, and  
 “ repeating at home in their families  
 “ what they had heard in public. But  
 “ even as these grew into power, they  
 “ were not only for *whipping* some out,  
 “ but others into, the temple; and they  
 “ appeared *rigid in their spirits* rather than  
 “ severe in their lives, and more for a  
 “ party than for piety, which brought  
 “ forth another people that were yet more  
 “ retired and select \*.

“ They

carried their point to get the power into their own hands, they proved themselves equally intolerant, and as great sticklers for conformity to their directory, confession of faith, and solemn league and covenant, as the Bishops had been for conformity to the use of the surplice, the liturgy, and the cross in baptism.

\* This sect at first received the appellation of Brownists, from Robert Brown their pastor, a puritan preacher of Norfolk, and afterwards that of Independents: His followers were so prejudiced against the established church, by reason of the severities she exercised upon the Puritans, that they went farther in their separation than the Presbyterians had done; for the latter were very willing to own her as a true church, and even to unite with her, if she would but abate them certain ceremonious usages; but the Independents would not allow her to be a trne church, nor her ministers true ministers, and renounced all communion with her. They apprehended every church ought to be limited within the bounds of a single congregation, and that it had full power, exclusive of secular penalties, over its own pastor and members, independent of the superintendency or controul of any other congregation or general assembly, or of the civil magistrate, as far as conscientious scruples gave no disturbance to civil order; (for although they found it afterwards expedient to convene Synods,

they

SECT. III. " They would not communicate at large or in common with others, but formed churches

Florence.  
McAulay.

they allowed them only the privilege of advising, but not of any controvertial or governing power) and thence they were styled *Independents*; but this independence connected them so slightly, and their particular sentiments seem to have been so different, that it was difficult for them to adhere closely together, or for others to know precisely what the system of their doctrines was. Their political sentiments coincided with their religious tenets, being favourable to civil liberty, but to a degree which proved, by experience, too refined for the present state of civil society. In ecclesiastical government they were for independency; in civil government for republicanism. To them our modern historians ascribe the origin of the doctrine of toleration, but go too far in asserting that they uniformly maintained it in their practice when invested with power: the succeeding history will exhibit some melancholy instances in contradiction to such assertion. In fine the pursuit and acquisition of secular power proved highly detrimental to their reputation and their innocence; introducing a polluting transition from religious thoughts and feelings, and a circumspection of life and manners, regulated in some measure by the doctrines of the gospel; to political considerations, and maxims of human prudence in the administration of civil government, wherein their leaders and teachers betrayed symptoms of ambition, avarice, and a vindictive disposition irreconcileable to the purity of Christianity; at the same time continuing to make a high profession of, and pretensions to, religious purity, which gave occasion to Historians of the opposite party to represent them, and other dissenters, as a body of Pharisaical hypocrites: But it appears to me both ungenerous and unsafe to comprehend any body of men under one general character, which is most frequently the result of the narrow spirit of party-zeal, and secret antipathy, rather than that generosity of sentiment and dispassionate temper of mind, which can calmly investigate truth and applaud virtue, wherever it may be found. I believe the Independents, in common with other societies, in their first separation from the established church, were generally actuated by conscientious motives; that many of them retained their integrity; that several of more tender consciences among them, offended at

the

“ churches among themselves of such as <sup>SECT.</sup> III.  
“ could give some account of their con-  
“ version, at least of very promising ex-  
“ periences of the work of God’s Grace  
“ upon their hearts; and under mutual  
“ agreements and covenants of fellow-  
“ ship they kept together. These people  
“ were somewhat of a softer temper, and  
“ seemed to recommend religion by the  
“ charms of its love, mercy and good-  
“ ness, rather than by the terrors of its  
“ judgments and punishments, by which  
“ the former party would have awed peo-  
“ ple into religion.

“ They also allowed *greater liberty* to  
“ prophecy than those before them,  
“ for they admitted any member to  
VOL. I. D “ speak

the latitude taken in their measures by some of their ruling members in their political capacity, left them in search of a purer and more undefiled religion elsewhere. For it is too notorious to be controverted, that the conduct of too many of their principal men and pastors, whose particular conduct commonly fixeth the character of the whole body, was unjustifiable in various instances: Their policy in acquiring, and their jealousy of losing their power, which many looked upon as a violent and unjust usurpation, pushed them upon some measures, which cannot be defended upon the principles of religion, morality or humanity. Their reputation, notwithstanding, was very considerable for wisdom and political capacity in the administration of public affairs, during which they made a conspicuous figure; but with the termination of their power their religious character seemeth to have been irrecoverably lost, they soon sunk into obscurity, and dwindled in Neale, their numbers, till they became so inconsiderable a body of themselves, that they applied for, and obtained their desire, to be incorporated amongst the Presbyterians.

SECT. " speak or pray as well as their pastor,  
III. " whom they always chose, and not the  
" civil magistrate. If such found any  
" thing pressing upon them *to either duty*,  
" even without the *distinction of clergy or*  
" *laity*, persons of any trade had the li-  
" berty, be it never so low and mecha-  
" nical. But alas ! even these people suf-  
" fered great loss, for tasting of *worldly*  
" *empire*, and the *favour of princes*, and  
" the *gain* that ensued, they degenerated  
" but too much. For though they had  
" cried down national churches and mi-  
" nistry, and maintenance too, some of  
" them, when it was their own turn to  
" be tried, fell under the weight of  
" worldly honour and advantage, got into  
" profitable parsonages too much, and  
" outlived and contradicted their own  
" principles ; and, which was yet worse,  
" turned, some of them, *absolute perse-*  
" *cutors of other men for God's sake*, that  
" but so lately came themselves out of  
" the furnace, which drove many, a step  
" farther, and that was into the water :  
" *Another baptism*, as believing they were  
" not *scripturally baptized*, and hoping to  
" find that presence and power of GOD  
" in submitting to this watry ordinance,  
" which they desired and wanted.

" These

\* " These people also made profession <sup>SECT.</sup>  
" of neglecting, if not renouncing and <sup>III.</sup>  
" censuring,

\* The third society mentioned by William Penn, as aiming to carry the reformation still farther, are the Baptists, (or Anabaptists) who received that denomination from their objecting to the validity of infant baptism by sprinkling, and their practise of baptizing by the immersion of adults, whom they considered as believers, thinking these the only proper subjects of this ceremony. Upon this account they claim an immediate descent from the apostles and the primitive church, whose practice in this respect, they maintain, was the same. But their origin is generally deduced from later ages, they being considered as having sprung up in Germany, by separating themselves from the Lutherans, because their reformation was imperfect, and not brought up to the primitive standard; as the proper mode and subject of baptism was not allowed by them to be necessary in the performance of that rite. Therefore they re-baptized their followers, condemning infant-baptism as unscriptural, and of no effect, whence they acquired the name of Anabaptists. In their first separation they also seem to have been actuated by sincere and purely religious motives; and exemplified the sincerity of their religious profession, by the strictness of their lives and doctrines, being conspicuous for their morality, mortification, and simplicity of dress. They exclaimed not only against the authority and tyranny of the church of Rome, but against every authority which opposed the rights of conscience.

This society was much exposed to persecution, and therefore it was natural for them to exclaim against it. Yet in their early appearance in Germany some under the denomination of Anabaptists gave occasion for the extension of the magistrate's sword. Upon their first separation from the Lutherans they seem to have been more quick-sighted in discovering what to reject than what to pursue; it appears as if they were not agreed in any system of religious principles except the doctrine of baptism; in other respects their principles were lax and indeterminate, which gave a latitude to some unsettled spirits under their name to adopt opinions destructive to the peace and order of civil society. " That amongst Christians, who had the precepts of the gospel and the spirit of God to guide them, the office of magistracy was

SECT. " *suring, not only the necessity, but use of*  
 III. " *all human learning, as to the ministry, and*  
       " *all*

" not only unnecessary, but an unlawful encroachment on  
 " their spiritual liberty; that all Christians, throwing their  
 " possessions into one common stock, should live together in  
 " that state of equality, which becomes the members of the  
 " same family." Nay, it is said they went so far as to main-  
 tain, " that as neither the laws of Nature nor the New Tes-  
 tament had placed any restraints upon men, with regard to  
 " the number of wives they might marry, they should use  
 " that liberty which God himself had granted to the Pa-  
 triarchs."

The actions of these men were such as might be expected to flow from such extravagant notions: they made an insurrection in Westphalia, seized the city of Munster, and in their attempts to establish a commonwealth conformable to their wild ideas, ran into the most exorbitant and criminal excesses; which induced a confederacy of the secular powers to quell them by force of arms, and bring the ringleaders to condign punishment. This being effected, these commotions, which were principally raised by two obscure men, John Matthias, a baker, of Haarlem, and John Bocold, a journeyman tailor, of Leyden, subsided entirely; but the brand of infamy, which they stamped upon the denomination, was too deep to be readily effaced; and involved the innocent with the guilty in the fatal consequences of these disorders: Being persecuted in one city they fled into another, dispersing themselves and their opinions into divers countries, where although they led a quiet and peaceable life, and disavowed the criminal extravagancies of those of Munster, yet riveted prejudice, detestation and persecution were long attendant upon anabaptism, wherever it was adopted or professed. Numbers were martyred in different countries for their adherence thereto. And although in England persecution hath not in latter ages proceeded to that extremity; yet in every storm of persecution here, they had generally their full share. Next to the body of people, who are the subject of the following history, they were perhaps the most hated and persecuted sect, they having adopted many opinions of the same tenor with those which exposed the people called Quakers to the severity of their sufferings: they maintained the liberty of prophesying,

“ all other qualifications to it, besides the <sup>SECT.</sup>  
 “ *helps and gifts of the Spirit of God,* <sup>III.</sup>  
 “ and those natural and common to men.  
 “ And for a time they seemed like *John*  
 “ of old, *a burning and a shining light to*  
 “ *other societies.*

“ They were very diligent, plain and  
 “ serious, strong in scripture and bold in  
 “ profession, bearing much reproach and  
 “ contradiction. But that which others  
 “ fell by proved their snare, for worldly  
 “ power spoiled them too ; who had  
 “ enough of it to try them what they  
 “ would do if they had more : And they  
 “ rested also too much upon their watry  
 “ dispensation, instead of passing on  
 “ more fully to that of the fire and *Holy*  
 “ *Ghost*, which was *his baptism, who came*  
 “ *with a fan in his hand, that he might*  
 “ *thoroughly, and not in part only, purge*  
 “ *his floor, and take away the dross and the*  
 “ *tin of his people, and make a man finer*  
 “ *than Gold.* Withal they grew high,  
 “ rough and self-righteous, opposing far-  
 “ ther attainment ; too much forgetting  
 “ the day of their infancy and littleness,  
 “ which gave them something of a real  
 “ beauty,

as any individual was authorized and qualified by the gift or Raynal.  
 influence of the holy Spirit ; some of them held war to be in- Confession  
 consistent with Christianity, and scrupled to take an oath ; of faith of  
 they insisted that the gospel ought to be free, and denied the general  
 right of tithes, or other compulsory maintenance of mi- 1660.  
 nisters. Art. 16.

SECT. " beauty, insomuch that many left them,  
III. " and all visible churches and societies,  
" and wandered up and down, as *sheep*  
" without a *shepherd*, and as *doves* with-  
" out their *mates*; seeking their *beloved*,  
" but could not find him, as their souls  
" desired to know him, whom their souls  
" loved above their *chiefest joy*.

" These people were called *Seekers* by  
" some, and the *Family of Love* by others;  
" because, as they came to the knowledge  
" of one another, they sometimes met  
" together, not formally to pray or preach  
" at appointed times or places, in their  
" own wills, as in times past they were  
" accustomed to do, but waited together  
" in *silence*, and as any thing rose in any  
" one of their minds that they thought  
" favoured of a *divine spring*, they some-  
" times spoke. But so it was, that some  
" of them not keeping in *humility* and in  
" the *fear of God*, after the abundance  
" of revelation, were exalted *above mea-*  
" *sure*; and for want of staying their  
" minds in an humble dependance upon  
" him that opened their understandings  
" to see *great things* in his *law*, they ran  
" out in their own imaginations, and  
" mixing them with those divine open-  
" ings, brought forth a monstrous birth,  
" to the scandal of those that feared God,  
" and waited daily in the temple, not  
" made

“ made with hands, for the consolation of ~~SECT.~~ <sup>III.</sup>  
“ *Israel*; the *Jew* inward, and circumci-  
“ sion in spirit.

“ This people obtained the name of  
“ *Ranters*, from their extravagant dis-  
“ courses and practices; for they inter-  
“ preted CHRIST’s fulfilling of the law  
“ for us to be a discharging of us from  
“ any obligation and duty the law re-  
“ quired of us, instead of the condem-  
“ nation of the law for sins past, upon  
“ faith and repentance; and that now it  
“ was no sin to do that which before it  
“ was a sin to commit, the slavish fear of  
“ the law being taken off by CHRIST;  
“ and all things good that man did, if  
“ he did but do them with the mind and  
“ persuasion that it was so, insomuch that  
“ divers fell into gross and enormous  
“ practices, pretending in excuse thereof,  
“ that they could, *without evil*, commit  
“ the same act which was sin in another  
“ to do.”

Their extravagancies and immoralities shocking the sincere seekers of pure religion amongst them, they relinquished a community fallen into manifest disorder, to search after it elsewhere; and many of other societies also, feeling a desire after a greater degree of purity and peace of mind than they had yet met with, were at a loss to know where to find

SECT. III. find it, or whom to apply to for direction.

About this time Providence saw meet to raise up an instrument to gather a people from those who were dissatisfied with these different professions, and were looking for the revelation of the Gospel in greater purity, as well as many who were not. A man of strong natural parts, firm health, undaunted courage, remarkable disinterestedness, inflexible integrity, and undisguised sincerity, unacquainted with the doctrine of the schools, and unattached to any system, but endued with a power and authority which schools cannot convey, speaking the language of experience, and of a heart versed in the work of sanctification. The tenor of his doctrine, when he found himself concerned to instruct others, was to wean men from systems, ceremonies, and the outside of religion in every form, and to lead them to an acquaintance with themselves, by a most solicitous attention to what passed in their own minds ; to direct them to a principle in their own hearts, which if duly attended to, would introduce rectitude of mind, simplicity of manners, a life and conversation adorned with every christian virtue, and peace, the effect of righteousness, which they were looking for. Drawing his doctrine from

from the pure source of religious truth, <sup>SECT.</sup>  
the New Testament, and the convictions <sup>"</sup>.  
of his own mind, abstracted from the  
comments of men, he asserted the free-  
dom of man, in the liberty of the Gof-  
pel, against the tyranny of custom, and  
against the combined powers of severe  
persecution, the greatest contempt and  
the keenest ridicule. Unshaken and un-  
dismayed he persevered in disseminating  
principles and practices conducive to the  
present and everlasting well-being of man-  
kind with great honesty, simplicity and  
success. It seems proper, therefore, with  
an account of this extraordinary charac-  
ter, who was the first preacher of the  
principles of the society afterwards dis-  
tinguished by the contemptuous appella-  
tion of Quakers, and the first person who  
received that name, to open the history of  
this people.



---

---

H   I   S   T   O   R   Y  
O   F   T   H   E  
P E O P L E C A L L E D Q U A K E R S.

---

B   O   O   K   I.

From the Birth of George Fox to the End  
of the Commonwealth.

---

C H A P T E R   I.

*Birth of George Fox.—His early turn to Religion.—Is put apprentice.—Religious Thoughtfulness predominant in his Mind, and its Effects.—He leaves his Relations.—Falls under great Trouble of mind.—Applies to several Priests, but receives no Relief.—Withdraws from the publick Worship.—Passeth his Time in Retirement.—Grows in religious Experience.*

GEORGE FOX was a native of Leicester-<sup>C H A P.</sup>  
shire, being born at Drayton in the Clay, in the  
said county, in the year 1624, of parents not  
considerable for their rank in the world, but  
respectable in their neighbourhood for piety,  
and integrity of life, who gave him a sober, al-  
though not a learned, education, in the way and  
worship

I.  
1624.  
Birth of  
George Fox.

**C H A P.** worship of the national church: <sup>L</sup> His mother especially, a woman of qualifications superior to the generality of her circumstances in life, observing the bent of his disposition to gravity and seriousness from his childhood, treated him with particular tenderness and indulgence, being careful not to discourage his virtuous inclinations, feeling much satisfaction in these early indications of a pious and religious turn of mind in her son.

**His early turn to religion.**

**2624.** As he grew up, this seriousness and gravity grew up with him, and his contemplative turn of mind enlarged his understanding with just notions of religion in his early minority, insomuch that about the <sup>b</sup> eleventh year of his age,

**2635.** he had clear conceptions of righteousness and purity; whereby he was influenced to be faithful in all things; inwardly to God, and outwardly to man. <sup>c</sup> The stayedness and gravity of his demeanour suggested to some of his relations a desire that he might be educated for the Priesthood;

**He is put apprentice.** whether the circumstances or the inclinations of his parents prevented, <sup>d</sup> he was put apprentice to a shoe-maker, by whom he was chiefly employed in keeping of sheep, an employment well suited to the temper of his mind, both for its innocence and solitude. In his service and commerce he was truly conscientious, discharging his trust with the most scrupulous fidelity to his master, and honesty and integrity to all he dealt with.

**1643.** At the expiration of his apprenticeship he returned home to his parents, and religious consideration

<sup>a</sup> Penn's Preface to George Fox's Journal. <sup>b</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 2. <sup>c</sup> Ibid. <sup>d</sup> William Penn's Preface.

federation having still the ascendancy in his mind, C H A P.  
 the clear impression fixed therein of the refined  
 nature of true religion, pointed out to him the  
 necessity of great circumspection in all his words  
 and actions ; <sup>I.</sup> that his words should be few and  
 savoury, seasoned with Grace, sincere and void  
 of deceit ; that he must deal with all men up-  
 rightly as in the sight of God ; that he must be  
 watchfully temperate in eating and drinking,  
 using the Creatures not for the gratification of a  
 carnal appetite, but for the preservation of health,  
 as Servants in their places to the Glory of him  
 who created them. At the same time observing  
 in the greater number of those who were high  
 in profession of religion, a latitude in their con-  
 duct and conversation ; an indulgence in sensual  
 gratifications ; or an attachment to temporal pur-  
 suits, to a degree, in his view, irreconcilable to  
 the purity of the Christian religion, it occasioned  
 him discouragement, and anxiety of heart to that  
 degree, that he could not, sometimes, take his  
 natural rest ; but spent his nights in watchings  
 and in prayer : Under his solicitude on the most  
 important subject he received this internal admoni-  
 tion “ Thou feest how the young people go to-  
 “ gether into vanity, and old people into the  
 “ earth ; thou must forsake all, both young and  
 “ old, and be as a stranger unto all.”

This, which he understood to be a divine command, determined him to leave his relations and acquaintance ; to detach himself, as much as possible from company and conversation, for fear of being drawn into unwatchfulness, and transgressing the limits of pure religion, and receiving hurt thereby. <sup>f</sup> Yet in his moving about  
 (for

643.  
 Religious  
 thoughts  
 predomi-  
 nant in  
 his mind ;  
 and its ef-  
 fects.

<sup>e</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 2.

<sup>f</sup> Penn's Preface.

**C H A P.** (for he tarried not long in any place) he sought  
out the most retired and religious people to con-  
verse with, as he felt freedom, or apprehended  
the pointings of duty thereto, and sojourned  
amongst them. <sup>f.</sup> In these his solitary travels,

<sup>1643.</sup>  
and falls  
under great  
trouble of  
mind.

he was under great trouble and anguish of mind  
to that degree that he was tempted almost to de-  
spair, whereby he was brought to a narrow scru-  
tiny and retrospection into his past life; and  
blameless as it seems to have been, his anxiety

<sup>1644.</sup>

still increased nigh to despondency at times. In  
this state a doubt arising in his mind of the rec-  
titude of his conduct in leaving his relations, he  
returned home; yet here feeling little mitigation  
of his sorrows, he had recourse to several of the  
Priests in these parts, who were in repute for re-  
ligious experience, to consult them, for their  
counsel and advice; but found no real benefit or  
help from them, they not being able to reach his  
state, or administer the relief he wanted.

**Applies to**  
**friendly**  
**priests.**

<sup>1646.</sup>

<sup>h</sup> Being disappointed in his application to these  
teachers, and finding them to him Physicians of  
no value, he was discouraged from a dependence  
upon them. And shortly after this his under-  
standing being enlightened to see beyond the  
prevailing popular prejudices, “That an educa-  
“tion at Oxford or Cambridge was not enough  
“to fit and qualify men to be ministers of Christ,”  
and “That God did not dwell in temples made  
“with hands,” he declined the attendance of  
the public worship, to hear sermons unavailable  
to the state of his soul, and to join in prayers  
and singing not expressive of its feelings, esteem-  
ing it not worship, but offensive to the divine  
being, who knows the secrets of all hearts, to  
address

**He with-  
draws from**  
**the public**  
**worship,**

<sup>g</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 3, &c.

<sup>h</sup> Ibid, p. 4, 5.

address him in language not conceived in the soul, nor formed from the inward feeling of what it stood in need of.<sup>1</sup> He therefore turned his views toward the dissenters, as apprehending more tenderness and religious experience among them: yet he found not that satisfaction here, which he desired: For being convinced that to be a true believer was a more arduous attainment than mankind in general apprehended, and that they only were such “Who *were born again*” and “*had passed from death to life*: that a profession of truth without the possession; a form of Godliness destitute of the power thereof, prevailed too much amongst the different classes of the professors of Christianity. Wherefore withdrawing from communion with all outward societies, he retired alone into solitary places, frequently with his bible, and employed himself in reading and meditation there.

For the space of three or four years he lived in privacy and solitude; during which time, through a variety of probations, he grew in religious experience, and the work of sanctification: being illuminated with the clear discovery of the mystery of iniquity; endued with wisdom and fortitude to avoid evil; and steadily to endeavour after righteousness and holiness; which, through divine Grace, he was enabled to attain in a good degree. By a strict attention, and ready obedience to the teacher nigh at hand, the word in the heart, and in the mouth, to be heard and obeyed, he was endued with intellectual discernment, to distinguish between the essential, and external part of religion, between the spirit and the letter: the latter he thought

and passeth  
his time in  
retirement  
and soli-  
tude.

Growtheth in  
religious ex-  
perience,

unavailable

<sup>1</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 7.

**C H A P.** unavailable of itself to salvation ; but the former he adopted, as that without which no man can be saved. Thus by an internal monitor, being, (as the wise scribe in the Gospel) well instructed to the kingdom of heaven, and qualified to bring out of the treasury of his own experience, things new and old ; he felt it his duty not to <sup>1</sup> hide the light under a bed, or under a bushel, but to set it as on the candlestick to diffuse light to the nation ; that is, publickly to recommend to mankind an inward attention to the same internal monitor, <sup>1</sup> the light which enlighteneth every man that cometh into the world.

and publicly exhorts to an attention to the light, &c.

Human literature not essential to a gospel minister.

I know that George Fox and his Friends have been exposed to much contempt and ridicule, for assuming the province of teachers, being many of them illiterate men : But absurd and ridiculous as it may appear in the eyes of human policy or contemptuous science, the sequel proves them not without qualification for the part which they undertook. They, and the people called Quakers after them in general, although they neither did nor do condemn nor reject useful literature, yet were and are fully of opinion it is not an essential qualification of a Gospel minister ; but that the inward experience of the work of conversion and sanctification is : That the latter without the former may constitute the character of a minister of the Gospel ; that the former without the latter never can. We admit that good natural parts, and an enlarged understanding, are valuable accomplishments, and gifts of the Creator of man for great and good purposes ; that being cultivated and improved

\* Mark, iv. 21.

<sup>1</sup> John, i. 9.

improved by useful knowledge, they may bring C H A P.  
advantage to the possessor in particular, and the  
community in general, for many purposes of this  
life; and that being sanctified by divine grace,  
they may be made highly subservient to promote  
the welfare of mankind in the best sense, if, in  
gratitude to the beneficent giver of every good  
and perfect gift, they be devoted to the ends for  
which he gave them, the advancement of religion  
and virtue: that by such an application alone  
of these precious gifts, men act as faithful Stew-  
ards of the talents their Creator hath entrusted  
them with, to whom we must all give an account  
of the use and improvement we have made of  
them, which merits the serious consideration of  
all who are favoured with these advantages.  
Yet we esteem it the most valuable and genuine  
characteristic of the Gospel, that its doctrines,  
whereby life and immortality are brought to  
light, under the influence of divine Grace, are  
intelligible to the unlearned in human literature,  
as well as the learned: This we believe as the  
necessary consequence of the divine attributes of  
Goodness and Justice. We consider Christianity,  
not as a speculative science, but a practical  
doctrine; and that religion most worthy of our  
study and pursuit, which mends the heart, and  
regulates the life and manners, not that which  
only fills the head with a notional apprehension  
of divine things. If George Fox with experi-  
ence without learning became a preacher of  
righteousness, so did those, who of all others  
have the most undisputed title to the character  
of Gospel ministers, viz. the Apostles, on the  
authority of one of themselves, <sup>m</sup> “ That which

1646.

<sup>m</sup> 1 John, i. 1 and 3.

CHAP. I. " we have heard, which we have seen, and our  
 1646. hands have handled of the word of life—de-  
 "clare we unto you."

---

## C H A P. II.

*George Fox travels abroad again.—State of the Nation.—A general Turn to Religion prevalent, and religious Opinions multiplying, open a freer Reception for George Fox's Ministry.—His first Appearance as a Minister.—Independents seize the Government.—George Fox's first Appearance in Prayer.—Attends a public Dispute at Leicester.—Endeavours on all Occasions to promote Righteousness.—Symptoms of Disgust against him begin to appear.—I. For disusing customary Modes of Salutation and Address—Other Causes of Offence.—Chiefly the Doctrine of him and his Friends concerning Gospel Ministry.—George Fox's first Imprisonment at Nottingham.—Removed to the Sheriff's House, and back to Prison.—His ill Treatment in other Places.—Occasion thereof.—Apology for it.*

CHAP. III. <sup>1647.</sup> *IT was in the year 1647 that George Fox conceived it his duty to leave his outward habitation a second time, and travel abroad, to seek out the most serious and religious people to associate and converse with. Passing through part of his native county and Derbyshire he came*

\* George Fox's Journal, p. 6. William Penn's Preface p. 84.

C H A P.  
II.

1647.

came into Nottinghamshire ; and in his passing along, wherever he met with honest-hearted religious people, he would enter into religious conferences with them, as freedom and opportunity invited; for mutual improvement and edification ; but he chiefly recommended silence, and abstinence from self-performances, in order to turn the attention of men more stedfastly to the light of Christ within them ; and to wait in patience to feel the power of this divine principle animate them to a heavenly temper, and a life of righteousness ; always exemplifying the doctrine he taught in his own practice.

At this time the nation was in a very unsettled state. After some years of civil war, commenced, (as alledged) for the redress of grievances, and limiting or preventing arbitrary power, (for which too much occasion had been given) and terminating in a contest for the supremacy. The Presbyterians and their adherents, assisted by their brethren from Scotland, had vanquished the Royalists, and were themselves overreached by the Independents, who having now gotten the King into their hands, a prisoner in the Isle of Wight, and the army, attached to their interest, were proceeding rapidly to fix themselves in the seat of government. As this civil war had been undertaken to redress religious grievances as well as those in the state, that class of the people who were distinguished by the denomination of Puritans and Sectaries (having suffered much persecution under the power of the bishops) ranked generally on that side which aimed at the abolition of their dominion and office; and this party (who made high pretensions to sanctity and purity of religion) succeeding in their aim, both in the con-

C H A P. II.  
1647. ducting of the war, and of the government after the war was concluded, giving scope to a latitude of policy, ambition, and a vindictive temper, irreconcileable to the honest simplicity, the peaceable and forgiving spirit of the Christian religion, and the purity of their former pretensions, gave occasion to their antagonists, and sundry historians after them, to represent the dissenters of this age in general under one description of hypocritical enthusiasts, who covered pernicious designs under the veil of sanctity, and masked deep deceit under specious professions. These party-reproaches (however well-grounded in respect to some public characters) could not, with candour or justice, be applied to numbers of the people of that age, who dissented from the preceding established worship, and nevertheless were sincere in piety, and in their researches after pure and undefiled religion; for ever since the reformation had broken the shackles, with which Priestcraft had fettered the understandings of mankind, and taught them to think for themselves, and pursue the train of their thoughts in a free enquiry after truth and pure religion, many of the most sincere in their enquiries, apprehending too much of the old leaven both in doctrine, discipline and manners retained in the episcopal church; and that they had the same right by the laws of God and nature to dissent from her, that she had to dissent from the Church of Rome, were engaged in honesty of heart to wish for, and endeavour after, a more perfect reformation: and several of them evidenced the sincerity of their piety by circumspect and virtuous lives, the criterion whereby only men can safely judge of each other. *By their fruits shall ye know them.* The persecution and

and sufferings to which their dissent exposed them C H A P.  
may be considered also as a test of sincerity; for  
what man would incur certain evil, but in prospect of greater good?  
<sup>II.</sup>  
1647.

As I am far from attempting to vindicate all those who at this time made pretensions to purity, being sensible that too many of them either made religion a cloak of covetousness and ambition, or if they were ever sincere, became corrupt by the possession of power; so I cannot think they do any service to the cause of religion, who, by dwelling upon the prevailing insincerity without exception, give an air of suspicion to all religious appearances, of being only a cover to bad designs: Many, I believe, who were drawn into wrong measures, for want of discriminating religious dissent from political faction, were sincere and acted upon principle, though under the influence of human frailty liable to err in judgment, and that divers of these coming to see their error relinquished it. I believe also many others were really religious, devoted in heart to the service of their Creator, and so to pass the time of their sojourning here in his fear, as to obtain his favour; that they were preserved thereby through these times of tumult in innocence and integrity of life, lamenting the calamities of their country, and forbearing to take any active part in the guilty and distracting scene. That from the reformation to this time a spirit of free religious enquiry had been kept alive, even by the severities practised to quash it: That the civil wars, which spread bloodshed and devastation to almost every corner of the land, having stripped great numbers of much of their outward substance, and leaving the remaining part at the disposal of superior force,

CHAP. force, had an effect to wean men's affections insensibly from possessions of so precarious a tenure: That all, who could think seriously, were naturally led to look for something more stable; which not being found below, they were incited to look for it above: And that the spirit of religious enquiry, and sincere desire in many to seek after and attain solid good, received additional strength:

A general turn to religion prevalent at this time,

<sup>b</sup> It was certainly an æra when religious profession and regularity of manners were in general estimation; and amidst this general profession, we must presume many were truly conscientious in their dissent from established forms, and in their enquiry after a better way. But in these times of turbulence, and intestine commotion, when the reins of civil and ecclesiastical authority were shifting from hand to hand, sects and opinions multiplying, and many coming, and saying, "Lo here is Christ, and lo he is there," perplexed many of the honest and sincere enquirers, in their search of truth: Amidst the variety and fluctuation of doctrines and opinions, like Noah's dove, they found no rest for the soles of their feet, being under uncertainty what guide to follow, or what society to associate with; and therefore sundry others, beside George Fox, deserted these uncertain teachers, and in retirement and solitude consulted the scriptures, and the oracle in their own breasts, for instruction in the way of their duty; or met in select companies for worshipping, and mutual edification. <sup>c</sup> Amongst such as these who were weary of a fruitless search without, George Fox found an open reception for his doctrine, directing to

and opinions multiplied,

open a freer course and reception to George Fox's ministry.

an unerring guide within them, viz. The light C H A P.  
of Christ, which he hath placed as a witness for  
himself in every man's conscience.

1647.

<sup>d</sup> His ministerial labours were at first exercised in the way of religious conference with such well-disposed people as he met with upon enquiry, as he passed along from place to place in concise but instructive remarks upon the nature of pure religion. He durst not stay long in any particular place, for fear of contracting acquaintance which might not be profitable, or of entering into much conversation, whereby his mind drawn off from its habitual meditation and recollection might be retarded or injured as to advancement in religious experience. But as he went north-  
ward as far as Duckenfield and Manchester,  
meeting thereaway with some religious enquirers  
he made some stay, and had religious meetings,  
and declared truth amongst them; whereby there  
were some convinced of the truth of his doc-  
trine, who (as he expresseth it) received the  
Lord's teaching, were confirmed and stood in  
the truth.

His first ap-  
pearing as a  
minister.

This is the first instance we have of his public ministry, which, in his first setting out in this line, I understand, consisted in a few weighty expressions, attended with a reaching power, greatly affecting the hearts of his auditory.

<sup>e</sup> At no great distance from this time, another opportunity occurred for his public ministry on the following occasion: The Baptists had appointed a meeting at Broughton in Leicestershire, with some persons who had separated from them: The report thereof drew abundance of people together, even from other counties, and

A meeting  
appointed  
by the Bap-  
tists affords  
an opportu-  
nity of ex-  
ercising his  
ministry  
again.

George again.

<sup>d</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 6, 12.

<sup>e</sup> Ibid, p. 12.

**C H A P.** George Fox among others ; but from whatever cause it happened, but few of the Baptists attended. This circumstance presenting a full audience, and George feeling his mind divinely influenced, made use of the opportunity to inculcate the doctrines he had received as truth upon the minds of the assembly with success : Several by his powerful preaching, and others, by his reasoning in conferences with them, were convinced of the truth he published that day.

*Independents seize  
the government.*

1648.

<sup>f</sup> Near the close of this year O. S. the Independents and Republicans accomplished their purpose in bringing the King to the block, abolishing regal dominion ; the authority and peculiar privileges of the Nobility ; and the office of Bishops : and seating themselves at the helm of Government. Their professed principles being in favour of civil and religious liberty, the public places of worship seem, for a season, till they were more firmly fixed in their seats, to have been open to teachers of different denominations, and not uncommonly appropriated to theological discussion, and disputation between the teachers or members of various sects : This furnished George Fox and others with more public and full opportunities of divulging their respective opinions, and accordingly we find him frequently availing himself thereof.

Private houses also were occasionally open to religious conferences, and as the principal bent of this pious young man's mind, excited by persuasion of duty, was to do good to others, or reap spiritual advantage to himself, he was zealous to attend sundry meetings of this kind, appointed in these parts where he mostly resided at this

<sup>f</sup> Rapin, &c.

this time, viz. his native county of Leicestershire (to which he was now returned) and places adjacent : <sup>g</sup> Once at a meeting of sundry priests and professors at a Justice's house, and twice at Mansfield, in which he modestly offered his sentiments on the subject of disquisition, which were generally well received, and gained the assent of several of the company. <sup>g</sup> At the first meeting at Mansfield he was moved to pray (being the first time we find any account of his praying in public) and \* the power accompanying his prayer was so reaching, that the house seemed to be shaken : which occasioned some of the company to remark that it was now as in the days of the Apostles, when the house was shaken where they were. The effect of his prayer on the audience, encouraged another professor present to pray also ; but (not being under a similar influence) his prayer, instead of edifying, brought deadness and a veil over the assembly, which displeasing them, he desired George to pray again, but he could not pray in man's will.

<sup>h</sup> Soon after this hearing of a great meeting appointed at Leicester for a dispute, wherein it was reported, that Presbyterians, Independents, Baptists and Episcopalian were engaged, he went thither, the meeting being held in the public wroship

His first appearance in public prayer.

George Fox attends a public dispute at Leicester.

<sup>g</sup> George Fox's Jurnal, p. 13, 14.

\* William Penn who knew George Fox very well, from long and intimate acquaintance, gives this character of his excellency in prayer. Above all he excelled in prayer. The inwardness and weight of his spirit ; the reverence and solemnity of his address and behaviour ; and the fewness and fulness of his words, have often struck even strangers with admiration, as they used to reach others with consolation. The most awful, living, reverent frame I ever felt or beheld, I must say was in his prayer.

<sup>h</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 15.

CHAP. worship-house opened a general admission; and  
 II. liberty being granted for any to speak, after some  
 time of conference and reasoning, a woman pre-  
 sent put this Question, <sup>i</sup> *What birth was that*  
<sup>1648.</sup> *which the Apostle speaks of, A being born again of*  
*incorruptible seed, by the word of God, which*  
*liveth and abideth for ever?* The priest replied,  
 I suffer not a woman to speak in the church,  
 which drew from George Fox an enquiry what  
 he understood the Church to be, for reply, the  
 priest returning the question George expressed

Explains his Idea thereof "That it was neither a building  
 notion of a church." of lime and stones, nor a mixed multitude

" assembled together; but the pillar and ground  
 " of truth, a spiritual building composed of  
 " living stones, a spiritual household, which  
 " Christ was the head of." This, he writes,  
 set them all on fire, and the dispute was marred.  
 I own myself at a loss to discover any thing in  
 these expressions, (which are mostly scriptural)  
 to provoke any reasonable person to the least de-  
 gree of resentment, were it not that being pre-  
 posseſſed in favour of received opinions, our pre-  
 judices too easily rouse our passions to their aid  
 at the advancing of any new doctrines which  
 have not obtained the sanction of public recep-  
 tion. The pride of human nature is mortified  
 at the supposition of its being in ignorance or  
 error, and he who endeavours to inform it bet-  
 ter, or set it right, frequently meets with insult  
 and ill treatment for his pains: This occasioned  
 George Fox, a young man, obscure and illite-  
 rate, coming abroad with new doctrines, in ma-  
 ny respects opposite to the received opinions,  
 much enmity and persecution, as we shall find

in

in the sequel: but he was on a foundation not C H A P.  
to be shaken. At this time when the meeting <sup>II.</sup>  
was thus broken up he retired to his inn, whi-  
ther he was followed by several of the priests and  
professors, with whom he disputed the subject  
afresh, and maintained his opinion of the true  
church, and true head thereof, till they gave out  
and went away. Several were convinced that  
day, and amongst them the woman who put  
the question, and her family.

Travelling about in the central parts of the  
nation, and now staying more or less in a place  
as he found his mind engaged, his preaching of  
repentance, and endeavours to turn people from  
the evil of their ways, was attended with con-  
siderable success: the power and convincing au-  
thority attending his ministry daily encreasing  
the number of profelytes: So that meetings of  
them begun to be settled in these parts in the  
course of this year.

His endeavours to propagate true religion, and  
righteousness, the necessary concomitant thereof,  
were not confined to public or private meetings; <sup>He endea-  
vours on all  
occasions to  
promote  
righteous-  
ness.</sup>  
but exerted in other places as occasion offered:  
<sup>\*</sup> particularly in courts of judicature, to admo-  
nish to justice, and caution against oppression:  
In markets to recommend truth, candour, and  
fair dealing, and to bear his testimony against  
fraud, and deceitful merchandise: At public  
houses of entertainment to warn against indulg-  
ing intemperance, by supplying their guests with  
more liquor than would do them good: At  
schools and in private families to exhort to the  
training up of children and servants to sobriety  
in the fear of their maker; to testify against vain  
sports,

<sup>\*</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 23.

CHAP. sports, plays and shews, as tending to draw people into vanity and libertinism, and from that state of circumspection and attentive consideration, wherein our salvation is to be wrought out, forewarning all of the great day of account for all the deeds done in the body.

It is not improbable but this uncommon manner of intervention in places unusual might expose him to the derision of some, and resentment of others; but we meet not as yet with any instance of ill usage in his person; although the symptoms of that persecuting spirit, which soon George Fox after caused him to suffer many grievous hardships, and much injurious treatment (notwithstanding the liberal sentiments of toleration now professed) began to discover themselves in the virulent and contumelious disposition, which actuated people of all sorts against him.

For upon his appearing abroad in his more public capacity, the clear impression fixed in his mind of the purity of the Christian religion, and the too general defection of the greater part of professors therefrom, produced in him cautiousness to take no man for his copy; but singly pursuing what the light in his own conscience discovered to be right, he was led into a manner of conduct in many respects singular, but, properly considered, not absurd; although contradictory to fashion, yet not contrary to reason and propriety. <sup>1</sup> Viewing \* the customary modes of salutation

The Quakers reasons for their conduct.

<sup>1</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 22.

\* Inasmuch as this primitive simplicity of manners is still retained by the stricter sort of the people called Quakers, those who are such upon principle, and as these practices are looked upon by many to be frivoious objects of religious scruple, it seems proper in this place to recapitulate the reasons which they advance in defence of their behaviour. The practices of uncovering

Iutation in uncovering the head, and bowing the body, as owing their original to pride on the hand, 1649.

uncovering the head, bowing, and bending the knee, being marks of divine worship, they think, as such, are marks of reverence not due from man to his fellow-creature, but ought to be peculiarly reserved for the worship of their Creator, since, according to the doctrine of the Apostle Paul, the head is to be uncovered in worshipping him, as a mark of veneration; and to him and his name alone every knee must bow. Now (say they) he that kneeleth and prostrateth himself to man, what doth he more to God? He that boweth to the creature, what hath he reserved for the Creator.

Secondly, the example and doctrines of the primitive Church are against such practices. Peter's refusal of such external marks of reverence from Cornelius amounts to a presumptive demonstration that such signs of reverence were neither used, nor allowed among Christians in their state of primitive purity: And in the Angel's refusing the like expression of adoration from John, saying, " See thou do it not: I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren, worship God," we have the sense of superior Beings (who have a clearer notion of the fitness of things, and of divine perfection, and approach nearer thereunto than the short-lived, dim-sighted inhabitants of this globe, that worship, and the external signs thereof belong to *God only*.

Thirdly, they scruple compliance with these customs because they were received (amongst many other gross corruptions of Christianity) through the polluted channel of Paganism in its most corrupted state. The eastern monarchs, enervated by luxury, intoxicated by the flattery of pernicious parasites, and debauched by pride and by power, were so elevated above the common state of mankind, that they seemed to look upon themselves as something more than mortals; and demanded and received the most humiliating signs of reverence to their persons from those who approached their presence; and the most extravagant titles of adulation from all who presumed to address them. But the more virtuous and wiser Greeks refused to comply with these abject modes of access and interview, as unbecoming from man to man. Yet this conduct of the Greeks seems to have met with applause and approbation, whilst the like conduct in the Quakers is censured and condemned; a signal instance of the partial, and inconsistent judgments of men, when fashion, and not propriety is the rule they judge by.

CHAP. hand, and folly and parasitical artifice on the other, introducing marks of homage to men, which they had no just claim to, and which general usage only, and neither right reason nor real religion ratified, he esteemed it his duty to bear a public testimony against these customs, by declining compliance therewith. Being by the light and precepts of the Gospel early instructed that his words should be few and savoury ; conformable to sincerity and truth ; void of flattery and void of deceit, he felt himself circumscribed from adopting the prevailing deviation from the original propriety and simplicity of language in using *you* to a single person, or giving customary compliments, or flattering titles, and accordingly, under persuasion of duty, addressed individuals of every rank with the singular appellation of \* *thou* or *thee*, without respect of persons.

\* Their declining the use of *you* to a single person is grounded upon the like reason, the vulgar custom being derived from the same polluted source. In the scriptures throughout, in all the antient languages, and to this day in our addresses to our maker, the proper singular *thou* and *thee* are used in speaking to one. The first instance of a deviation from this grammatical propriety, that I have met with, occurs in the last stages of the decline of the Roman empire, in the reign of Valentinian and Valens, between three and four hundred years after the commencement of the Christian æra. Eutropius addresseth to Valens, *vestra tranquillitas* [your tranquillity]. And the same author dedicated his work to the same Emperor, with the following extravagant epithets : *Domino Valenti Gothicō maximo, perpetuo, augusto. To Lord Valens Gothic, the most mighty, everlasting, and august.* R. Barclay quotes from the Epistles of Symmachus to the Emperors Theodosius and Valentinian, these forms of address : *Vestra eternitas ; your eternity. Vestrū numen, your Godhead.* So this mode of addressing one as many, oweth its origin to the Gentiles, who knew not God ; to sycophants, who racked their invention for absurd and extravagant terms of adulation to their Emperors, whom, in this

sons. This uncourtlike manner of salutation and address begat general disgust, filled the magistrates, ecclesiasticks, and laicks with indignation, and exposed George Fox and his fellow-believers to much grievous abuse in their persons,

being

II.

1649.

Which is  
the occasion  
of much  
abuse and  
suffering to  
him and

this age of gross degeneracy from the manly spirit of their ancestors, they were servile and stupid enough to flatter with divine attributes while living, and enrol them among their imaginary Deities when dead. To an extravagance of Idolatry, as irreconcileable to the whole tenor of Christianity as light is to darkness, or Christ to Belial. For these reasons, this people, endeavouring to regulate their conduct and their consciences by the light they were favoured with, one might reasonably expect should have met with indulgence, rather than persecution and insult from the present rulers and teachers, whose professed principle was that every man ought to direct his conscience and interpret the scriptures according to his own convictions, light and apprehensions. What was the ground of the first reformation from Popery, but a well-founded apprehension, that in that system the beauty of Christianity was marred, and the spirit thereof lost by the introduction of foreign ceremonies, and the heterogeneous mixture of Gentile customs? And what was the ground of dissent from this first reformation, but an apprehension that it retained too much of this foreign mixture? If these reformers justify themselves in their respective separations from churches appearing to them not pure, why censure and condemn the Quakers for endeavouring to clear their system still further of heathenish vanities, introduced in the darkness of apostacy; to revert as nearly as possible to apostolical purity, and to reject every practice which hath not the stamp of divine authority upon it; much more that which in their apprehension may be offensive to the Almighty, by robbing him of his honour in a communication thereof to fallible man?

Lastly, as seekers after, and promoters of pure religion and primitive Christianity, they felt themselves restrained from practices, not only contrary to the nature and spirit of Christianity in their original; but tending to defeat the end thereof in their effect, as supplying strength and nourishment to pride and vanity in man, which the Gospel is plainly designed to weaken and destroy; and instead thereof to introduce humility and meekness into the soul.

**C H A P.** being often beaten, buffeted, stoned, imprisoned and fined for no other reason but declining to take off their hats, and to give the customary titles of adulation to men ; customs which they believed to be unlawful for them to comply with : But they preferred the testimony of a good conscience, and a faithful adherence to the conviction of that which they received as truth, to the ease and safety of their persons, or the smiles or frowns of men ; and for the sake of peace with God, patiently endured all the abuse, and ill-treatment they met with on this account ; hereby giving an indubitable evidence of their sincerity, that they were as the Jews inward, whose praise was not of man but of God.

**Other occasions of offence.** Their unfashionable demeanor was not the sole cause of the severe treatment George Fox and his fellow-labourers met with ; their doctrine, their circumspect conversation, their plain-dealing and honest testimonies against religion without righteousness, carrying in them strong reproof to hypocrisy and lifeless profession, were little less offensive to many of the ostentatious and formal professors of the age.

**Their doctrine concerning Gospel ministry the greatest offence of all.** But still the greatest rock of offence, and which created them the greatest number of enemies, and contributed as much as all the rest to fasten in the minds of the people an aversion too deeply rooted to be easily eradicated, was their opinion concerning Gospel ministry. They taught that the Gospel was free ; that the Gospel minister ought either to minister because it was his indispensable duty, or omit taking the charge upon him ; that no person ought to teach for hire, but that of the ability which God gave, they ought to give freely to the people, and their practice corresponded with this doctrine. A doc-

trine,

trine, which, touching the teachers of every other denomination in a very tender part, their interest, raised against them a combined host of foes, such as have proved able to overturn kingdoms. The priests and pastors of every other class, however at variance among themselves, generally took the alarm, and united in exertions against these hated reformers ; to paint them in hideous colours ; to impress upon the magistrates and the people the most unfavourable opinion of the doctrine and conduct of those men who in the face of the whole world had so widely deviated from the common conduct of mankind, and broached opinions in their view so pernicious. Biassed by prejudice, and blinded by passion, their representations of this people transgressed the bounds of candour and of truth ; the pulpits in the solemn hour of divine worship were converted into vehicles of calumny and fiction ; every ridiculous story was circulated to their disadvantage ; and all manner of pains taken to represent them, not what they were, but what their adversaries would have them thought to be. The press seconding the efforts of the pulpit, spread undeserved reproach widely, and to ages yet unborn. Men of letters, leisure and abilities, warped by the popular voice, without giving themselves time to consider this people and their doctrines attentively, joined in the common cause against them. This confederacy of enemies could vilify their reputation ; abuse their persons ; plunder, imprison and grievously persecute them : but could neither overset their confidence in divine support, nor prevent the increase of their numbers, till they became a very considerable body, not more remarkable for the singularities of their profession, than for the uni-

CHAP.  
II.  
1649.

CHAP. II.  
 1649. form practice of every Christian virtue, and the severity and iniquity of their sufferings for the testimony of a good conscience through three successive revolutions of government.

George Fox's imprisonment at Nottingham, and the occasion thereof.

<sup>1</sup> George Fox's first imprisonment was in the course of the present year at Nottingham: Coming thither on a first day of the week, under a persuasion of duty he went to the public worship, and the priest taking for his text these words of the apostle Peter, "We have a more sure word of prophecy, &c." which he expounded to be the scriptures, by which all doctrines, religions and opinions were to be tried. George Fox feeling, as he apprehended, a divine power opening his understanding into a clearer conception of the meaning of the text, and an authority to express his sense thereof, signified that this *sure word* of prophecy was not the scriptures, but the holy spirit, by which holy men gave forth the scriptures, whereby (as the surest interpreter of them) opinions, religions and judgments were to be tried: For it led men into all truth. The Jews had the Scriptures, yet resisted the Holy Ghost, and rejected Christ, the bright morning star, persecuted him and his apostles, while they pretended to try their doctrine by the scriptures; but erred in judgment, because they tried them without the Holy Ghost. Hereupon the officers seized him, and took him to prison, putting him into a place so filthy and intolerably noisome, that the smell thereof was very grievous to be endured. At night he was carried before the mayor, aldermen and sheriffs of the town, and after examination was remitted. But one of the magistrates was more kindly

<sup>1</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 24, &c.

kindly disposed than the rest ; John Reckless, C H A P . II.  
sheriff, being with his wife and family much af-  
fected with George's doctrine and the power at-  
tending it, after some time removed him to his  
own house : During his residence here, he had  
great meetings, which some persons of confide-  
rable condition in the world attended, and the  
Lord's power appeared eminently among them,  
whereby a great change was effected in the she-  
riff, insomuch that he and several others being  
excited by a sense of duty to exhort both the peo-  
ple and magistrates to repentance, the latter were  
so provoked, that they caused George Fox to be removed back from the sheriff's house to the com-  
mon prison, where he lay till the assizes ; yet was not then brought to his trial for any offence committed by him, for although he was ordered to be taken before the judge, the officer was so dilatory in obeying the order that the court was broken up before he got thither, at which the judge expressed his displeasure, signifying, *He would have admonished the youth, if he had been brought before him.* This backwardness in giving him an opportunity of being tried or discharged, appears to me a tacit confession that the magistrates were sensible, they had no legal cause for imprisoning him ; yet they ordered him into the common jail, and detained him there some time longer\*. And as far as appears, he was im-

1649. The sheriff affected with Geo. Fox's testi-  
mony removes him to his own house,

from whence he is removed back to the common prison and detained some time.

F 2

prisoned,

\* Daniel Neale, in his history of the Puritans, vol. II. p. 399, &c. giving an account of the first rise of the Quakers, amongst other instances of a partial bias, either by oversight or design, gives a very palliative narration of George Fox's imprisonment there, not strictly true. "Continuing his speech," faith he, "to the disturbance of the congregation, the officers " were obliged to turn him out of the church, and carry him " to

C H A P. II.  
1649. imprisoned, detained in prison, and released at the mere will and pleasure of the magistrates of Nottingham, without any legal cause assigned. Such arbitrary exertion of power but ill agrees with that regard for chartered privileges, that equal liberty, the establishment whereof these republicans pretended to have in view, in taking up arms, and in seizing the government into their own hands.

His ill treatment in several other places.

<sup>m</sup> The popular odium causelessly raised against an inoffensive character, injurious to none, but zealously employed in endeavours to do all the good in his power, began now to discover itself more openly ; where the magistrates did not interpose their authority to imprison, the populace were stimulated to abuse. In most places whither he came, bonds or afflictions abode him. \* At

Mansfield

" to the sheriff's house : next day he was committed to the castle, but was quickly released without any further punishment." For this assertion he quotes no authority but W. Sewel, whose account being drawn from the same authority (George Fox's own journal) in substance corresponds with mine. Whence Daniel Neale got his information that the officers took George Fox from the church (so called) to the sheriff's house, and that he was quickly released, he saith not ; George Fox himself saith the contrary.

<sup>m</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 26.

\* Neale passeth over this treatment of George Fox in a very cursory manner, viz. " After this he disturbed the minister of Mansfield in time of divine service, for which he was set in the stocks, and turned out of the town." ibid. Where we may observe, that while George Fox's conduct is placed in the most invidious light it would bear, *disturbing the minister, &c.* he takes not the least notice of the real disturbance raised by the priest's own hearers, in converting the place of divine worship into a scene of lawless riot, and the time set apart for the service of God into enormous abuse of a fellow-creature ; manifesting their religion to be such, at the time when it should most affect their minds, as admitted of injury, revenge,

Mansfield Woodhouse, speaking to the priest and congregation in their public place of worship, the people assaulted him in a furious manner, struck him down, and beat him cruelly with their hands,

1649.

revenge, and violating of the peace and order of civil society ; which is another instance of the partial bias of this writer, as he had as plain an account of this riot in W. Sewel's history as of the part he selected. But perhaps he might suspect that an exhibition of such conduct might depreciate his character of the temper of the times, and state of religion under the instruction and through the zealous labours of the late dissenting pastors, now the established preachers, which he thus describes : Anno 1647, " The laws against vice and immorality were strictly executed, the Lord's day was duly observed, the churches were crowded with attentive hearers, family devotion was in repute, neither servants nor children being allowed to walk in the fields, or frequent the public houses ; there was a zeal for God, and a much greater appearance of sobriety, virtue and true religion than before the civil war, or after the *blessed restoration.*" And anno 1649, " There was a great appearance of sobriety both in city and country ; the indefatigable pains of the Presbyterian ministers in catechising, instructing and visiting their parishioners, can never be sufficiently commended. The whole nation was civilized." I mean not to detract in the least from real merit, or deny diligence in discharge of duty to be very commendable and meritorious, so far. But without transgressing the bounds of candour or charity, the history of this age authorizeth the opinion, that the religion of the time had too much of the Pharisaical leaven ; in the general more specious than solid ; productive of a demure austerity rather than real internal holiness. Strictness in outward observations and appearances, while the sanctifying virtue of pure religion, which cleanseth the inside and destroyeth sin in the root, was too little regarded ; under all the appearance of sobriety and virtue, a root of bitterness remained unpurged out in many, ready on the least opposition or provocation to break out into acts of open violence and vindictive abuse. The common people as prone to tumult and excess of riot as in a more licentious age ; which dispositions are scarcely less opposite to the genuine spirit of Christianity, designed to promote peace on earth and good will to men, than profaneness or immorality.

C H A P.  
II.  
1649. hands, bibles and sticks, whereby he was grievously bruised. After they had thus far vented their rage, they haled him out and put him into the stocks, where he sat some hours; and then they took him before a magistrate, who seeing how grossly he had been abused, after much threatening, set him at liberty. But still the rude multitude, infatiate in abuse, stoned him out of the town, though hardly able to go, or well to stand, by reason of their violent ill usage, for no other cause but exhorting them for their good. With much difficulty he reached the distance of about a mile from the town, where he met with some people humane enough to administer some cordials for his ease, being inwardly bruised. At Market Bosworth he was also stoned out of the town: and at Chesterfield he was detained in custody till late at night, and then put out of the town by officers and watchmen, and left in the dark to provide for himself as well as he could. In the midst of his sufferings he had the consolation of apprehending himself in the way of his duty, and of finding that in each place some were convinced, and others confirmed in the truth by his ministry.

Occasion  
thereof.

The occasion of this repeated ill-treatment which he met with from place to place was still the same: his speaking to the priests and people in their public assemblies, to bring them off from the teachings of men to the teachings of the grace of God in their own hearts: Now at the first appearance of this people several others of them as well as George Fox, thought it their duty to go to the public places of worship, to declare to the priests or people the burden of the word on their minds; mostly (though not always) waiting till their worship was ended, and then

then delivering, or attempting to deliver, their sentiments in quietness (as far as I can discover from their accounts) and in as few words as possible, for which they were often treated with great violence and outrage; and to palliate such treatment, irreconcileable to the professed purity of this period, or to the good order of civil society, great pains have been taken to describe their conduct in terms of aggravation to a heinous offence, and at this day may seem to deserve censure: Let us take a retrospective view of the manners and principles of that age, and I think we may find some cause of excuse for their seeming intrusion. This people were not single, at that time, in their sentiments concerning the Gospel liberty of prophesying: But the Independents also as well as the Baptists adopted the opinion, that the ordained ministers or pastors had not, by any ordination of Christ, or the order observed amongst the primitive Christians, an exclusive right of speaking in the church, but that all properly gifted, might speak one by one. It had been during the time of the civil war, and still continued to be no unusual practice for laymen, soldiers and others to speak or preach in the public places of worship and elsewhere, with the connivance, if not with the approbation of the ruling powers. Oliver Cromwell, in his correspondence with the ministers of Scotland in the next year 1650, after the battle of Dunbar, vindicates the practice. Oliver having made an offer, to the ministers who had taken sanctuary in the castle of Edinburgh, or had fled, of free privilege to return to their respective parishes; the Scotch ministers in reply objected his opening the pulpit doors to all intruders, by which means a flood of errors was broken in upon the nation;

to

CHAP. to which Oliver answered, " " We look upon you  
 II. " as helpers of, not lords over the faith of God's  
 1649. " people :—where do you find in scripture, that  
 " preaching is included within your function ?  
 " Though an approbation from men has order  
 " in it, and may be well, yet he that hath not a  
 " better than that hath none at all. I hope he  
 " that ascended up on high may give his gifts to  
 " whom he pleases ; and if those gifts be the  
 " seal of mission, are not you envious, though  
 " Eldad and Medad prophesy ? You know who  
 " hath bid us covet earnestly the best gifts, but  
 " chiefly that we may prophesy ; which the apostle  
 " explains to be a speaking to instruction,  
 " edification and comfort, which the instructed,  
 " edified and comforted can best tell the energy  
 " and effect of." — " Indeed you err through  
 " mistake of the scriptures. Approbation is an  
 " act of convenience in respect to order, not of  
 " necessity, to give faculty to preach the Gospel.  
 " Your pretended fear lest error should  
 " step in, is like the man that would keep all  
 " the wine out of the country lest men should  
 " be drunk. It will be found an unjust and un-  
 " wise jealousy, to deny a man the liberty he  
 " hath by nature, upon a supposition he may  
 " abuse it." And in answer to the governor's  
 complaint That men of secular employments  
 had usurped the office of the ministry, to the  
 scandal of the reformed churches, he queries,  
 " Are you troubled that Christ is preached ?  
 " Doth it scandalize the reformed churches,  
 " and Scotland in particular ? Is it against the  
 " covenant ? away with the covenant if it be  
 " so. I thought the covenant and these men  
 " would

“ would have been willing that any should speak C H A P.  
“ good of the name of Christ ; if not, it is no <sup>II.</sup>  
“ covenant of God’s approving, nor the kirk <sup>1649.</sup>  
“ you mention the spouse of Christ.”

By this it appears evident that a participation of the laity in ministerial offices was not only allowed but patronized by some of the leading men of that time. If then some members of this infant society, under persuasion of duty, at times made use of the liberty allowed to others, (and to several of themselves, 'till they joined this society) to deliver a short exhortation, most generally at the close of their worship, to the people assembled, as a full opportunity to discharge their duty ; to give them contumelious and violent abuse on that account was as contradictory to the professed principles of the Independents, and those free notions of civil and religious liberty which they had been so active in disseminating, as to religion and the civilization boasted of ; and administers ground for suspicion that they propagated these reasonable principles chiefly with sinister views, or by liberty meant, as is too common, liberty only to themselves. It is certain this society enjoyed a very precarious liberty under their rule.

## C H A P. III.

*George Fox is imprisoned in Derby.—Remarks thereupon.—Employes himself in writing sundry Epistles and Exhortations.—Justice Bennet gives him and his Friends the Appellation of Quakers. Note thereupon.—George Fox refuseth to be released upon Bail, for which Bennett abuseth him.—The Gaoler having been an Enemy to George Fox repents of his evil Treatment of him.—A Slander raised against the Quakers from a Soldier's Discourse with George Fox.—George Fox being solicited to go into the Army declares his Scruple against Wars.—Is imprisoned amongst Felons.—Pernicious Effects of keeping Prisoners long in Gaol.—George Fox writes to Colonel Barton, &c.—Discharged from his Imprisonment.*

C H A P.

III.

1650.

He comes  
to Derby,  
and for  
speaking at  
a lecture is  
imprisoned  
there.

FROM Chesterfield George Fox directed his course to Derby, where he was entertained at a doctor's house, whose wife was convinced, where, as he was walking in his chamber, hearing the bell ring, upon enquiring into the cause, he was informed that there was to be a great lecture there that day, at which many officers of the army and preachers were to be present, particularly a colonel, who was a preacher. George went to this lecture, and after it was finished spoke what was on his mind, and they heard him without molestation; but when he had done, an officer came up to him, and taking him by the hand, told him he must go before the magistrates. Being brought before them about

about the first hour afternoon, they spent the C H A P. day till the ninth, in examination and consultation about him, and then committed him and another to the house of correction, by the following mittimus<sup>2</sup>:

“ To the Master of the House of Correction in Derby, Greeting.

“ WE have sent you herewithal the Bodies of George Fox, late of Mansfield in the County of Nottingham, and John Fretwell, late of Staniesby in the County of Derby, Husbandman, brought before us this present Day, and charged with the avowed uttering and broaching of divers blasphemous Opinions, contrary to a late \* Act of Parliament ; which, upon their

<sup>2</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 29.

<sup>b</sup> † An act or ordinance had been passed near three months before by the parliament against several atheistical, blasphemous and execrable opinions derogatory to the honour of God, and tending to the dissolution of human society. § Enacting, that any persons not distempered in their brains, who shall maintain any mere creature to be God, or to be infinite, almighty, &c. or shall deny the holiness of God ; or shall maintain that all acts of wickedness and unrighteousness are not forbidden in holy scripture ; or that God approves of them. Any one who shall maintain, that acts of drunkenness, adultery, swearing, &c. are not in themselves shameful, wicked, sinful and impious ; or that there is not any real difference between moral good and evil ; all such persons shall suffer six months imprisonment for the first offence, and for the second shall be banished ; and if they return without license shall be treated as felons.

Several other efforts were made to draw sundry members of this society within the terms, and under the penalties of this act, by accusations of blasphemy, which could never be proved against them.

† McAuley, Appen. to vol. V.      § Neale, vol. ii. p. 397.

CHAP. " their Examination before us, they have con-  
 III. " fessed. These are therefore to require you,  
 1650. " forthwith upon sight hereof, to receive them,  
 " the said George Fox and John Fretwell, into  
 " your Custody, and them therein safely to keep  
 " during the Space of Six Months, without Bail  
 " or Mainprize, or until they shall find suffici-  
 " ent Security to be of good Behaviour, or be  
 " thence delivered by Order from ourselves.  
 " Hereof you are not to fail. Given under our  
 " Hands and Seals this 30th Day of October,  
 " 1650.

" Ger. Bennet,  
 " Nath. Barton."

*Remarks  
thereupon.*

The magistrates of Nottingham appear to have imprisoned him without law, the magistrates of Derby would appear to commit by law; but it was law violently strained; and under such pretext of law, right and justice might be, and were grossly violated. Laws may be wrested to the purposes of malice, prepossession and passion; justice is equal, impartial and dispassionate. I know not where we meet with any opinions of George Fox which can, with any propriety, be termed *blasphemous*, or are comprehended in the terms of the act of parliament these magistrates pretend to regulate their proceedings by. His principles were as remote from the terms of blasphemy mentioned in the ordinance, as far as I find it cited, as their own or any other could be. They have stood the test of severe examination, and have been well deferred against the objections of their opponents, as well by several others as by Robert Barclay in his apology.

And

And whereas the mittimus alledgedeth, that C H A P.  
upon their examination they confessed them, <sup>III.</sup>  
viz. their *blasphemous opinions*, how far that was  
true will best appear from the examination it-  
self, which, by George Fox's journal, was to  
this purport :

<sup>b</sup> The magistrates asked, why they came thither? George Fox answered, " God, who dwell-  
" eth not in temples made with hands moved us  
" to do so." He observed farther, all their preach-  
ing, baptism and sacrifices would never sanctify  
them, and bade them to look unto Christ in  
them, and not unto men, for it is Christ that  
sanctifies. And as they were very full of words,  
some time disputing, and some time deriding, he  
told them, They were not to dispute of God and  
Christ, but obey him. At last they asked him  
if he was sanctified ; he replied " yes." " If he  
had no sin :" his answer was, " Christ my Savi-  
our hath taken away my sin, and in him  
there is no sin." To the next question, " How  
they knew Christ was in them ?" he replied,  
" By his Spirit, which he hath given us." Then  
they were asked if any of them were Christ : to  
which insidious query he answered " Nay, we  
are nothing ; Christ is all." They next que-  
ried, " If a man steal, is it no sin ?" to which  
he replied, " All unrighteousness is sin."

Had these magistrates been principled against  
the belief of any supernatural influence ; had  
they been men who esteemed all pretences to  
inspiration as mere delusion, it might administer  
less cause of admiration if they should interpret  
George Fox's reason for coming to Derby, and  
his directing them to Christ in them, as implying  
*blasphemous*

<sup>b</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 29.

CHAP. III.  
1650. *blasphemous opinions.* But for two independent justices, and one of them [Barton] a preacher, who being an officer, I presume, had received no regular ordination, and therefore had no commission to preach, but a pretended or real gift, and how are spiritual gifts received if not by inspiration? For magistrates whose own tenets implied a supernatural influence, and admitted no interference of the civil power in spiritual concerns, but were pointed in favour of universal toleration; for men professing such principles to commit to prison an inoffensive man, only for his religious opinions, in many respects not far different from those professed by them, and which the sequel hath proved were neither *derogatory to the honour of God, nor prejudicial to human society*, but the very reverse, is utterly irreconcileable to every idea which history gives us of independency: and a remarkable instance of the inconsistency of men with themselves in different stations of life.

For it appears evident to me that these magistrates, tainted with the general aversion causelessly conceived against this people, were desirous to find an occasion to proceed to severity, in order as far as in their power to repress their growth, and that not being able to prove any blasphemy from George's public declaration, they spent so many hours in examining and deliberating, to see if they could extort some unwary concession, which might furnish a more plausible pretext to accomplish their purpose. The two last questions appear to be put with a plain design to make him an offender under the terms of the act, which design being defeated by his answers, they proceed, notwithstanding, to involve him in the punishment prescribed for blasphemy

blasphemy therein, although unconvicted, in manifest contradiction to their avowed principles of toleration. Speculative principles frequently prove too weak a check to human passions and prejudices, to prevent these latter from becoming the spring of action, with men possessed of power to gratify them.

George Fox was now prevented from travelling by his confinement, but his mind, actively impelled by persuasion of duty, to advance the truth he believed in, to promote righteousness, and to testify against iniquity, did not suffer him to rest unemployed, for during his confinement he was much exercised in writing, particularly to the priests and the magistrates of Derby : To the former, that if they had received the Gospel freely, they should minister it freely, without money or without price. That if they maintained the scripture to be their rule they ought to manifest that it was so, not by words only, but by the conformity of their lives to the doctrines and precepts thereof. To the magistrates, repeatedly pointing out the injustice and inconsistency of persecution and oppression for religion : *That the magistrate is set for the punishment of evil-doers, and for the praise of them that do well.*

<sup>a</sup> Neither was he, under his restraint, unmindful of his principal concern, the instruction and confirmation of those who had been convinced by his ministry. He wrote a paper to be spread abroad amongst his friends and other well disposed people, for the opening their understandings in the way of truth, and directing them to the true teacher in themselves.

It

<sup>c</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 30, 31, &c.

<sup>d</sup> Ibid, p. 35.

CHAP. III.  
1650. Justice Ben-  
net gives him and his  
friends the appellation  
of Quakers.

It was during his imprisonment here, that upon occasion, bidding Gervas Bennet (one of the justices who committed him) and those in company with him, tremble at the word of the Lord; Bennet, in an airy mind, turning this expression into a subject of ridicule and banter, in derision gave George Fox and his friends the appellation of Quakers\*, by which name this

\* George Fox's Journal, p. 35.

Note there-  
upon. \* Other authors have given a different account of the ori-  
ginal of this denomination, but this is taken from George  
Fox's journal, which I apprehend the only authentic account  
we have. Neale, who is followed by Mosheim, discovers on  
several occasions a very inimical bias when he speaks of this  
people, as will more fully appear when we proceed to the re-  
view of their treatment in New England. And on this occa-  
sion in particular his aversion and contempt are notoriously ma-  
nifest, in his opprobrious description approaching to scurrility.  
It was (saith he) in the year 1650, that these wandering  
lights first received the denomination of Quakers, upon this  
ground, that their speaking to the people was usually attended  
with convulsive agonies and shakings of the body. When  
George Fox appeared before Gervas Bennett, Esq; one of  
the justices of Derby, he had one of his agitations or fits of  
trembling upon him, and with a loud voice and vehement  
emotion of body bid the justice and those about him tremble  
at the word of the Lord, whereupon the justice gave him and  
his friends the name of Quakers. Now whence he received  
his information of the attendant circumstances we are to seek;  
he quotes no authority, nor could he who dates his preface in  
1737 speak his own knowledge of transactions passed seventy  
or eighty years before; and abstracting the air of ridicule and  
censure in which this description is exhibited, what does it  
amount to? no certain symptom of error. We readily admit  
these promulgators of primitive Christianity had no university-  
education, were not trained in schools of oratory; it was plain  
truth and righteousness they sought to follow and recommend  
in a plain and simple way, without the studied decorations of  
fine language, or the engaging attractions of a graceful moti-  
on; they spoke not to the head, or to the eye, but to the  
hearts of their auditors. Being themselves animated, and  
deeply

this people have since that time been distin- C H A P.  
guished. III.

<sup>1</sup> His relations being uneasy at his imprison- 1650.  
ment, applied to the justices who committed  
him for his release upon bail, offering to be <sup>He refuseth</sup> bound in one hundred pounds, and others of <sup>to be re-</sup>  
<sup>leased upon</sup> Derby in fifty pounds with them ; whereupon he  
was brought before the justices, but he refused  
his consent to the bail, because he thought the  
conditions (which were that he should be of  
good behaviour, and come no more thither to  
cry against the priests) in one part, a ground-  
less impeachment of his character, who was in-  
nocent of ill-behaviour ; and in the other, a  
restraint from duty. Justice Bennet, who, I con-  
jecture, would willingly have got rid of him,  
saving his honour, being transported with pas-  
sion to a degree unbecoming his office as keeper  
of the peace, rose up in a rage, and as George  
was kneeling down to pray for him, he fell fu-  
riously upon him, and struck him with both his  
hands, commanding the jailer to take him  
away to his prison ; he was accordingly carried  
back, and there detained.

VOL. I.

G

The

deeply affected in spirit with the inward feeling of the power  
of that truth, to the knowledge of which they aimed to bring  
others, that thereby they might be saved ; an unaffected  
warmth of zeal in recommending righteousness, and testifying  
against vice and wickedness, might produce a warmth of ex-  
pression and action also, which to an invidious eye might ap-  
pear convulsive : But their convulsions did not bereave them  
of understanding ; they spake with the spirit and with the un-  
derstanding also, of things which they knew, and testified of  
things which they had seen. And their doctrine was often  
effectual to open the understanding of their hearers, to see  
clearly the states of their minds, both what they were and  
what they ought to be.

<sup>1</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 38.

**C H A P.** \* The keeper of the prison, an high professor,  
 III. was in the number of George's enemies, he  
 ~~~~~ watchfully remarked his words and actions, asked  
**1650.** many frivolous, many insidious questions, in  
 The jailer, having been order to draw some unwary or unguarded an-  
 an enemy to George Fox, swer, to turn to the disadvantage of his char-  
 repents of his evil ter; but George was mercifully preserved in that  
 treatment. innocence and circumspection of conduct, that  
 the jailer could get no advantage against him  
 this way: and yet it seems he spoke very wickedly of him. For which evil treatment he was  
 one day so smitten in his own conscience, that  
 as George Fox was walking in his chamber, he  
 heard a mournful voice, upon which he stood to  
 listen more attentively, and heard the jailer give  
 the following relation to his wife: "Wife, I have  
 " seen the day of judgment, and I saw George  
 " there, and I was afraid of him, because I had  
 " done him so much wrong, and spoken so much  
 " against him to the ministers, professors and  
 " justices, and in taverns and alehouses." And afterwards coming to George Fox, he made the  
 following acknowledgment, "I have been a  
 " lion against you, but now I come like a lamb,  
 " and like the jailer that came to *Paul and Silas* trembling." The next day he went to  
 the justices and complained to them that he and  
 his house had been plagued for George's sake.  
 To which (as the jailer reported) the aforesaid  
 Gervas Bennet replied, that plagues were upon  
 them for keeping him there: 'and soon after the  
 justices gave him leave to walk a mile, in ex-  
 pectation that he would make use of the oppor-  
 tunity given him to regain his liberty, and escape  
 out of their hands. But they were mistaken in  
 their

\* George Fox's Journal, p. 34.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid, p. 35.

their apprehensions : this man, as patient in suffering for his principles, as he was zealous and undaunted in propagating them, was too tender of the reputation of the truth he maintained, to give advantage against it to its adversaries, by obtaining his liberty in any clandestine manner ; he therefore signified, if they would ascertain the extent of a mile, he might make use of the liberty sometimes. His fellow prisoner Fretwell, not being on the same foundation, observed a different conduct, for he soon found means to ingratiate himself with the jailer, and by his interference obtained leave to go see his mother, and so got his liberty ; which occasioned the jailer to remark, “ that man was not right, but “ that George was an honest man.” The jailer’s sister also being sickly, visiting George in his chamber, was so affected with his discourse, as to bear testimony concerning him and his friends : “ that they were an innocent people that did “ harm to none, but did good to all, even to “ those who hated them.”

But notwithstanding his circumspect conversation, and persevering caution to minister no occasion to the adversaries to speak reproachfully, he could not long escape the obloquy of their malevolence : For among others that came to see and discourse with him in his confinement, there came a <sup>m</sup>soldier from Nottingham, who it was understood had been a baptist, and several along with him. In the course of their conversation this person made use of this assertion : “ Your faith stands in a man that died at Jerusalem, and there was never any such thing.” George receiving this assertion with horror and

A flander  
raised a-  
gainst the  
Quakers  
from a fol-  
dier’s wild  
discourse  
with Geo.  
Fox.

C H A P. III.  
1650.

amazement, opposed it with becoming zeal, asserting on the contrary his firm belief of the scriptural account, that as certainly as there were a Chief Priest, Jews and Pilate, there outwardly, so certainly was Christ persecuted by them outwardly, and suffered death by their hands. But from this conversation, notwithstanding this clear evidence of his faith, a slanderous report was raised \* *That the Quakers should deny Christ, that suffered*

\* This groundless calumny hath not (through the malevolence of successive adversaries) been suffered to become obsolete, being a charge brought against them (in contradiction to their positive assertion of their belief, who certainly know best what they believe) to this day. Mosheim hath revived this refuted reproach in a manner which does no honour to his candour, his moderation or his veracity. “ The European Quakers (faith he) dare not so far presume upon the indulgence of the civil and ecclesiastical powers as to deny openly the reality of the history of the life, mediation and sufferings of Christ ; but in America, where they have nothing to fear, *they are said to express themselves without ambiguity on this subject, and to maintain publicly that Christ never existed but in the hearts of the faithful.*” What a specimen of illiberal misrepresentation is this ! The European Quakers thought it their duty to pay obedience to the civil power in all things relating to civil peace and order : And where the laws of the state required compliances contrary to the law of God in their consciences, they were eminently remarkable for an innocent boldness in maintaining their testimonies publicly, and making open profession of their faith, notwithstanding the penalties they were exposed to, for their faithfulness to the superior law, as will abundantly appear in the sequel ; no fear of civil or ecclesiastical powers ever deterred them from asserting their doctrines and sentiments in the face of the world, as believing them founded in truth. When their present persecutors were fallen from the pinnacle of power, and by the successive changes of government became again exposed to persecution themselves, they with other dissenters could disguise and conceal themselves and their sentiments to avoid the penalties to which they were obnoxious, while these Quakers, so

*suffered and died at Jerusalem, which George C H A P. asserted to be utterly false, "and the least thoughts of it, (said he) never came into our hearts."*

III.

1650.

Although the civil war in England was terminated by the death of the late king, and the independent parliament was fixed in the seat of government

so called, (like Daniel praying with his windows open towards Jerusalem, contrary to the king's decree) steadily adhered to their principles, and openly professed them, without shrinking at the danger, or skulking in corners to avoid detection. They were not ashamed to avow their principles, nor afraid of suffering for them ; so far were they from not daring to presume upon the indulgence of the civil or ecclesiastical powers, in preserving the testimony of a good conscience.

How egregiously uncandid then, uncharacteristic and ill-founded is the insinuation, as if the Quakers privately held one opinion, and for fear of detection publicly avowed the contrary ; and what proof or authority doth he advance in support of this disingenuous *innuendo?* truly none at all. Is the Chancellor of the university of Gottingen a title of such consequence as to make his *ipse dixit* pass for a demonstration, or is the testimony of an high Dutch D. D. to whom this people were not known, deserving of any credit, without the clearest and most incontestible authority ? I have not the opportunity of as intimate an acquaintance with the Americans as the Europeans ; yet I believe that the faith of the people called Quakers is the same in this respect all the world over ; and although the discipline exercised amongst them relates chiefly to their moral conduct, yet I am firmly persuaded that if any member or any body of that people should maintain the doctrine, which this author insinuates they do, the body at large, in their collective capacity, would reject them and their doctrine together. And really, when so heavy a charge is recorded as history with an air of confidence, upon no better grounds than hearsay, one is apt to be at a loss which to admire most, the want of charity, modesty or integrity in the writer.

This passage also conveys a caution how warily we ought to receive for truth the calumnious representations of this people at this æra, when we find how readily every wild notion or action of any person, whom chance threw amongst them, though not of their society at all, was by public rumour affixed to them.

CHAP. III.  
1650.  
~~George Fox solicited to go into the army, declares his scruple against wars.~~ government there, yet Ireland remained to be subdued, and the ruling party in Scotland had come to a resolution, after the execution of Charles I. to acknowledge his son Charles II. as his successor, and upon very humiliating conditions received and proclaimed him their king. The parliament of England therefore being likely to have a double war on their hands, thought it necessary to augment their forces, and many new soldiers being raised at this time, when<sup>n</sup> George Fox's term of commitment to the house of correction was nearly expired; the commissioners invited him to accept the office of a captain, and the soldiers were desirous to have him for their commander; for which purpose being by the keeper of the house of correction brought up before the commissioners, in the market place, they there made him the offer of that preferment (as they called it) asking him if he would not take up arms for the commonwealth against Charles Stuart. He told them, he knew from whence all wars did arise, even from the lusts, and that he lived in the virtue of that life and power that took away the occasion of all wars. And they pressing him more earnestly with a shew of kindness to accept of their offer, which they said they made out of regard to his virtues, and he still rejecting their proposals, and persisting to testify against all wars and fightings, their pretended regard to his virtue quickly gave way to the impetuosity of their resentment at his peremptory refusal, and probably at his pointed testimony against their warring spirit under their religious pretensions. They immediately commanded the jailer to put him into the common jail

<sup>n</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 42.

jail among the felons ; into a most filthy prison, C H A P.  
without any bed, he was accordingly thrust III.  
amongst thirty felons, and kept there near half  
a year, the companion of thieves (except that Imprisoned  
he was allowed the privilege of walking in the amongst fel-  
lons. garden sometimes.) What power of arbitrarily  
imprisoning these commissioners were invested  
with, or whether by martial or civil law, or any  
law but that of their own wills, we are unin-  
formed : But this seems certain, that they were  
filled with rage against him, and had power to  
gratify it ; which they did with unjustifiable se-  
verity : For what greater punishment could be  
inflicted on a tender innocent youth, who feared  
God, and detested every species of wickedness,  
than to be thus pent up and confined in the com-  
pany and conversation of the vilest of mankind.  
It was in some degree analogous to the cruelty  
of the tyrant, who is feigned to have tied the  
living to the dead : Their bad expressions, and  
the obscenity of their conduct and conversation,  
were no less grievous to him than the filthiness  
and inconvenience of the prison in which they  
were stowed together. However, not discouraged  
by the prospect of the danger he might be ex-  
posed to, he felt himself frequently constrained  
to reprove them for their wicked words and evil  
carriage towards each other. Yet it doth not ap-  
pear he received any ill usage from them, and  
people wondered he was so preserved from harm  
amongst such company : And those who watched  
for his halting could never catch a word or ac-  
tion from him to turn to his disadvantage, which  
he did not attribute to his own wisdom or  
strength, but to the preserving power of that  
Divine Being, to whose service he was sincerely  
devoted.

During

C H A P.

III.

1651.  
Pernicious  
effects of  
keeping pri-  
soners long  
in jail.

During his confinement <sup>o</sup> he had occasion to remark the pernicious effects of keeping prisoners long in jail, as it furnished them opportunity, by recounting their feats of villainy, to corrupt one another still more, and to initiate the fresh men into all the mysteries of ingenious or daring depredation, so that they generally came from thence more confirmed in vice and debauchery. He therefore thought it his duty to communicate his observations hereon to the judges, and to point out the necessity of speedy justice to prevent these bad consequences, so prejudicial to the peace and security of society.

Although few, if any, could be more circumspect to avoid sin and evil in their own particulars, and few were more averse to them in others, yet he was affected with commiseration for those unhappy wretches who forfeited their liberty and lives to the laws of their country by their illicit practices; and especially that the lives of men should be taken away even for small thefts. The compassion he felt on that account, particularly for a young woman in prison, for robbing her master of some money, induced him to write to the judges and magistrates to move them to mercy in such cases, shewing them how contrary it was to the old law: That in the Jewish state thieves were to make restitution; and if they wanted ability, they were to be sold for their theft; putting them in mind to shew mercy, that they might receive it from the judge of all. Whatever effect his interposition might have, the young woman abovementioned was reprieved at the gallows,

<sup>o</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 44.

gallows, and was afterwards in prison convinced.

The Scots, after the unfavourable battle of Dunbar, were obliged to admit their king to a greater participation of power than before that event their jealousy of him suffered them to entrust him with, and to admit him to a command in their army, which was so advantageously posted, and so well supplied with provisions from the northern parts, that Cromwell was unable to force them to an engagement, and therefore passed northward in order to cut off their provisions, but by this movement left the passes into England unguarded. Charles, in expectation of being joined by all his friends, and the malecontents under the present government, seized the advantageous opportunity presented to him, and advanced by great marches into the heart of England. Cromwell, to repair this oversight, pursuing with equal alacrity, overtook and defeated the Scots at Worcester, which finally decided the contest, and left the independent parliament undisputed masters of the empire.

\* This sudden and unexpected invasion without doubt created a great alarm in the nation, and excited the adherents to the present government to zealous exertions in procuring recruits from all quarters, to repel the invaders; upon this occasion Justice Bennet sent a constable to press George Fox for a soldier; but he who would not voluntarily accept of a command, and that from a conscientious scruple, was not like to comply with their requisition. The constables brought him before the commissioners,

\* George Fox's Journal, p. 44.

CHAP. III.  
1651.

sioners, who positively insisted on his entering into the military line, and he acting upon principle, and persisting in his refusal, they committed him to close imprisonment, without bail or mainprize; whereupon he again appealed to their feelings in a letter addressed to Colonel Barton, and the rest who were concerned in his commitment, in which, through the simplicity of his style, the christian temper which dictated it is apparent; in substance as follows:

**George Fox**  
writes to  
Col. Bar-  
ton, &c.

" You who profess yourselves to be christians, and one of you a minister of Jesus Christ, consider neither he nor his apostles did ever imprison any; but his command was, "*Love your enemies, and do good to them that hate you.*" The love of God persecuteth none, but loveth all: Take heed of owning Christ in words, and denying him in life and power. The imprisoning my body is to gratify your own wills, but beware of giving way thereto, for that will hurt you. If the love of God had [tendered] your hearts ye would not have imprisoned me, but my love is to you as to all my fellow-creatures; and my intent in writing to you is, [in order] that you may [be incited to] weigh yourselves, [in the balance of sincerity and equity] and see how you stand. [approved in the sight of God]

It is not improbable that this letter, together with the innocence and circumspection of his conduct, made an impression upon them; for they now began to grow uneasy about him, from a consciousness, I suppose, of their exertion of an arbitrary and unjust power against an inoffensive man, in whom they could find no crime to justify

justify their proceedings : For notwithstanding C H A P.  
their former representation of him as a deceiver,  
seducer and blasphemer, his innocence and integrity  
of life had so far gotten the better of their  
prejudices, that they now acknowledged him to  
be an honest and virtuous man. Let the world  
say what they will, God hath placed a witness for  
himself in the consciences of all men which con-  
vinceth them of evil, whereby they may be  
brought to see their errors, but (it being too hu-  
miliating to acknowledge them) to preserve a  
reputation, they often endeavour to conceal  
their perception thereof from the observation of  
others. They wanted to rid their hands of him,  
but how to preserve some appearance of con-  
sistency and palliate the severity of their treat-  
ment seems to have been a subject of perplexity.  
<sup>III.</sup>  
<sup>1651.</sup>  
One while they talked of sending him up to the  
parliament, another of banishing him to *Ireland*.  
At length they set him at liberty in the beginning George Fox  
of the winter 1651, after detaining him in pri- discharged  
son near twelve months, six months in the house from his  
of correction, and the rest of the time in the imprisor-  
ment.

<sup>r</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 48.

## C H A P. IV.

*George Fox recommences his Travels and Gospel Labours.—Much abused by the Populace.—His Patience in Suffering.—Remarkable Success of his Ministerial Labours at Sedbergh and Firbank Chapel.—John Audland and Francis Howgil being convinced return Money they had received for preaching.—Edward Burrough convinced.*

CHAP. IV. GEORGE FOX having regained his liberty, pursued his travels, and had meetings in several places in Nottinghamshire and in Derbyshire, and thence he passed into Yorkshire. <sup>2</sup> Richard Farnsworth, among several others, was convinced at Balby: at Wakefield, James Naylor, and William Dewsbury and his wife, with many others, were also convinced. These three men became powerful coadjutors to George Fox in the ministry of the gospel. Of these William Dewsbury had been immediately convinced of the internal principle of light and grace before he saw George Fox; but when he met him he found they were in the unity of the same spirit, and thereupon gave him the right hand of fellowship, and joined him in society and in his ministerial labours.

At Beverly  
preaches  
with great  
power.

Passing on to Beverly he went to the public worship-house; and after the preacher had done he exhorted him and the people, directing them to Christ their teacher with such an authority as brought a great dread and awfulness over the assembly,

<sup>2</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 49, &c.

sembly, and his ministry in these parts was effectual to the convincement of many people, and amongst them some persons of account: Captain Pursloe and justice Hotham were in the number of his friends and favourers of his doctrine, being convinced in their understandings, though it doth not appear they openly joined him in profession, yet their countenance and favour were conducive to protect him from the insults and abuse, to which in some other places he had been exposed.

CHAP.  
IV.  
1651.

<sup>b</sup> That an extraordinary power attended his ministry in this place appears from a relation of this justice Hotham. "That a great woman coming to him upon business, told him in discourse that the last sabbath-day there was an angel or spirit came into the church at Beverly, and spoke the wonderful things of God, to the astonishment of all that were there; and when it had done it passed away, and they did not know whence it came or whither it went." Now, although this relation may seem the effect of a superstitious imagination, yet her account bears the marks of an uncommon influence attending his ministry, whereby the audience were greatly affected.

In the afternoon of the same day he went to another worship-house about two miles from Beverly, where, after the preacher had done, he spoke very largely, and expounded the way of life and truth, and the grounds of election and reprobation. The people were so much affected with his doctrine, that they requested him to favour them with another opportunity of hearing him; but he directed them to a better instruc-

tor

<sup>b</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 50.

CHAP. tor that would abide with them, the spirit of Christ in their own hearts, and so passed away.

IV.  
1651. For it was not his desire to seek men's admiration or respect, so much as to obtain and preserve peace with his Maker, in consequence of the faithful discharge of his duty ; or to gather a party to himself as a leader ; as to gather the people to their internal teacher, who points out the way to walk in, when we turn to the right hand or to the left.

1652. <sup>Much abused by the populace.</sup> Continuing in the prosecution of his travels and of his ministry, he met with various successes, and a variety of occurrences which the limits I have prescribed to myself do not allow me particularly to relate. He went on northward through most parts of Yorkshire, where he met with little or no restraint from the magistrates ; but received much abuse from the rude multitude in many places. He also repeatedly experienced the want of hospitality in these parts, being refused entertainment or lodging at the inns, though he offered to pay for both ; whereby he was obliged several times to take up his lodging in the open air, or under such shelter as he could meet with in the fields ; yet being on a good foundation, and engaged in a good cause, he was not discouraged by these hardships from a steady perseverance in the way of his duty.

His patience in sufferings.

And under these sufferings he manifested on all occasions the meek and forgiving temper of a Christian ; as at Tichhill, where the clerk struck him so violently with a bible in the public worship-house, as to make his face run down with blood, where, after this the people thrust him out of the steeple-house, threw him down and dragged

<sup>c</sup> George Fox's Journal, p. 51.

dragged him along the street, and took away his <sup>C H A P.</sup>  
hat : When he got up, covered with blood and <sup>IV.</sup>  
dirt, he only endeavoured to convince them of  
the evil of their doings, by representing to them  
how inconsistent their conduct was with the  
peaceable spirit of Christians, and how they dis-  
honoured Christianity thereby : and some mode-  
rate justices who had heard how he was abused,  
coming to examine into this riot, he would not  
appear as an accuser against any of them ; but  
freely forgave them all, evidencing in his ex-  
ample, that he was not as those whom he found  
it his duty frequently to reprove, who speak of  
Christ and the scriptures, while they do not con-  
form their lives thereto ; but that he was espe-  
cially careful to regulate his whole conversation  
by that internal principle of light and grace  
which he preached to others, and by the unifor-  
mity of a Christian conduct to exemplify the ex-  
cellency thereof. This, doubtless, greatly con-  
tributed to give success to his plain but prevailing  
ministry, which he continued to exert for the  
gathering of the people from the uncertain  
teachers of the world, to Christ the unerring  
teacher and sure guide to salvation.

Coming to Sedbergh on a fair day, and  
preaching first in the fair, and afterwards re-  
tiring into the steeple-house yard, abundance of  
people flocked after him, when he preached se-  
veral hours. Several priests were present, yet  
none of them made the least objection or op-  
position to his doctrine ; but one Francis How-  
gill, an independent preacher, was so much  
affected therewith, as well as the powerful man-  
ner of delivering it, as to acknowledge, “ *This  
man speaks with authority, and not as the scribes.*”

Many

Remark-  
able succe-  
ss of his mi-  
nisterial la-  
bours at  
Sedbergh,

**C H A P.** Many were convinced that day, and amongst them Captain Ward.

**IV.**

**1652.**  
and at Fir-  
bank cha-  
pel.

On the first day following he went to Firbank chapel in Westmoreland, where Francis Howgill aforesaid, and John Audland, had been preaching in the morning. About noon, after refreshing himself with a little water from a brook, he sat down on the top of a rock contiguous to the chapel, in order to hold a meeting there; at this the people, who had been accustomed to look upon the church, so called, as a sacred edifice, where only worship could be properly celebrated, seemed surprized that he did not go into the chapel; but he, esteeming it part of his mission to bring them off from their superstitious veneration for these places, which priestcraft, in the dark ages, had introduced, informed them that there was no inherent sanctity in the ground or building beyond that on which he stood. To a large audience of many hundreds he preached for a considerable space of time, directing them to the spirit of God in themselves, that so they might be turned from darkness to light, and from the power of satan unto God, &c. He was largely opened in his ministry at this time, and was attended with a convincing power and authority, greatly affecting the hearts of the auditory, whereby many of them, and in particular the teachers of that congregation, became profelytes to his doctrine; of these were John Audland and Francis Howgill, both of whom having been zealous preachers amongst the Independents, became in some time noted publishers of these doctrines, which, through the ministry of George Fox, they had embraced as truth; and as these doctrines condemned as

**John Aud-  
land and  
Francis  
Howgill be-  
ing con-  
vinced, re-  
turn the  
money they  
had receiv-  
ed for  
preaching.**

antichristian

antichristian the teachers for hire, they gave back the money they had received from the parish of Colton in Lancashire for preaching there.

CHAP.  
IV.  
1652.

George went from thence to Preston-Patrick and Kendal, at each of which places he had meetings to good effect, many being gained over to the acknowledgment of the truth published by him ; and in these places are large meetings of the people called Quakers to this day. From Kendal he proceeded to Under-barrow, accompanied by several persons, with whom he had much reasoning, especially with Edward Burrough, a young man of good natural parts, yet not able to withstand the solid expressions and weighty truths delivered by George Fox. This Edward Burrough became an eminent member of this community ; and during his short life, a principal promoter and supporter of its cause, both in his discourse and writings.

## C H A P. V.

*George Fox goes to Swarthmore.—Lecture at Ulverston, at which George Fox preaches; and in Judge Fell's Family, who are most of them convinced.—The Judge informed, and alarmed thereat.—His Wife in a distressing Dilemma.—George Fox vindicateth himself and his Doctrines to the Judge's Satisfaction.—Priest Lampit endeavours to incense Judge Fell against George Fox in vain.—Justice Sawrey stirs up the Rabble, from whom George Fox and others receive violent Abuse—Instances of more violent Abuse.—Judge Fell issues Warrants to apprehend the Rioters.—George Fox accused of Blasphemy, acquitted, and encouraged to preach, whereby several are convinced.*

C H A P. V. **H**E next passed over to Lancashire by Cartmel and Ulverstone to Swarthmore, the seat of Thomas Fell, a Welch judge, who was upon his circuit when George Fox came to his house, being an house of hospitality, open for the reception of ministers and religious people. Next day there being a lecture at Ulverston, George Fox went to it; when he came in they were singing, and after they had finished this part of their service, he stood upon a seat, and desired liberty to speak, which was granted: He there so plainly distinguished the essential from the professional part of religion, that Judge Fell's wife Margaret was effectually reached, so that she sat down in her pew and wept bitterly, crying

1652. George Fox goes to Swarthmore. Lecture at Ulverstone; George Fox preacheth there.

ing in her spirit, “ We are all thieves ! we are C H A P.  
 “ all thieves ! We have taken the scripture in V.  
 “ words, and know nothing of them in our-  
 “ selves.” George proceeding in his discourse,  
 and declaring against the false prophets, who  
 take upon them to explain other men’s words,  
 while they were out of the life and spirit of  
 those whose expressions they pretended to ex-  
 plain, John Sawrey, a justice of peace, ordered  
 him to be taken away ; and after some time a  
 constable executing the order, he continued  
 his exhortation to the people in the grave-yard.  
 In the evening he returned to Judge Fell’s, and Preacheth  
 had an opportunity to preach in the family to in Judge  
 that effect that most of them were convinced by Fell’s fami-  
 him. Being a family of note their conversion ly, whereby  
 made a great noise in the country, and raised most of  
them were convinced.  
 George Fox many enemies, several of whom  
 met the judge on his return home, and pre-  
 possessed him with the melancholy intelligence,  
 “ That a great disaster had befallen his family ;  
 “ that the Quakers were witches, and had  
 “ turned them from their religion ; and that  
 “ he must send them away, or all the country  
 “ would be undone.” Under the affecting im-  
 pressions of this report he reached his house in  
 perturbation, displeasure, and anxiety of mind ;  
 nor was the anxiety of his wife shrt of his,  
 for being clearly convinced of the truth of the  
 doctrines delivered by George Fox, she thought  
 it her duty to adhere thereto, and yet her af-  
 fectionate regard for her husband filling her His wife  
 with reluctance at the thoughts of giving him in a distract-  
 uneasiness, she felt herself in a distressing strait, ing dilem-  
 between the apprehension of displeasing her hus-  
 band or offending her maker ; but James Nay-  
 lor and Richard Farnsworth being then in the

CHAP. house, at her desire had a conference with him,  
 V. in which they conducted themselves with so  
 much prudence and moderation as greatly con-  
 duced to mitigate his displeasure; and in the  
 evening George Fox returned, and finding that  
 Judge Fell was greatly prejudiced and incensed  
 against him and his principles, by the misre-  
 presentations of the priests and professors, and  
 in particular by those of Justice Sawrey, he en-  
 tered into a free discussion of his principles and  
 doctrines; answered all the judge's objections  
 so fully and clearly from scripture that he was  
 thoroughly satisfied, and assented to the truth  
 and reasonableness thereof. This judge's con-  
 duct was truly candid and respectable, highly  
 becoming his station as a judge, and honourable  
 to his character as a man and a christian, to  
 hear the defendant before he condemned him,  
 and to indulge him with a fair opportunity of  
 vindicating himself from the misrepresentations  
 of malice and prejudice. Had George Fox, his  
 adherents, and their successors, always met with  
 the like candid treatment, they had not been so  
 often, and so lately unfairly represented to the  
 world through malice or ignorance, by those  
 who do not love, or those who do not know  
 them.

Priest Lam-  
pit endeav-  
ours to in-  
cense Judge  
Fell against  
George Fox  
in vain.

The next morning after this conference, Lam-  
 pit, priest of Ulverstone, paid a visit to the judge,  
 and walking out with him into the garden, he  
 had much conversation with him, no ways in fa-  
 vour of his new guests, to whom he was no  
 friend; but his attempts against them were of  
 little effect, for the judge was too clearly con-  
 vinced by the evening conference with George  
 Fox, not to receive easily impressions to their  
 prejudice. Instead of listening to the insinua-  
 ons

ons of the priest, he soon gave a demonstrative proof of his favourable disposition to the Quakers by a voluntary offer of his house for a meeting place, in consequence whereof there was a pretty large meeting the first day following, and thenceforward a settled meeting continued in that house 'till the year 1690, when a new meeting-house was built there.

This impression on judge Fell's mind in their favour was very mortifying to those who wished the suppression of this rising society, as in him they found a steady friend and protector : Justice Sawrey and — Lampit, priest of Ulverstone, were particularly chagrined hereat, and let no favourable opportunity slip of gratifying their resentment, and making them feel the effects of their aversion and ill will. Soon after this there being a lecture day at Ulverstone, and Judge Fell being from home, George Fox went to the worship-house on that occasion, and attempting to speak there, Sawrey came up to him and told him if he would speak according to the scriptures he might speak ; George replied, he should speak according to the scriptures, and prove his doctrine thereby : Then Sawrey insisted, in plain contradiction to his own voluntary proposal, that he should not speak at all ; notwithstanding which he proceeded to make use of the liberty given him, and the people were attentive and heard him with satisfaction, 'till Sawrey (the first promoter of persecution in the North) incensed them against him, and incited them to abuse him greatly. By the instigation of this man, the place and time of worship were converted into a scene of riot and tumult, for there George Fox was kicked, knocked down and trampled upon in his presence. At last Sawrey

V.  
1652.

This priest  
and Sawrey  
displeased,  
fir up the  
rabble,

from  
whom Geo.  
Fox and  
others re-  
ceive vio-  
lent abuse.

CHAP. rey took him from the people, and delivered him  
 V.  
 1652. to the constables and other officers, with orders  
 to whip him and put him out of the town, which  
 orders having executed in a rough and violent  
 manner, they delivered him over to the rude  
 multitude, who being provided with staves,  
 hedge-stakes and bushes of holly, assaulted him  
 with such fury, and beat him in various parts of  
 the body, head, arms and shoulders, to that de-  
 gree that he fell down fainting and senseless on a  
 wet common. After lying a while he recovered,  
 and the return he made them was an endeavour  
 to bring them to a sense of the inconsistency of  
 their conduct with Christianity, informing them  
 that this carriage was more like that of Heathens  
 or Jews than true Christians, and manifested the  
 fruits of their priest's ministry. Returning to  
 Swarthmore, he found his friends there hu-  
 manely employed in dressing the wounds of those  
 who had been cut and bruised by Lampit's  
 hearers. For although the chief force of their  
 violence had fallen on George Fox, several  
 others, not only of those who openly joined in  
 profession with him, but of such also as dis-  
 covered a partiality towards them who did, in this  
 day of lecture perverted into riot, felt the injuri-  
 ous effects of the license given to a mob, di-  
 vested of the restraints of law, religion and hu-  
 manity.

## Remark.

At this time the current of popular odium  
 ran very strongly against this inoffensive people  
 hereaway; and it is not to be wondered at that  
 the unthinking multitude should give the loose  
 rein to their propensity to evil, when those  
 whose proper business it was to restrain them,  
 and to instruct them better, so far forgot the duty  
 of their offices as to encourage and abet this  
 mischievous

mischievous disposition in them. Magistrates C H A P. (invested with power to preserve peace and good order in the state, to support the laws, and to be " a terror to evil-doers, and a praise to them " that do well") yielding to the influence of their teachers, or the impulse of their passions, so far as to instigate the populace to acts of riot, in violation of law, peace and justice. \* Preachers (who ought to promote righteousness, truth and christian forbearance) prostituting the pulpits to the unbecoming purpose of propagating calumny, in malicious misrepresentations and fabulous tales, in order to set off the Quakers, so called, in odious colours, and to point them out as objects of detestation, insult and abuse.

By such unjustifiable proceedings were the populace stimulated to rage and violence against this people, who did injury to none. George Fox in about two weeks after the abuse he met with at Ulverstone, passing over to the island of Walney in company with James Naylor, there met

\* One Marshall, priest of Wakefield, was not ashamed to promulgate this ridiculous report, that George Fox carried bottles about him, and by making people drink thereof made them follow him. That he rode upon a great black horse, and was seen in one county upon his horse in one hour, and in the same hour in another county threescore miles off; but by these absurd fictions he missed his aim, so far as to drive away many of his hearers.

Camelford, priest of a chapel about Cartmel, upon George Fox's beginning to speak after he had done, incited the rude multitude to fall upon him, who haled him out, struck and kicked him, and threw him headlong over a stone wall.

An idle report was propagated of the Quakers being witches (as appears by the intelligence carried to Judge Fell) than which none could be invented more mischievous among the superstitious vulgar of those days, who not only believed such reports, but that no treatment could be too bad for those who lay under the imputation of being such.

V.  
1652.

Instances of  
greater vio-  
lence.

CHAP. met with equal or greater abuse. At Cockan a man snapp'd a pistol at him, but it would not go off; and he was no sooner landed on the island than he was assaulted by about forty men, armed with staves and fishing poles, with an intent to push him into the sea, which when he prevented, by pressing into the midst of them, he was knocked down and stunned: For James Lancaster, having been convinced there, they pretended that he had bewitched him, and promised his wife if she would let them know when he came there they would put him to death, and this seemed to be their intention; "but " (says he) the Lord's power preserved me, "that they could not take my life." James Lancaster's wife was amongst the foremost in this assault, for when George Fox recovered his senses he observed her busy in throwing stones at his face, while her husband was endeavouring to protect him from the violence of the multitude, by covering him with his own body, to keep off the blows and stones aimed at him; but this woman being afterwards convinced, repented of the evil she had been hurried into in this abuse, as did some others of those concerned therein. When George at length recovered his feet they beat him down again into the boat, which James Lancaster observing, came to him and set him back over the water; and when he got off they fell on James Naylor in the like unmerciful manner. When George Fox landed again at Cockan he met with no better treatment, for the people there rose upon him with pitchforks, flails and staves, crying out, "*kill him;*" and after giving him much abuse, drove him some way out of the town and left him, after which he walked three miles to a friend's

a friend's house named Thomas Hutton, where C H A P. Thomas Lawson (who had been a priest, and was convinced by George Fox) lodged. When arrived at this house he was hardly able to speak by reason of the wounds and bruises he had received, and could barely inform them of the jeopardy in which he left James Naylor, whereupon they mounted their horses, went in search of him, and brought him thither that night.

V.  
1652.

Next day Margaret Fell sent an horse to fetch him to Swarthmore, but it was with great difficulty, and in much pain he got thither, through the foreness of his bruises, being scarce able to bear the motion of the horse.

Then the justices Sawrey and Thompson issued a warrant against him, but judge Fell coming home prevented its present effect : He was greatly displeased with the abusive treatment which George Fox and his friends had received in his absence, representing to Sawrey the impropriety and illegality of his conduct in fomenting riots and tumults in the country. He also sent forth warrants into the isle of Walney to apprehend the rioters, whereupon some of them absconded. Desiring George Fox to give him a narrative of his abuse, he only told him, " They could do no otherwise in the spirit wherein they were ; that they manifested the fruits of their priests ministry, and their profession of religion to be wrong ;" which made the judge remark, he spoke as of a matter in which he had no concern.

Judge Fell issues warrants for apprehending the rioters.

His enemies did not rest satisfied with stirring up the rabble against him, they next made an attempt

CHAP. attempt to endanger his life \* by a false accusa-  
 V.  
 ~~~~~  
 1652. George Fox accused of blasphemy and acquitted. attempt to endanger his life \* by a false accusa-  
 tion of speaking blasphemy in a certain meet-  
 ing, and suborned false witnesses against him to  
 prove it. Upon their information it was that  
 the before-mentioned justices granted their war-  
 rant to apprehend him, which, although it was  
 not executed, George Fox, whose fortitude, sup-  
 ported by the consciousness of his integrity and  
 innocence, never declined a fair trial of his  
 doctrine or practice, hearing of it, voluntarily  
 appeared at the ensuing sessions at Lancaster to  
 face his accusers, and hear what they had to lay  
 to his charge. There appeared not less than  
 forty priests to aid and abet the accusation, who  
 chose one Marshal, priest of Lancaster, for their  
 orator; a young priest, and two priests sons,  
 for witnesses; but these witnesses failed of an-  
 swering their ends; for after the first was ex-  
 amined, the second on his examination was so  
 much at a loss to answer the questions put to  
 him, that he acknowledged *he could not say it*,  
 (I suppose repeat the blasphemous expressions)  
*but the other could.*

This drew the following interrogatory reproof  
 from the justices: "Have you sworn it, and  
 given it in already upon oath, and now say  
 that he can say it? It seems you did not hear  
 those words spoken yourself, though you have  
 sworn it."

There were in the court several persons, men  
 of integrity and reputation in the country, who  
 had been at that meeting wherein the witnesses  
 swore he uttered those blasphemous expressions,  
 who

\* By the ordinance of the Parliament, as they called  
 themselves, if he had been convicted, he was to be banished,  
 and returning without license was judged felony.

who declared in court, " That the oath which C H A P.  
 " these evidences had taken was altogether V.  
 " false; and that no such words as they had  
 " sworn against him were spoken by him at that  
 " meeting." 1652.

The justices finding the witnesses did not agree, and perceiving that the prosecution was malicious, discharged him. Then Judge Fell, after speaking to the justices who granted the warrant, and shewing them the errors thereof, in concert with Colonel West, granted a supersedeas to stop its execution. \* This confederacy of priests to inflict punishment on an innocent man, and to stop the progress of those doctrines he propagated, received a signal defeat in both attempts. For he was not only honourably acquitted in the Acquitted, open fessions of the false accusations with which their malice had charged him, to their lasting disgrace and confusion; but, being called upon by the aforesaid Colonel West, that if he had any thing to say to the people he might freely declare it: He, feeling a proper qualification, made use of the liberty granted him; and though he met with opposition from some of the angry priests, they were so clearly confuted, and divine truths so plainly and powerfully opened by and encou-  
 him, that many new profelytes to his doctrine raged to preach,  
 were gained that day; and amongst them Jus- whereby se-  
 tice Benson of Westmoreland, Major Ripan, veral were  
 mayor of Lancaster, and Thomas Briggs (who  
 had shewn much aversion and opposition to the  
 Quakers)

\* When we see the lengths these priests could go to wreak their malice, have we not reason to suspect their descriptions of this people of being tinctured with the same spirit, and therefore to be credited with caution, and some grains of allowance for the disposition in which they were written?

C H A P. Quakers) was so effectually convinced, that he  
 V became a faithful minister of the gospel amongst  
 1652. them, and so continued to the end of his  
 days.

---

## C H A P. VI.

*The Society increaseth under their Sufferings.—Sufferings of James Naylor.—James Naylor imprisoned for not putting off his Hat, and as a Vagabond; and Francis Howgill along with him.—James Naylor tried for Blasphemy and acquitted.—Note on Nicholson and Burn's Extract from Higginson's Memoirs.—Imprisonment of Thomas Aldam.*

C H A P. BY patient suffering, through divine support,  
 VI. and the testimony of a good conscience, through  
 1652. zealous exertions of their ministerial labours,  
 under persuasion of duty; the combined efforts  
 of a licentious populace, of malevolent priests  
 and professors, and of persecuting magistrates,  
 proved ineffectual to check the progress of this  
 society. Meetings of this people were now settled  
 in many of the central and northern parts of  
 the nation, and several of them had joined in the  
 work of the ministry with the approbation and  
 to the edification of their fellow members, so  
 that the number of preachers was augmented to  
 twenty-five, amongst whom Francis Howgill,  
 Edward Burrough, John Camm, John Audland,  
 Richard Hubberthorn, with the three before-  
 mentioned,

The society  
 increases  
 under their  
 sufferings.

mentioned, viz. Richard Farnsworth, William C H A P. Dewsbury and James Naylor, were eminent for their services and their sufferings ; for they had not only a share with George Fox in his ministerial labours, but also in his mal-treatment.

VI.  
1652.

<sup>Sufferings  
of James  
Naylor.</sup>

\* For in the course of this year James Naylor and Francis Howgill were both imprisoned at Appleby ; James being at a meeting at Orton, five priests with many people came thither ; the priests asked him many questions, to which he gave such answers as frustrated their purposes of ensnaring him in his words. However, against the succeeding first day, they had prepared sermons filled with invectives against him, representing him as a blasphemer, a denier of the resurrection and humanity of Christ, and a contemner of authority ; and some of them indulged their spleen so far (as their hearers reported) as to assert it would be doing God service to knock him down. Having thus prepared the ruder sort of people, and one of the priest's sons drawing a great company of them together, beset the house where he was, and dragged him with violence into a field, where a justice, sent for by a priest, was present, who commanded him to answer such questions as the priest should put to him, who after much conference, getting little advantage against him, grew angry, and warning the people not to receive him into their houses turned away, and the people beginning to be abusive, the justice was about doing the same, as if they intended leaving him to the mercy of the populace. But at James's remonstrance, the justice turning back rescued him for the present : yet at the instance of the priests, who were displeased

\* Besse's Suffering of the Quakers, vol. ii. p. 2.

C H A P. VI.  
 1652. pleased thereat, he was again seized by the rabble, and brought before the priests and justice, at a neighbouring alehouse, and because he did not put off his hat, they committed him to prison for his pretended contempt, and also as being a vagabond, under pretence, that none there knew whence he came ; for they had shut out all his acquaintances : Upon his appealing to the justice that he knew him, they having been in the army together several years, the justice replying it was no matter, made his mittimus and carried him to Kirby-steven that night and placed a guard over him. Amongst several more of his friends, Francis Howgill accompanied him thither, who took an opportunity to preach to the people, a considerable number being gathered in the street ; upon which, being brought before a justice, after an examination, in which they endeavoured to wrest his expressions in order to criminate him, he was likewise put under a guard, and next day, together with James Naylor, sent to Appleby gaol.

J. Naylor  
tried for  
blasphemy,  
and acquit-  
ted.

At the sessions held in Appleby in the month called January, 1652, James Naylor was tried on an indictment for blasphemy ; but after a long examination, it appearing that the \* priests could

\* Nicholson and Burn, authors of reputation, have thought it worth while to draw from obscurity to public view, as late as the year 1777, an extract from some memoirs of Higginson, vicar of Kirby Steven, (one of the priests before-mentioned, and the only one mentioned by name, as a principal in promoting the abuse offered James Naylor by the populace, and this prosecution for blasphemy) containing a recital of various extravagancies committed by the people called Quakers at this period ;—such as foaming, bellowing out “repent, repent; wo, wo,” &c. some of them running naked about the streets, and preaching naked at the market-cross—many

James Nay-  
lor impris-  
oned for  
not putting  
off his hat,  
and as a va-  
gabond,

and Francis  
Howgill a-  
long with  
him.

could not make out the charge exhibited against him, he was discharged by the justices from his imprisonment, VI.  
1652.

of them in their assemblies falling down suddenly as in an epileptic fit, and lying grovelling on the ground, foaming at the mouth, their lips quavering, their flesh and joints trembling, and their bellies swelling like a blown bladder: All which easily accounts for the name of Quakers being given them.—In their preaching they called themselves the way, the truth and the life.—One James Milner declared himself to be the son of God and Christ.

The narration from which this abstract was taken was republished in the Monthly Review for March, 1778, which gave occasion to the following remonstrance to the reviewers, published in the succeeding Review.

“ To the Authors of the Monthly Review.

“ Gentlemen,

“ You have selected an extract from Nicholson and Burn’s History of Westmorland in your last Review, respecting the first Quakers, and, by adding the epithet *curious* to it, you have, in some degree, given it your sanction. The account is said to be drawn from some (I suppose before unpublished) memoirs of a Mr. Higginson, formerly vicar of Kirkby Stephen.

“ It seems somewhat extraordinary, that a gentleman of Dr. Burn’s great and deserved reputation in the literary world should have thought it fair to draw from its obscurity a paper, written at a time when the minds of most men were heated with religious prejudice, and when the clergy, more particularly, were irritated against the Quakers, because their tenets, opposing the venal support of the priesthood, sapped the very foundations of its splendour and authority. Nor perhaps did they scruple to add the epithet of hireling to those, who making a trade of religion, brought it into disrepute amongst the people.

“ At the quarter sessions at Appleby in Westmoreland in January 1652, James Naylor, a Quaker, was tried for blasphemy. The trial is still extant, and it appears from thence that — Higginson, vicar of Kirkby Stephen, was a promoter of the prosecution. Naylor was then honourably discharged, nothing of that kind being proved against him, unless it be reckoned blasphemy to oppose Higginson’s assertion, repeated in open court, that *Christ is in heaven with*

**C H A P.** imprisonment, which had continued about twenty  
 VI. weeks. Whether Francis Howgill's confinement  
 ~~~~~ 1652. was

" *with a carnal body.* Both the temper of the good vicar,  
 " and the complexion of his divinity, may perhaps be inferred  
 " from this anecdote.

" The evidence of Higginson carries with it all the marks  
 " of that wanton exaggeration which characterises personal  
 " animosity. The charge is supported by no proof. Gerard  
 " Croese, indeed, in his History of the Quakers, mentions  
 " a petition from the ministers, and sundry other persons of  
 " Lancashire, against George Fox, James Naylor, and their  
 " associates, in which they are accused of foaming at the  
 " mouth in their conventicles, and of other strange agitations ;  
 " and George Fox, in particular, of having said that he was  
 " equal to God, the only Judge of the World, Christ, the  
 " Way, the Truth, and the Life. One James Melver (per-  
 " haps Milner) was also charged with saying that he was God  
 " and Christ, and with prophesying that the day of judg-  
 " ment was at hand, that there should be no more justices in  
 " Lancashire, and that the parliament should be plucked up  
 " by the roots. Higginson's narrative and this petition bear  
 " striking marks of affinity with each other, and probably  
 " sprung from the same source. Croese, however, who was  
 " no Quaker, nor is his history partial to the Quakers, ac-  
 " knowledges, ' that these charges were so completely re-  
 " futed, that it was apparent they who invented them were  
 " wicked men, and they who believed in them were fools.'  
 " He excepts the mad presumption of Melver (or Milner),  
 " whom he says the Quakers rebuked. The truth is, that  
 " as the Quakers, for the reason above-mentioned, were es-  
 " pecially singled out as the objects of priestly indignation,  
 " every rumour to their disadvantage was eagerly adopted,  
 " and frequently spread with circumstances of aggravation.  
 " Thus a Vicar of Wakefield, whose name was Marshal,  
 " reported of George Fox, that he rode upon a great black  
 " horse, and was seen within an hour at two places sixty miles  
 " distant from each other. If the papers of this Vicar were  
 " narrowly searched into, it might, possibly, be found record-  
 " ed as his opinion, that the first Quakers were witches. It  
 " must, notwithstanding, be acknowledged, that it was not  
 " unusual for some of the most zealous to go sometimes into  
 " the public places of worship, and after the preacher had

" finished

was of a longer or shorter continuance than this, C H A P. VI.  
we have no account.

Thomas Aldam, one of those early preachers, was also imprisoned this year in York, at the instigation of the priest of Warnsworth, for uttering some expressions after the priest had ended his sermon. At York assizes he was fined 40l. for coming into the court with his hat on: and was a second time imprisoned in York castle for refusing to pay tithes, and detained in prison two years and six months. He had also, for 11l. 10s. demanded for tithes, taken from him goods worth 58l. 10s.

1652.  
Thomas Aldam impri-  
foned.

In the course of the same year several others, whose religious concern induced them to exhort the priests and their congregations at the close of their public assemblies for worship, met with the like severe treatment; but to describe particularly the sufferings they underwent for their Christian testimonies, would carry me far beyond my proposed limits. Their suffering in the different counties of England and elsewhere, have been digested by Joseph Besse, and make two volumes in folio.

“ finished his discourse, to reprove both priest and people for practices which they considered as superstitious or anti-christian.

“ Amidst the swarm of sects which distinguish the last century, there was one, of which little is now known, but that the practices of its adherents outraged all decency and order. They were called Ranters. The enemies of the Quakers found it frequently suitable to their purpose to confound them with this ephemeron sect, whose principles were nevertheless totally incompatible with those of the Quakers. There is a paper still extant, written by Edward Burroughs, an active preacher amongst the Quakers, against the licentious practices of these people.”



---

H I S T O R Y  
O F THE  
PEOPLE CALLED QUAKERS.

---

B O O K II.

From the End of the Commonwealth to the  
Restoration of monarchical Government.

---

C H A P. I.

*Oliver Cromwell dissolves the Parliament—The Change of Government brings no Advantage to the Quakers.—George Fox goes into Cumberland.—At Carlisle he preaches at the Market-cross, and in the Steeple-house.—Summoned before the Magistrates and imprisoned.—Rumour of his being to be hanged.—The Judge and Magistrates in Consultation about bringing him in guilty of Death; being puzzled therein, resolve not to bring him to Trial.—A fair Trial demanded without Effect.—George Fox confined among Felons and cruelly treated.—James Parnell convinced.—The Parliament enquire into George Fox's Case.—George Fox released.—M. Halhead greatly abused.*

WE are now entering upon the year 1653, in C H A P.  
the forepart whereof another revolution in go-  
vernment took place: The parliament conceiving

**C H A P.** I. a jealousy of Oliver Cromwell's ambition, power and influence in the army; and having upon trivial grounds commenced and prosecuted a naval war against the Dutch with signal success, very plausibly insisted on the intolerable additional expence to which the nation was put, to maintain a land army (now no longer necessary) and urged the necessity of a reduction thereof. Cromwell wanted not penetration to see the tendency of these designs to lay him aside, and therefore resolved to anticipate them. Bringing the officers and body of the army, now the real masters of the nation, into his views, he without hesitation forcibly dissolved the remnant of the long parliament, and, in conjunction with the principal officers, took the reins of government into his own hands.

**The change  
of govern-  
ment brings  
no advan-  
tage to the  
Quakers.** This change of government doth not appear to have produced any revolution in favour of the Quakers, so called; for although the supreme power was seized into new hands, the subordinate magistrates were continued in office by the new council of state, nor do I find any material change among the ecclesiastics, so that their former persecutors retained power to be still troublesome to them: and their sufferings continued to encrease with the increase of their numbers.

**George Fox  
goes into  
Cumber-  
land.** George Fox, still indefatigable in his labours, in spite of all opposition and the discouragement of his sufferings, passed about this time into Cumberland, and from place to place his ministry was so well received, that many new converts were gained to his doctrines in most places which he visited. Coming to Carlisle, he first preached to the soldiers in garrison there, directing them as usual to Christ as their teacher, and to the measure of his spirit in themselves, warning them

to

to do violence to no man, but shew forth a Christian life.

On the market-day, he went up to the Market-cross, and cautioned the people against fraud and over-reaching in their dealings, and to speak the truth one to another. On the first day following he went to the Steeple-house, and after the priest had done he preached to the people with a reaching power. The rude people of the town rose and assaulted him in the Steeple-house; but the governor sent down some musqueteers to appease the tumult, who, taking George by the hand in a friendly manner, led him out and rescued him from further insult. A lieutenant who had been convinced took him to his house, and there they had a quiet and satisfactory meeting. The next day he was summoned before the magistrates, who falling into discourse with him upon religion, in the course of their conversation, perceiving their emptiness as to the essence thereof, he endeavoured with his accustomed sincerity to shew them, that although they were high in profession (being Presbyterians and Independents) yet they were without the possession of what they professed. This plain dealing exasperating them, who, it's too probable, affected the name of religious men, and the appearance of purity more than the substance of pure religion; they committed him to prison under the hard names of *a blasphemer, an heretic and a seducer*, where he lay 'till the assizes. And in the interim the general discourse was, and from the disposition that prevailed against him at this time and in this place, it's to be feared, the general wish was that he was to be hanged. The high sheriff, whose name was Wilfry Lawson, indulged his rancour so far as to say, he would guard him <sup>Rumour of his being to be hang'd</sup> <sub>ed.</sub>

1653.  
At Carlisle  
preaches at  
the Mar-  
ket-cross,  
and at the  
Steeple-  
house.

Summoned  
before the  
magistrates,

and com-  
mitted to  
prison.

**C H A P.** to execution himself. And the notion was so universal that curiosity drew several ladies (so called) to see him, as a man that was to die. When the assizes came the judge and magistrates held a consultation how to proceed against him in order to bring him in guilty of death; but the judge's clerk starting a question that puzzled them and confounded their counsels, and finding that the charge of blasphemy could not be made good against him, and that of consequence if brought to a trial he must be acquitted, they concluded not to bring him to a trial at all.

*Anthony Pearson demands a fair trial for George Fox without effect.*

Anthony Pearson, a justice of peace in Westmoreland, lately convinced, being then in Carlisle, and understanding the result of their consultation, wrote to the judges, shewing the illegality of this resolution, and demanding a fair trial for George Fox; but they paid no regard to this reasonable demand of the subject's right, but left him to the magistrates of the town, encouraging them to treat him with rigour. He had hitherto been confined in the jailer's house so closely, that all his friends were denied access to him; but the day after an order was sent to the jailer to put him among the felons and murderers, in a prison noisome and filthy to the last degree, where, contrary to all decency, men and women were kept together, without any other convenience to ease nature than the room they were in; amongst a crew so unclean that one woman was almost eaten up with lice. Yet these prisoners, vile as they were, behaved affectionately to him, received his admonitions with deference, and some of them became converted by his doctrine. But far different was the conduct of the jailers, being very cruel and abusive, particularly that of the deputy, who in brutal rage would

*George Fox confined among felons and cruelly treated.*

would often fall upon his friends who came to <sup>L</sup> C H A P see him, and himself also, with a great cudgel.

Whilst he was confined in the dungeon here, among others who came to visit and discourse with him was one James Parnel, a youth of about sixteen years of age, who was by his conference so effectually reached that he was convinced, received the truth in the love of it, and soon became a powerful minister himself, and the means of convincing many others, proving himself by his pen and his tongue, in the zealous promotion of solid religion, a workman that need not to be ashamed ; although for these zealous endeavours he underwent grievous persecution, as will hereafter appear.

The report that had been raised previous to the assizes, *that George Fox should be put to death*, had by this time spread abroad ; and it came to the ears of the \* parliament then sitting,

<sup>1653.</sup>  
James Par-  
nel con-  
vinced by  
Geo. Fox.

\* This was the parliament that is distinguished by the denomination of *barebones*, and by some by that of the short parliament, being a number of one hundred and twenty summoned by Oliver Cromwell, in order to amuse the people with some resemblance of a common-wealth, to take upon them the executive part of government. Many of them being selected from the middle rank of the people have given occasion to sundry historians to characterize them in terms remarkably contemptuous, as men of the lowest birth and meanest intellects, chosen by Cromwell, particularly for their want of knowledge and experience in affairs, in prospect that the reins of government might revert into his own hands : But others speak of them with more respect, as a convention in which were several persons of worth, fortune <sup>Smollet.</sup> M'Aulay. and abilities ; and as the principal objection to their conduct seems to be a project they were designing to put in execution, which the people had been flattered with the hopes of before but disappointed, viz. the abridging of the delay and expense of law-suits, and abolishing tithes. I am ready to join

CHAP. ting, that a young man at Carlisle was to die for  
 I religion, whereupon they ordered a letter of en-  
 quiry to the sheriffs and magistrates concerning  
 1653. him.

The justices Benson and Pearson having more than once demanded liberty of the magistrates to visit George Fox in prison, and being refused, wrote to them, emphatically describing the turpitude of persecution in general, and their own exorbitant severity in particular, as exceeding in inhumanity that of the heathens, who having the apostle Paul in custody, refused him not the consolation of the visits of his friends and acquaintance. At length, however,

Anth. Pearson in company with the Governor visits George Fox in prison.

Anthony Pearson got an opportunity, in company with the governor, to visit him in his dungeon, and found his situation so disagreeable, and the place of his confinement of a smell so exceedingly offensive, that the governor exclaimed at the barbarity of the magistrates, and calling the jailers required securities for their good behaviour; and the under-jailer, who had treated George Fox with great cruelty, he George Fox released. imprisoned in the dungeon with him. In the mean time these persecuting magistrates, probably afraid of the parliament's further cognizance of their proceedings, and ashamed at the governor's remonstrance, soon after thought it expedient to release him, as the surest measure to bury their unjustifiable conduct in oblivion.

Miles Halhead greatly abused.

This year Miles Halhead, of Underbarrow in Westmoreland, one of the first zealous preachers,

join in with the latter opinion, that there were amongst them men of worth and integrity, disposed to apply the power they were invested with to the public good, which I think would have been essentially promoted by the execution of such a scheme as this.

ers, feeling a concern to travel into Yorkshire C H A P. I. in the work of the ministry, in obedience to what he believed his duty, proceeded on his journey, in which, for publishing those doctrines which he held as truth, he met with much grievous abuse. At Skipton and at Doncaster he was so forely beaten and bruised by the rude multitude that they left him to appearance dead; but being supported by an invisible hand he recovered, even to the astonishment of those who abused him, and to the convincement of many who had heard his doctrine, and observed his patience in suffering nigh unto death, and the unchristian and unprovoked malice of his assailants and their abettors. Thomas Briggs in Lancaster, Robert Widders and William Dewsbury in Cumberland, were also severally abused in like manner.

But still through all opposition, patient and undismayed, through divine assistance and support, George Fox and his fellow-labourers persevered in their ministry with unremitting zeal and remarkable success, the number of their adherents increasing in proportion to the cruel efforts exerted by magistrates, priests and mobs, to prevent their increase. Even these measures, employed to stop their progress, proved, in the over-ruling hand of divine providence, the means of advancing it. The innocence and integrity of their lives, the fortitude and christian temper with which they suffered persecution, buffeting and grievous abuse, pleaded powerfully in their behalf, and procured them the compassion and esteem of many. Others who heard them every where spoken against, and particularly from the pulpits, which should have been better employed, on a nearer acquaintance with them,

The sufferings of this people tend to the increasing of their number.

CHAP. them, found them and their principles so grossly misrepresent as induced them to forsake such teachers, who under the profession of purity in religion fell so far short of moral rectitude, and to associate with this people, whom they found honest in heart, upright in conduct, and truly sincere in their profession of godliness.

---

## C H A P. II.

*Oliver Cromwell declared Protector.—Which is of no Advantage to the People called Quakers.—Pretext for Persecution.—Remark upon the Benevolence and mutual Affection of the Quakers, so called.—Their Prosperity in Commerce by Means of fair Dealing.*

CHAP. THE short parliament, commonly called Barebone's, having resigned their power back into the hands of Oliver Cromwell, from whom they received it, the council of officers, by the advice of Lambert, adopted a new scheme of government, tempering the liberty of a republick with the authority of a single person, under the denomination of protector. Cromwell was accordingly declared protector, and a model of a new legislature was drawn up, which they termed the instrument of government, and which he was sworn to observe in his administration thereof; in which, as there were several articles in favour of liberty of conscience,

some

Oliver  
Cromwell  
declared  
protector,

\* Besse's Sufferings, Preface.

some relaxation of the vindictive measures hi- C H A P.  
thereto pursued against the Quakers was natural II.  
for this people to expect.

But notwithstanding these plausible appear- 1654.  
ances of liberality of sentiment in favour of which is of  
religious liberty, this people reaped no advan- no advan-  
tage therefrom, but continued to be exposed to tage to the  
all the hardships they had before experienced, people call-  
not only from ordinances being turned against ed Quakers.  
them, but their meetings for worship, though seemingly allowed, were in fact prohibited, since they were punished as sabbath-breakers, for tra- velling to them no further than their distant dwellings made necessary.

But the authority of government, and power of executing the laws, being in the hands of those whose principles had formerly subjected themselves to the severity of the bishops ; and who had, when under suffering, loudly ex- claimed against the tyranny and iniquity of per-secution, for a conscientious dissent from es- tablished forms of worship or modes of faith, and had taken up arms to deliver themselves there- from, having now gotten the upper-hand, they could not, with any degree of consistency or modesty, openly reverse their former professions, and maintain persecution lawful in them, which they had so violently opposed in others ; they continued to condemn it speculatively, but to keep it up practically in use ; for this purpose they endeavoured to comprehend actions merely religious under a description within the reach of the laws. A christian exhortation to an as- sembly after the priest had done, and their wor- ship was over, was denominated, *interrupting public worship, and disturbing the priest in his office : An honest testimony against sin in the streets*

Pretexts for  
persecution.

C H A P. streets or markets was styled *a breach of the peace* ;  
 II. and their appearing before the magistrates co-  
 vered *a contempt of authority* : Hence proceeded  
 1654. fines, imprisonments and spoiling of goods. Nay,  
 so hot for persecution were some magistrates,  
 that by an unparalleled misconstruction of the  
 laws against vagrants, they tortured with cruel  
 whippings the bodies of both men and women  
 of good estate and reputation, merely because  
 they went under the denomination of *Quakers*

While they were exposed to hatred, contempt  
 and abuse from without, brotherly kindness and  
 unfeigned charity increased, and connected them  
 in cordial affection amongst themselves ; so that  
 the priests and professors, who had vainly pro-  
 phesied their downfal by other means, observing  
 their mutual charity and hospitality, began now  
 to say, *they would eat one another out* : Because  
 many of them after meetings, having a great  
 way to go, took a night's lodging at some of  
 their friends houses, sometimes in large num-  
 bers : Others who walked not by faith as they  
 did, actuated by political considerations, expressed  
 their fears, that by their expenses in entertaining  
 one another, they would be reduced to beggary,  
 and fall a charge upon the parishes. But many  
 of these lived to see the vanity of their fears and  
 forebodings ; for it pleased divine providence re-  
 markably to bleſs them and prosper their un-  
 dertakings. At the first, indeed, people were  
 ſhy of dealing with them, by reaſon of their  
 plain, and, as it was generally eſteemed, uncouth  
 demeanour and addreſs ; and by reaſon of  
 the general averſion produced by malignity and  
 miſrepresentation, ſo that many of this people  
 were reduced to diſſiculty in procuring a living  
 by their callings for a ſeaſon ; but afterwards,

when

Remark  
upon the  
benevo-  
lence and  
mutual af-  
fection of  
the people  
called Qua-  
kers.

when they became better known for what they were, and not for what they were falsely reported to be ; manifesting the excellency of that internal religion they professed by the regularity of their moral conduct\*, and their conscientious regard to fidelity in their commerce, void of all fraud, deceit and circumvention ; careful in manufacturing or choosing such goods as might be substantial, and answer the expectations of the purchasers, moderate in their profits, sparing in their commendations, and punctual in their payments†, not asking more for their ware than the precise sum they were determined to accept, taking no advantage of ignorance, the unskilful customer being sure to be treated with as much justice as the most judicious ; their tried integrity begat general confidence, and that confidence brought them a great resort of customers, so that they prospered greatly in their outward affairs, and verified the proverb, that *honesty is the best policy.*

1654.

Their prosperity in commerce by means of fair dealing.

\* It is a remarkable instance of the charity and mutual benevolence that prevails amongst this people, that they have never suffered their poor to fall an incumbrance on their parishes ; but they have ever afforded them a comfortable support amongst themselves : and at the same time evidence the universality of their benevolence, by a readiness with the foremost to contribute to the support of the common poor, both in their quota of the poor tax, and in extending private charity to deserving objects within their notice.

† Hume, notwithstanding the contemptible and ridiculous light in which he has endeavoured to place this people, owns this (and this only) to be a laudable maxim. If he had viewed them with dispassionate and discerning eyes, I think he might have discovered many other maxims of this people deserving approbation as well as this.

## C H A P. III.

*Sundry Friends travel abroad in the Work of the Ministry.—Francis Howgill and Edward Burrough, the first of this People who visited the City of London.—Francis Howgill intercedes with Oliver Cromwell to stop Persecution.—Meetings settled in London.—Francis Howgill and Edward Burrough travel to Bristol, and there meet with John Camm and John Audland.—Francis Howgill and Edward Burrough examined by the Council and ordered to depart out of the City.—The Mob instigated to abuse those Friends, which they do in a very gross Manner.—Sufferings of Elizabeth Heavens and Elizabeth Fletcher at Oxford.—Convincement and Sufferings of Barbara Blaugdon—She is imprisoned at Marlborough, committed to Exeter Jail and cruelly whipped.—At Basign-Stoke procures the Liberty of Thomas Robertson and Ambrose Rigg.*

C H A P.  
III.

1654.  
Sundry  
friends tra-  
vel abroad  
in the work  
of the mi-  
nistry.

MEETINGS being settled in many parts of the northern counties, and with the number of professors the number of ministers proportionably encreasing, several of these conceived it their duty to go forth into other parts of the nation to propagate the gospel, and to turn people to righteousness. Of these Francis Howgill and Edward Burrough travelled to London; John Camm and John Audland to Bristol; Richard Hubberthorn and George Whitehead to Norwich, and others to other parts. George Fox from experience, impressed with a lively sense of

the

the importance of the work in which they were C H A P. III.  
 engaging, solicitous for the advancement of the truth, and that no part of the conduct of those who were concerned to promote it might in the least degree fully the brightness thereof, wrote an epistle, admonishing them to prudence; to abide under the cross of Christ; to receive wisdom from God by the light; and not to be hasty to run in their own wills, but to continue in patience. \* Francis Howgill and Edward Burrough arrived in London in company with Anthony Pearson, being the first of the people called Quakers that had a meeting in London, Francis Howgill and Anthony Pearson at the house of Robert Dring in Watling-street, and Edward Burrough the same day, in the assembly of a separate society: Their ministerial labours were blessed with signal success, being attended with a convincing power, impressing awful considerations, and awakening the consciences of the audience to a sense of their conditions and earnest desires after salvation. They were eminently qualified for the service in which they were engaged, not only with sound understanding and a sufficient share of literature, but the superior qualification of the experience of the quickening power of that inward religion; which they endeavoured to recommend and propagate; a religion not amusing the head in curious speculations, but purifying the heart and cleansing the conscience from dead works to serve the Lord in newness of life; prepared for the work of the ministry by the previous work of inward sanctification, and believing themselves to that arduous undertaking called of God as was Aaron.

1654.

Francis  
Howgill  
and Edward  
Burrough  
the first of  
this people  
who visited  
the city of  
London.

Having

\* Sewel, p. 81.

## C H A P.

III.

<sup>b</sup> Having a feeling sympathy with his brethren under persecution, with whom he had been a fellow-sufferer,<sup>c</sup> Francis Howgill went to court to intercede with Oliver Cromwell to put a stop thereto ; but his visit seems to have had a more beneficial effect upon Oliver's servants than upon himself ; for some of these, and particularly Theophilus Green and Mary Sanders were so far affected by his discourse, that after some time they joined themselves to the people called Quakers.

<sup>c</sup> Francis Howgill afterwards wrote to Oliver very boldly and plainly on the same subject ; but the sequel doth not manifest any good effects resulting therefrom ; his friends continued still subject to a variety of hardships for their conscientious adherence to their religious principles, during the remainder of his protectorate, and through the succeeding revolutions.

Through the zealous and effectual preaching of Edward Burrough and Francis Howgill, many of the citizens of London were brought over to their profession, so that <sup>d</sup> meetings were settled in sundry places in that city, first in the house of Sarah Sawyer in Aldersgate-street, then in that of —— Bates in Tower-street, and another at Gerard Roberts's in Thomas Apostles, 'till the body growing too large for private houses to accommodate, a house known by the name of *Bull and Mouth in Martins-le-grand*, near Aldersgate, was hired for a meeting-house.

<sup>e</sup> Now the press as well as the pulpits was set to work for the purpose of defamation : Abundance of books and publications by the priests and

Meetings  
settled in  
London.

<sup>b</sup> Sewel, p. 83.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid, p. 82.

<sup>d</sup> Ibid, p. 84.

and teachers of several sects were spread abroad, C H A P. III.  
representing the Quakers as seducers and false prophets. For being chagrined at the loss of their hearers, many of whom had gone over to this rising society, they were roused to employ every engine to stop its progress : But the event did not answer their hope, for Burrough and Howgill did not suffer these writings to pass unnoticed ; but clearly manifested the malice and the absurdities of the writers.

1654

It doth not appear that they met with any molestation in their persons in the metropolis ; but after they had gathered and settled meetings there, they travelled thence to Bristol, where Francis Howgill and Edward Burrough travel to Bristol, and there meet with John Camm and John Audland, by whose ministry several are convinced.

<sup>f</sup> John Camm and John Audland had arrived before, and where their ministry had been effectual to gather a number to their community, and particularly Josiah Coale, George Bishop, Charles Marshal and Barbara Blaugden. Their preaching was like that of the apostles, in the demonstration of the spirit, and with power ; multitudes flocked to hear them, and many embraced their doctrine. Their public assemblies, for want of room in their usual meeting-houses, were held in the fields, even in winter, increasing in number to two, three, and sometimes near four thousand of all degrees, professions, ages and sexes. This alarmed the priests, and they the magistrates, who on the 30th October held a council, the mayor presiding, and sent for Burrough and Howgill. The issue of their examination, at which none of their friends were suffered to be present, though their opposers were readily admitted, was an order for their departing the city forthwith at their peril.

F. Howgill and E. Burrough examined before the council,

VOL. I.

K

To

**C H A P.** To this they answered : *We came not in the will of man, nor stand in the will of man, but when he shall move us to depart who moved us to come hither we shall obey : We are free-born Englishmen, and have served the commonwealth faithfully, being free in the sight of God from the transgression of any law :*

**III.**

**1654.** by whom they are ordered to depart the city.

To your commands we cannot be obedient ; but if by violence you put us out of the city, and have power to do it, we cannot resist. Having said this, they went out of the court, but tarried in the city preaching as before ; for though the magistrates bare them no good will, yet they could not either by law or justice execute the order they had made.

The mob instigated to abuse the friends,

The opposers of the truth, enraged at this disappointment, excited the mob to do what the magistrates could not. On the 19th of December John Camm and John Audland, passing over the bridge toward Brislington, where they had appointed a meeting, were assaulted by some hundreds of the rabble, whose ignorant zeal had been blown up to the highest pitch of fury by one Farmer, a persecuting priest, and some others.

which they do in a very gross manner.

They violently drove back the innocent strangers, some crying out, *hang them presently, others, knock them down* ; and would have dragged them out of the city, in order to execute their wicked purpose, but were dissuaded by some who advised first to carry them before the mayor. Then they dragged them to the Tolzey, where the courts of justice are held. There again the enraged mob would probably have torn them to pieces, had not a friend with much danger and difficulty got them into his house and shut the doors. The rabble with hideous noise threatened to pull down the house, while the innocent men remained as lambs dumb before their shearers, in quietness and patience, yet undaunted, putting their

their trust in God. After some time the officers C H A P.  
of the garrison approaching, the mob, fearing  
military execution, dispersed. Next morning  
the two strangers passed over the bridge to their  
meeting at Brislington. Three of the rioters  
were apprehended, on the report of which they  
gathered again to the number of fifteen hundred,  
and forced the discharge of their companions.  
Towards evening it was rumoured that the Qua-  
kers were returning, whereupon multitudes drew  
together on the bridge, and on the other side of  
the river Avon, uttering terrible menaces, so  
that the magistrates, fearing bloodshed, sent their  
sword-bearer to prevent the men from returning  
that way, for that *they could not undertake to se-  
cure them.* Thus Providence preserved the inno-  
cent from the enraged rabble, whose fury spread  
a terror over the whole city. These disorders  
were too much countenanced by men in office.  
<sup>g</sup> It was credibly reported that George Helliar,  
an Alderman, said at the Tolzey, to some of the  
rioters, *that he would spend his blood, and lose his  
life, rather than that any of his fellow apprentices  
should go to prison:* Such familiarity encreased  
their insolence. <sup>h</sup> Nevertheless the magistrates  
soon after, in representing these tumults to the  
Protector, charged the innocent men, against  
whom they were raised as, the authors of them.

Amidst so many instances of arbitrary rule and  
lawless riot, I am pleased to meet with one of a  
more humane and Christian disposition in the  
mayor of Oxford of this year. Elizabeth Hea-  
vens and Elizabeth Fletcher, two North-country  
women, came under a religious concern to the  
said city, to exhort the inhabitants and students

Sufferings  
of Elizabeth  
Heavens  
and Eliza-  
beth Fletch-  
er.

CHAP. to repentance and amendment of life. Their  
 III. labours of love met with inhuman returns from  
 1654. the scholars, who drove these innocent women  
 by force to the pump in John's College, where  
 they pumped water on their necks and into their  
 mouths till they were almost suffocated ; after  
 which they tied them arm to arm, and with  
 great barbarity dragged them up and down the  
 college and through a pool of water : They threw  
 Elizabeth Fletcher, a young woman, over a  
 grave, whereby she received a contusion on her  
 side, from which she never recovered, but soon  
 after died. A few days after this rude and un-  
 christian treatment, the same women went to  
 one of their places of public worship, and after  
 the priest had done, one of them began to ex-  
 hort the people to the practice of godliness :  
 Two justices of peace, who were present, ordered  
 them immediately to be sent to Bocardo, a pri-  
 son usually appropriated to the reception of fel-  
 lons and murderers. Next day those justices

*The mayor  
 refuses his  
 consent to  
 the pro-  
 ceedings of  
 the other  
 magistrates.*

said he, *who committed them, deal with them ac-*  
*cording to law, for my part I have nothing against*  
*them : If they wanted food, money or clothes, I*  
*would willingly supply them.* However, when the  
 justices met he met with them, and the \* Vice-  
 chancellor of the university being sent for, read-  
 dily came, and was the principal in examining  
 them. After a short examination, the women  
 were ordered to withdraw while the magistrates  
 consulted together, and although nothing ap-  
 peared to criminate them, these magistrates drew

up

\* Dr. Owen.

up their sentence against them in writing, That C H A P.  
they should be whipped out of the city. Now,  
according to the legal constitution of the city,  
it was requisite for the mayor to sign a sentence  
of corporal punishment, and affix his seal of  
office to make it valid, which in this case he re-  
fused to do, because he could not in conscience  
consent to a sentence, which he thought unmerited  
and unjust. But as a scrupulous adherence to  
legal forms was too often made to give way to  
the gratification of a vindictive temper in ma-  
gistrates, actuated more by causeless hatred to  
this people, than regard to justice or humanity,  
the Vice-chancellor and his coadjutors resolved,  
since the mayor would not legalize the sentence  
by the sanction of his signature, they would  
have it executed without him, and accordingly  
gave orders that the poor women should be se-  
verely whipped the next morning, and had their  
order effectually executed; though the convic-  
tion of their innocence affected the heart even  
of the executioner to that degree, that he per-  
formed his office with manifest reluctance. The  
women bearing their grievous sufferings with  
Christian patience, without murmuring or com-  
plaining in the least, their meek and patient be-  
haviour impressed many of the sober inhabi-  
tants with compassionate sympathy towards them,  
and induced them to acknowledge them as the  
servants of God, supported by his divine power  
to bear their testimony with innocence, and  
their sufferings with the patience of saints. With  
sensations of tender regard to them, and of dis-  
gust and aversion to the severity of their perse-  
cutors, they in much love and tenderness ac-  
companied them out of the city.

In

C H A P.

III.

1654.

Convincement  
and sufferings of  
Barbara Blaugdon.

She is im-  
prisoned at  
Marlbo-  
rough.

In this year Barbara Blaugdon of Bristol met with usage equally severe. She was a woman of good parts and education, religiously inclined from her youth, of good repute, and esteemed in her profession or employment, which was the instruction of children. But being amongst the number of those who had been converted to Quakerism (so called) by the efficacious ministry of John Camm and John Audland ; and believing it her duty to take up the cross, she conscientiously adopted not only the simplicity of manners peculiar to this society in dress and address (whereby she lost her employment) but was so abstemious as to deny herself the use of flesh, wine or beer, drinking only water for the space of a year. In the mean time she grew in piety and religious experience. This woman was repeatedly concerned to intercede on behalf of her persecuted friends, and not without success, and was remarkably exposed to a variety of afflictions and persecutions herself. At Marlborough, for exhorting the people to fear God, in the steeple-house and other places, she was imprisoned for the space of six weeks ; and after her release, visiting Isaac Burges, the magistrate who committed her, by her discourse his understanding was so opened, that he assented to the truth ; and although he had not resolution to take up the cross, so far as to make public profession thereof, yet he was ever afterwards a man of moderation, averse to persecution, and a friendly protector of the members of this community. Soon after passing into Devonshire, at Great-Torrington, for expressing a few words of exhortation to the people in the steeple-house, she was summoned before the mayor, who upon her appearing before him conducted himself with moderation,

moderation, and seemed reluctant to send her to C H A P.  
prison. But the priest being present, discovered III.  
a very different temper, and was very urgent  
with him to do it, expressing the bitterness of  
his spirit, in saying, *She ought to be whipped for a*  
*vagabond.* Upon which she desired him *to prove*  
*wherever she asked any one for a bit of bread.* At  
length the priest's urgency prevailed over the Committed  
magistrate's moderation, by whom she was sent jail,  
to Exeter prison twenty miles distant, where she  
was detained till the assizes, but brought to no  
trial; and after the assizes she was lodged one  
night among a great number of gipsies who were  
there in prison. Next day the sheriff coming and cruelly  
with the beadle, brought her into a room, where  
she was very cruelly whipped till the blood ran  
down her back; and such was her magnanimity,  
supported by an invisible power, that she never  
started at a blow, but sang aloud, rejoicing that  
she was counted worthy to suffer in a noble  
cause, the testimony of a good conscience. The  
unfeeling beadle, provoked at her constancy, laid  
on his stripes with redoubled fury, till the sheriff  
seeing that the utmost exertion of their malice  
made no impression upon her (for she was  
strengthened by an extraordinary and more than  
human power, so that she declared afterwards  
that in the state in which she was at that time,  
if she had been whipped to death she should not  
be terrified or dismayed) ordered the fellow to  
desist. The next day she was turned out of the  
city along with the gipsies, the beadle following  
them two miles out of town. Upon his leaving  
them, she returned to visit her friends she had  
left behind in prison, which having done she  
went home to Bristol.

She

C H A P.

III.

1654.

At Basingstoke procures liberty for Thomas Robertson and Ambrose Rigge.

She had not been long at home before she felt an impulse on her mind to go abroad on the following occasion : Two of her friends\*, Thomas Robertson and Ambrose Rigge, being at a meeting at Basingstoke in Hampshire (the first their friends had there) were taken up and committed to prison, where they had lain for some time ; and Barbara apprehending it her Christian duty to visit them in prison, and use her endeavours to obtain their release, went to Basingstoke ; and upon her arrival there, going to the prison, was refused admittance. She then went to the mayor, and requested their liberty ; which he promised her to grant, provided he might see the letter she had brought them, (viz. a letter from J. Camm) which she readily producing, after he had read it, he told her she should have her friends out, but that he could not let them out presently : Yet it was not long till they were set at liberty.

\* These men coming to Basingstoke were informed that the priest of that parish had uttered several invective speeches against them : They, in order to clear themselves, desired an interview with him, which he refused ; but said *they might expect to be shortly in prison* : And holding a meeting in a friend's yard, to which many of the town resorted, during the meeting this priest with a justice of peace came thither in a rude and angry manner ; and in order to get occasion against them the justice tendered them the oath of abjuration, which refusing, from a conscientious scruple against swearing, they were committed to prison, kept and examined apart ; their money, bibles, ink-horns, knives and papers taken from them, (but the money returned) and none of their friends suffered to come near them.

## C H A P. IV.

*George Fox in Lincolnshire convinceth the Sheriff.*

—Also Sir Richard Wrey and others.—A general Meeting at Swanington.—At Drayton disputes with Priest Stephens and other Priests.—Is taken up at Whetstone and brought before Col. Hacker.—Who sends him to the Protector at London.—By whom he is discharged.—Has great Meetings in London.—A Meeting at John Crook's, who is convinced.

GEORGE FOX, after his release from Carlisle jail, travelled through sundry parts of the north of England, and through Yorkshire into Lincolnshire: and the Sheriff of Lincoln coming to a meeting which he was at made great contention for a time, but at length was so reached by the power attending George's testimony that he was convinced, as were several others also who came to oppose.

During his stay in this country the church of his friends encreased, and many received his doctrine; amongst others Sir Richard Wrey, his brother, and his brother's wife, who both retained their integrity. But Sir Richard finding the way too narrow left their community after some time: for persecution gathering strength became as a touchstone to try the sincerity of the professors, being a trial of faith too severe for the hypocritical or superficial professors to endure.

Travelling through Derbyshire into Leicestershire he came to Swanington, to a general meeting, where he met John Audland, Francis How-

CHAP.  
IV.  
1654.  
George Fox  
in Lincoln-  
shire con-  
vinceth the  
sheriff.

gill

CHAP. <sup>IV.</sup> gill and Edward Pyot, from Bristol, and Edward Burrough, from London ; and several were convinced in those parts. To this meeting came many Ranters, Baptists, and other professors ; and the Ranters were very rude ; but that power which attended George and his friends brought them down and confounded them, so that many of them became convinced.

George Fox  
at Drayton  
has a dis-  
pute with  
priest Ste-  
phens and  
others.

From hence he went to Twycross, and thence to Drayton, the place of his nativity, to visit his relations. While he was here Nathaniel Stephens, priest of Drayton, having first got another priest to dispute, and after that seven others to join him, had given public notice, unknown to George, that on such a day there would be a meeting and dispute with him. Upon this occasion several hundreds of people were gathered to witness the triumph of the priests. This formidable combination was formed with a view to get an advantage by their numbers over George and his friends, in order to bring them and their principles into disgrace with the people ; but the event did not answer their hopes ; for in the course of their conference George drawing a striking parallel between their practices and those of the false prophets and pharisees, who were the subjects of rebuke in both the Old and New Testament, the priests in disappointment quitted the field, and many of the people were convinced that day : and George's father, who was still in communion with Stephens, as one of his parishioners, was so well satisfied, that, striking his cane upon the ground, he said, *Truly I see he that will stand to the truth, it will carry him through.*

The priests failing of their purpose to vanquish George Fox by their disputing and argumentation,

tion, had recourse to the secular power to gratify C H A P. IV.  
 their envious designs against him, and to bring him into trouble, or to put a stop to his travelling abroad. He went from Drayton to Leicester, and from thence to Whetstone, where a meeting was to be held; but before it began, about seventeen troopers of Colonel Hacker's regiment took him up, and brought him before the Colonel and his company of officers, by the procurement of the priests as he thought. And after much discourse and reasoning with them, the Colonel gave him liberty *to go home*, provided *he would stay there and not go abroad to meetings*. But George being unwilling to agree to the conditions, his son Nedham said, "Father, this man hath reigned too long, it is time to have him cut off." So malicious a speech drew from George this pertinent query. "For what? "what have I done? or whom have I wronged "from a child? In this country I had my birth "and education, and who can accuse me of "any evil from my infancy to this day?"— Then the Colonel asked him, if he would go home and stay at home? George looking upon this requisition as unreasonable, having administered no cause for such restriction of his liberty, replied, *If he should agree thereto it would imply that he was guilty of something, for which his home was made his prison: And if he went to meeting, they would consider that as a breach of their order; therefore he plainly told them he should go to meeting, and could not answer their requiring.* "Well then," said Hacker, "I will send you "to-morrow morning by six o'clock to my "Lord Protector, by Captain Drury, one of his "life-

CHAP. IV.  
 1654. "life guard." That night he was kept in the marshalsea, and next morning about the hour appointed delivered to Captain Drury. But before they set off, requesting to speak with Colonel Hacker, he was taken to his bed-side, when the Colonel recanted his order to him to go home and stay there: And George being still unwilling to comply, the Colonel insisted on his going to the protector. Whereupon George kneeled down at his bed-side, and prayed the Lord to forgive him: looking upon him to be like Pilate, willing to wash his hands while he complied with the instigations of the persecuting priests; and therefore desired him, *When the day of his misery and trial came upon him, then to remember what he had said to him.*

So parting from him, he was carried prisoner by Captain Drury to London, where being lodged at the Mermaid, Charing-Cross, Drury went to inform the Protector, who sent him back with this message, *That the Protector required of George Fox, that he should promise not to take up the sword, or any other weapon, against him or the government, as it then was; that he should write it in what words he saw proper, and set his hand to it.* George, on consideration thereof, wrote to the Protector the next morning by the name of Oliver Cromwell, declaring in the presence of the Lord, "That he did deny " the wearing or drawing of a sword, or any " outward weapon, against him or any man. " That he was sent of God to stand a witness " against all violence, and against the works of " darkness; and to bring people from the oc- " casion of wars and fightings to the peaceable " gospel;

“ gospel ; and from being evil doers, to whom C H A P. IV.  
 “ the magistrates fword should be a terror ; ”  
 to which he subſcribed his name, and gave it to Captain Drury to deliver to Cromwell. Some time after Drury returned, and brought George Fox before the Protector at Whitehall. Upon his coming in he said, *Peace be in this house,* and exhorted the Protector to keep in the fear of God, that he might receive wisdom from him ; that by it he might be ordered, and with it might order all things under his hand to God’s glory. They had much discourse about religion, in which the Protector carried himself with much moderation : But remarking that *George Fox and his friends quarrelled with the ministers,* George told him he did not quarrel with them, but they quarrelled with him ; but, added he, if we own the prophets, Christ and the apostles, we cannot uphold such teachers as they testified against, that is, such as violate Christ’s command, in not giving freely ; such as take the oversight of the flock for filthy lucre, and divine for money. When George made a motion to retire, upon other people coming in, Cromwell took him by the hand, and with tears in his eyes said, *Come again to my house, for if thou and I were but an hour of a day together we should be nearer one to another,* adding, *that he wished him no more ill than he did his own soul.* Then George bade him hearken to the voice of God, stand in his counsel and obey it, if he did so it would preserve him from hardness of heart ; but if not his heart would be hardened. The Protector seemed affected, and said, *It was true.* George then taking his leave retired, and Captain Drury following him out, informed him that the Lord Protector said he was at liberty, and might go whither he would. He is discharged.

Being

C H A P.

IV.

1654.

Has great  
meetings in  
London.

Being restored to liberty he staid during the remaining part of the year in London, where he had meetings so greatly crowded that he could hardly get to or from them, because of the croud. The number of his friends greatly increased, and he could reckon some belonging to Cromwell's court in the number of those convinced.

A meeting  
at John  
Crook's,  
who is con-  
vinced.

When he was clear of London he went into Bedfordshire, where he had a great meeting at the house of John Crook, a justice of peace, and many were convinced of the truth he declared, of which number John Crook himself was one, on which account he was soon deprived of his commission; but after some time he became an able minister, and a very serviceable member of this religious community.

C H A P.

## C H A P. V.

*Account of William Caton, Companion to Judge Fell's Son.—Convinced by George Fox.—He receives a Gift in the Ministry.—Account of John Stubbs, a Soldier.—Being convinced he refuses the Oath of Fidelity to Oliver Cromwell, for which he is disbanded.—Meets William Caton at London, and travels with him into Kent.—Being prohibited Entertainment at Dover, Luke Howard entertains them.—Samuel Fisher convinced.—Account of him.—At Maidstone John Stubbs and William Caton sent to the House of Correction, set in the Stocks, and severely whipped.—Turned out of the Town different Ways.—Return to Maidstone, and discharge their service without Molestation.—William Caton goes over to Calais.—William Caton and John Stubbs go to Scotland.*

THIS people still encreasing in number, and C H A P. the number of their ministers encreasing also, few counties in England remained unvisited by one or other of them. About this time William Caton and John Stubbs went into Kent, where they were made partakers with their brethren in bearing their testimony to the sufficiency of the divine light with success, and charitable endeavours to turn the people thereto, and in suffering in their persons for their testimony: But before I proceed to the particular description of their labours and sufferings, it seems proper, as they have not been noticed before, to make the reader a little acquainted with them.

V.  
1654

William

C H A P.

V.

1654.

Account of  
William  
Caton,  
companion  
to judge  
Fell's son.

William Caton, about the fourteenth year of his age, by his father's procurement, was introduced into the family of Judge Fell, where his agreeable disposition so ingratiated him with that family, that he was made companion to the Judge's son in his amusements and in his studies ; they learned Latin together for some time under a private tutor, and were afterwards removed to a public school at Hawkshead for their further improvement in the languages, in which he made a good proficiency ; for which advantages he had reason to be humbly thankful to divine providence for allotting him so favourable a situation ; but these were not the only advantages he reaped thereby.

Judge Fell, his wife and daughters, being in general persons of good sense, liberal education, virtuous demeanour, and religious inclinations, his conversation in such improving company, gave him an early turn to piety and virtue ; he was very punctual in his private devotions, and diligent, after hearing a lecture, to transcribe the chief heads thereof, in order to improve the favourable sentiments the family entertained of him, it being a point with them at that time to hold in highest estimation those who could repeat the sermons they had heard, and paraphrase thereupon : But whatever praise he might attain thereby from others, he did not feel that inward probation therein which could satisfy his own soul.

Convinced  
by George  
Fox.

In the year 1652 (as before recited) George Fox came to Swarthmore and preached in the family, recommending them to give heed to the light which Christ hath enlightened us withal,

to

\* Sewel, p. 100.

♦ Ibid, p. 101.

to convince us of sin and evil : This so affected C H A P.  
William Caton that he became subject to this internal convincement, whereby he felt much restriction in his conduct, and could no longer take the liberties he had done before ; for although he had not been addicted to vice or profanity, yet by the light he saw that he must be also weaned from vanity and the common diversions of youth, which tend to bring the mind into a state of dissipation, inconsiderateness and unwatchfulness, whereby it is in danger to fall into the enemy's snares, and to be seduced from the paths of virtue and righteousness. The divine witness was awakened in his conscience, and reproved him for every thing that was contrary to Christian gravity, convincing him that it was a serious matter indeed, *to use all diligence to make our calling and election sure.* The change of company he met with at the school at Hawkshead, on comparison with that he had left at Swarthmore, did not sit easy on his mind before, but under these solid impressions both his companions and exercises there became quite burdensome. The making of latin verses caused him particular uneasiness, as he could not now give that scope to his invention which others did, and as he had used to do. Margaret Fell, perceiving his uneasiness in his present situation, caused him to stay at home where she employed him in writing and teaching her children. Being arrived at his eighteenth year, he was encreased in experience and strengthened in the spiritual warfare : And in a while esteeming it his duty to labour in the ministry of the gospel, he desired to be discharged from his engagements in that family, which was granted in consideration of the service for which it was asked ; and so

He receives  
a gift in the  
ministry,  
and leaves  
judge Fell's  
wife.

CHAP. about the end of the year 1654 he took his  
V. leave, not without tears on both sides.

<sup>1654.</sup> John Stubbs was a soldier in Oliver Cromwell's army, and being in garrison at Carlisle when George Fox was in prison there, he was convinced by him, and became a convert to the doctrine he delivered; and proving faithful to conviction he grew in experience; he was now become a minister amongst this people, and proved a man of eminence and ability for service.

John  
Stubbs,  
Account of  
refuses the  
oath of fidelity to  
Oliver  
Cromwell,  
for which  
he is dis-  
banded.  
Meets with  
W. Caton  
at London,  
and travels  
with him  
into Kent.

Having received a liberal education, he was well skilled in the Latin, Greek and Oriental languages. When Oliver Cromwell took the

reins of government into his own hands, he required the soldiers and others to take an oath of fidelity to him and his government; but several of them being convinced of the truth of the doctrine of the Quakers, (so called) when the oath was tendered to them, declared, that in obedience to Christ's command, they durst not swear, whereupon they were disbanded; amongst these refusers was \*John Stubbs, who the latter end of this year, or the beginning of the succeeding one, travelled to London, where he met with William Caton, and in company with him travelled into Kent, and coming to Dover, altogether strangers, they took up their lodgings at an inn. They sought opportunities of publishing their doctrines in the sundry congregations of professors in that town; but the most remarkable opportunity was at a meeting of baptists, to which abundance of people resorted, and many were affected with their doctrine, and adhered to it, which occasioned such a stir, that they were haled before the magistrates, who examined

examined them, though they had transgressed no C H A P. law, and prohibited the inhabitants from enter- V.  
taining them under a penalty, whereupon they were turned out of their lodgings, but Luke 1654. Howard received them into his house, and heard them gladly. The mayor sent four constables, with an order, to take them from thence, and turn them out of the town; but Luke asserting his right, as a freeman of the corporation, refused to comply with the order, insisting, that the mayor had no legal authority to violate the laws of hospitality in his house, by forcing out his guests, who were no malefactors, nor accused of any crime. They tarried with him some days, and so confirmed him in the belief of their principles, that he publickly declared himself to be of their persuasion, and had meetings afterwards frequently at his house.

Soon after they came to Lidd, where by their ministry, in conjunction with that of Thomas Robertson and Ambrose Rigge, Samuel Fisher being convinced joined their society; he was a man of good abilities, having received a liberal education in his minority, and afterwards prosecuted his studies at the university—while there he was a young man remarkable for his circumspect and pious conversation. When he had finished his studies there he was ordained a priest, and was first a chaplain to some man of quality, and afterwards presented to the living at Lidd, worth two hundred pounds a year. Before he became acquainted with any of the people called Quakers, being conscientiously engaged in seeking after truth, he discovered that infant baptism was an human institution, and to preach for a stipend contrary to the command of Christ: And Luke Howard, before- L 2 mentioned,

Samuel  
Fisher con-  
vinced.

Account of  
him.

CHAP. mentioned, also, before he had any acquaintance  
V. with any of those called Quakers, being dissatisfied  
1654. in his mind with the singing of David's psalms in the public worship, gave his master, to whom he was apprentice, so much uneasiness, that he applied to Samuel Fisher, as a learned minister, to take an opportunity of a religious conference with him, in order to remove his scruples, with whose request complying, Luke was very open in declaring the reasons of his scruple, to the following purport: That God was a spirit, and to be worshipped, not in other men's words, but in spirit and in truth. That it was a falsehood for a proud man to sing, that "he was not puffed up in his mind; he had no scornful eye, and he did not exercise himself in things that were too high." That it was absurd for any man to sing, "Rivers of tears run down mine eyes, because other men keep not thy laws," whilst he never knew a true sorrow and repentance for "his own sins." The result of this conference was, that instead of removing Howard's scruples, these reasons of his had such a convincing effect on Samuel Fisher's mind, that he found himself restrained from giving out David's conditions to the people to sing any more. And at length his continuing to preach for wages, contrary to the inward conviction of his conscience, becoming a burden too grievous for him to bear, he gave a rare instance of the honesty of his heart, and the value he put upon the testimony of a good conscience, by resigning his living, and divesting himself of the facerdotal character, placing his confidence in Divine Providence for the future support of himself and his family. He rented a farm, and commenced grazier, by which he procured

cured a decent competency, enhanced by the <sup>V.</sup> CHAP. consolation of solid content, and the internal testimony of an approving heart.

Having discovered too great a mixture of human invention and tradition retained in the episcopal church, he withdrew from its communion, and joined the baptists, amongst whom he became an eminent teacher.

1654.

It was about this time that William Caton and John Stubbs came to Lydd, whom Samuel Fisher received into his house, remembering that scripture exhortation, *Be not forgetful to entertain strangers.* John Stubbs going to the baptists meeting where Fisher preached, and having gotten an opportunity to preach the gospel, according to the principles of his friends, he delivered his doctrine with a clearness and authority, whereby Samuel Fisher was so affected, that he soon after openly professed himself of this despised society, particularly on the following occasion: Hammond, his colleague in office, in a sermon uttering many bitter invectives against the Quakers, Samuel Fisher, incited by a more Christian temper, and a dispassionate regard to truth, thought his duty called upon him, in justice to his misinformed flock, and the injured Quakers, to bear his testimony in opposition to the calumnies of his colleague, but with the moderation and charity of a Christian, expressing himself in these terms, “ Dear brother, you are “ very dear and near to me, but the truth is “ dearer and nearer: It is the everlasting ~~truth~~ “ and gospel which they hold forth.” Which candid expressions drew one from Hammond, stamped with the mark of a very different spirit: “ Our brother Fisher is also bewitched.” But Samuel’s faith was not of that cast, which returned

CHAP. V.  
1654. turned reviling for reviling ; but in the sincerity  
of his heart having borne testimony to the truth,  
as held by the people called Quakers, he corro-  
borated it by joining with them in religious fel-  
lowship, and proved a very serviceable member,  
both by his gospel labours and his judicious  
writings.

Wm. Caton  
and John  
Stubbs of-  
fered mo-  
ney for  
preaching,  
which they  
refuse.

William Caton and John Stubbs continued their journey through Kent, where they met with many people religiously inclined, who readily embraced their doctrine ; and some of them being desirous to make them a pecuniary acknowledgment for their gospel labours, and being urgent with them to accept thereof, they acknowledging their good-will, but refusing their money, let them know it was not theirs but them which they sought.

Travelling on to Maidstone, John Stubbs went to the public place of worship then possessed by the Presbyterians, and William Caton to the meeting of the Independents. John Stubbs was taken from the worship-house and put into the stocks, and afterwards examined by the Recorder, to whom he rendered a good account of himself and of his estate, being sufficient to support himself and his family. Caton was next day taken from the inn, and also examined by the Recorder ; and they were both sent to the house of correction where they were searched, and their money, ink-horns and bibles, &c. taken from them. Afterwards they were stripped and their necks and arms put in the stocks, and were so cruelly whipped with cords as to draw tears from the spectators. After all this, endeavours were used to compel them to work, but in vain ; for as they were guilty of the breach of no law, they justly refused to comply

At Maid-  
stone they  
are sent to  
the house of  
correction,  
set in the  
stocks, and  
severely  
whipped.

ply with the unreasonable demand ; as their sub- C H A P.  
mitting thereto, being an agency in their own  
punishment, might imply guilt, from which they  
were free. Their persecutors, therefore, under  
the pretence that “ he that would not work  
“ should not eat,” kept them some days with-  
out victuals, allowing them only a little water  
once a day. Some of the malefactors imprisoned  
there, more compassionate than these ill-prin-  
cipated religionists, would have shared their bread  
with them, but they were not free to accept of  
it. But the report of their cruel treatment be-  
ing spread in the town, and producing compas-  
sion in many of the inhabitants, and discontent  
and aversion to this arbitrary severity, an officer  
was sent to restore them some of their prop-  
erty, which had been taken from them, and  
then they purchased victuals with their own mo-  
ney. Not long after they were separated, and  
sent away with a pass by the officers, like vag-  
bonds, being taken out at different ends of the  
town, and sent off by different ways. After-  
wards they met again at London, and had not  
been long there, till they apprehended it a duty  
required of them to return to Maidstone, to fulfil  
their ministry in that place and places adjacent.  
This, after their late severe sufferings there, was a  
very great trial to them ; but believing it to be a  
divine requiring, they gave up in resignation to  
the divine will, and through the providential  
ordering of that hand in which they trusted, or  
the sense the magistrates retained of the disrepu-  
tation brought upon them by their former cru-  
elty, they were suffered to discharge their duty  
and pass away unmolested. From thence they  
went to Canterbury, and at the meeting of the  
Baptists and Independents had liberty to publish  
their

Turned out  
of the town  
different  
ways.

They meet  
in London,  
and return  
to Maid-  
stone, where  
they dis-  
charge their  
service  
without  
molestation.

CHAP. their doctrine among them, whereby some being  
 V. convinced of the truth thereof received their  
 ~~~~~ testimony.

1654.

W<sup>r</sup> Caton and  
John Stubbs  
go to Scot-  
land.

In the latter end of this year and the beginning of the next they took their journey together to Scotland, and at Berwick<sup>h</sup> William Caton went to the public worship-house, and after the priest had concluded, had pretty good liberty to deliver what was on his mind ; but when he had done, was laid hold of and taken before the magistrates, who ordered him to be turned out of the town, which order was immediately executed. John Stubbs was that day at the Baptist's meeting, and had some service there. They travelled on to Edinburgh, where they found some disorders crept into the church through the unfaithfulness of some who had been convinced ; but, through the effectual influence of their ministry, better order was restored amongst them. From hence John Stubbs returned to England. William Caton stayed some time longer in Scotland, exercising his ministerial labours in sundry places to good purpose ; whereby, having discharged his service in this nation to the ease and clearness of his own mind, he returned to Swarthmore where he was received with much affection.

<sup>h</sup> Sewel, p. 105.

## C H A P. VI.

*Richard Hubberthorn, George Whitehead and James Lancaster imprisoned.—The two latter discharged.—George Whitehead violently assaulted by the Populace, and rescued by a Trooper.—Richard Clayton for fixing a Paper on the Steeple-house Door at Bures in Suffolk, is whipped and sent away with a Pass.—George Whitehead, John Harwood and George Rofe committed to Bury Gaol.—Indicted at the Assizes and fined.—Hardly used in Prison.—Released by order of Oliver Cromwell.—Account of James Parnell.—He travels through Huntingdonshire and Cambridgeshire into Essex.—His Sufferings.—His Trial.—The Judge prejudiced against him.—Used with great Cruelty in Prison.—Dies by his hard Treatment there.*

RICHARD HUBBERTHORN coming into C H A P. Norfolk, at Wymondham, feeling a Christian concern to exhort the congregation in the steeple-house there, after the priest had ended his sermon, was committed to Bridewell, and from thence the next day to Norwich castle, where he was lodged in a very incommodious prison, being a poor hole in a cross wall, and there detained till the time of the sessions. On his appearance there, the justices waving the original cause of his commitment, took occasion from his appearing before them with his hat on to charge him with a contempt of authority, and under that pretence recommitted him to prison, where he lay a long time after.

George

1654.

Richard  
Hubber-  
thorn in  
Norfolk,  
committed  
to prison.

C H A P.

VI.

1651  
Geo. & James  
Whitehead  
and Lancaster  
imprisoned.

George Whitehead also, believing a duty required of him to go to that called Peter's church in the city of Norwich, to bear such testimony as the Lord might give him, in endeavouring to discharge his duty, was haled out and much hurt, and from thence hurried to the Guildhall before the mayor, who examined him concerning water baptism and some other things, in hopes to get some answer from him which might furnish a more plausible pretext for committing him to prison than the occasion he had given by his Christian exhortation as above; but getting no advantage against him from his answers, he committed him to prison notwithstanding. James Lancaster, for calling the people to repentance in the market at Norwich, with one Christopher Atkinson, had been committed to the same prison a short time before, where not complying with the jailer's extravagant demands, they lay in their clothes on the floor for eight weeks in the cold winter, which was a great hardship, especially on George Whitehead, a youth of eighteen years of age, who had been tenderly educated by his parents.

Discharged. At the ensuing sessions for that city, George Whitehead and James Lancaster were discharged by the court, but still detained by the jailer under pretence of fees several weeks longer, till the jailer died, and his widow, of a more merciful disposition, set them at liberty.

Atkinson being of a rougher temper, for uttering some bitter expressions against his opposers, was detained longer in prison by actions laid against him by a priest and an attorney, and by giving way to heat and passion he fell from the tenderness of his first convincement, and ministered

ministered occasion to the adversaries to speak c H A P.  
reproachfully. VI.

Not long after this Thomas Symonds, for asking a priest a serious question respecting his doctrine, was committed to Norwich castle; and George Whitehead going to visit him and another of his friends under confinement, was by order of the mayor detained there about three weeks, without any cause but the arbitrary will of the magistrate. These repeated instances of despotic rule in men professing a sacred regard to religious liberty, and under colour of procuring which, they had not hesitated to plunge the nation into all the miseries of a civil war, have furnished the opposite party, not without much plausibility, with occasion to bring under suspicion the sincerity of their pretensions: That under the pretext of redressing grievances, they meant only to wrest the sceptre out of the hand that bore it, to wield it with equal or superior severity over those, who were not of their own sentiments in their religious as well as political creed.

Amongst numbers who were convinced in those parts by these able ministers of the gospel, Richard Hubberthorn and George Whitehead, was Captain John Laurence, (and most of his family) who having been a member of some consequence, of an independent congregation at Norwich, was summoned to their meeting in the parish church, called George's of Tombland, to answer their charge against him for leaving their communion; and he being disposed to appear was accompanied by George Whitehead. The charge against him was in effect, His forsaking their church or communion; his entertaining strangers or persons dangerous; and holding dangerous

1654.

Thomas  
Symonds  
imprisoned,  
and George  
Whitehead  
visiting him  
is detained.

John Lau-  
rence being  
convinced  
is summoned  
to a  
meeting of  
the inde-  
pendents for  
leaving  
their com-  
munion.

**C H A P VI.** dangerous doctrines. To the first he answered, That in his forsaking their communion he had followed the apostle's advice, Tim. ii. 3. "Having the form of godliness, but denying the power, from such turn away."

**G. Whitehead attempting to exhort the people is violently assaulted by the rabble,** After <sup>a</sup> John Laurence had given his reason for leaving them, they proceeded to excommunicate him; and a great concourse of people being gathered upon the occasion, George Whitehead felt a lively concern animating his mind to deliver a brief exhortation among them; but had scarce stood up, when he was pulled down, and held down by force, till some of their church haled and pulled him out of the steeple-house, and exposed him to a rude multitude, prepared for violence and mischief, from whom he received much gross abuse, being dragged along the street, frequently thrown down on the stones, and thereby grievously hurt and bruised. Thus dragged out of the city, he came near a great house belonging to a lady Hubbard, her chaplain coming out to see the occasion of the tumult entered into discourse with George Whitehead; and during their discourse the mob, who seemed intent upon further mischief, stood round them in a ring to hear what passed. In the mean time a trooper coming up, and seeing how he was beset, kindly offered him his assistance, and rescued him from their hands: for laying his hand on his sword, and commanding the mob to give way, he conducted him safely to his quarters at Thomas Symonds's house in the city. This trooper, whose name was Robert Turner, was afterwards convinced, and joined the society of the people called Quakers, residing at Lynn in Norfolk.

**and rescued by a trooper.**

Richard

<sup>a</sup> George Whitehead's Journal, p. 54, 57.

Richard Hubberthorn <sup>b</sup> being still detained a CHAP. VI.  
 prisoner in Norwich castle, George Whitehead continued moving about, and attending meetings in Norfolk and Suffolk, sometimes alone, sometimes accompanied by Richard Clayton and others. After Richard Hubberthorn was set at liberty they joined again as companions in gospel fellowship, and had several large and comfortable meetings together. In several of these meetings they were interrupted by opposition from some of the preachers of other societies; and by moderate enquiries for the clearer understanding of their doctrine from others; and were endued with wisdom and recollection of scriptures to answer the objections of the former, and satisfy the enquiries of the latter; whereby two of them, Richard Townfend, and John Burch, a preacher among the baptists, were so far affected by their instructive remarks in the explanation of their doctrines, that after a season of serious consideration they were both convinced of the truth thereof, joined in society with friends, and in process of time became serviceable members and ministers among them.

<sup>c</sup> On the 30th of the month called July 1655, R. Clayton fixes a paper on the steeple-house door at Buers. Richard Clayton passing through Buers, a town in Suffolk, the said Richard Clayton did fix a paper on the door of the Steeple-house there, being as follows, viz.

“ If you do set up such ministers as seek for  
 “ their gain from their quarter, you set up such  
 “ as the prophet Isaiah disapproves of, Isa. lvi.  
 “ 11. And you that do set up such as bear  
 “ rule by their means, you set up such as the  
 “ prophet

<sup>b</sup> George Whitchead's Journal, p. 60, 62.

<sup>c</sup> Ibid.

C H A P. VI. prophet Jeremiah and the Lord disapprove,  
 1655. " Jer. iv. And you that set up such as seek for  
 " wool and make a prey upon the people, you  
 " set up such as the prophet Ezekiel disapproves  
 " of, Ez. xxxiv. And you that set up hire-  
 " lings, you set up such as Micah disapproves  
 " of, Micah iii. And you that set up such as  
 " are called of men *master*, stand praying in  
 " the synagogues, have the chiefest places in the  
 " assemblies, you set up such as Christ disap-  
 " proves." Mat. vi and xxiii. With fundry  
 other quotations from scripture.

G. White-  
head, J.  
Harwood  
and R.  
Clayton  
taken up.

Clayton  
whipped  
and sent a-  
way with  
a pass; the  
others im-  
prisoned.

G. Rose im-  
prisoned.

This paper being stuck up<sup>d</sup>, some people came together to read it, to whom George Whitehead and John Harwood gave a Christian exhortation *to live in the fear of the Lord, and to turn from the evil of their ways, &c.* While they were speaking a constable came and carried them before Herbert Pelham, an Essex justice, then at Bures, who examined them, though officially, being out of his precinct, and then sent them, together with Clayton, to Thomas Waldgrave, a justice at Smallbridge, who having asked them a few Questions, left them in the custody of the constable till Pelham and he had laid their heads together. The issue of their consultation was, that Richard Clayton, by Waldgrave's order, was whipped publicly as a vagabond, and sent out of the town the same day with a pass; a proceeding not justifiable by law, Clayton being a man of reputation, and known to have a competent estate. John Harwood was the next day sent to Edmundsbury gaol, and George Whitehead the day following; and a few weeks after George Rose was sent to the

<sup>d</sup> George Whithead's Journal, p. 67, 68.

the same prison by justice Gurdon with a mittimus assigning no breach of law nor any matter of fact, nor indeed had he given any just occasion of offence, except his asking a question of the priest of Stoke after his sermon, at which the priest was displeased, and the justice to avenge the parson's quarrel, took this extrajudicial course to send the poor man to prison.

C H A P.  
VI.

1655.

At the next quarter sessions <sup>c</sup> Whitehead, Harwood and George Rofe, were indicted as common disturbers of the magistrates and ministers. The justices who committed them were their sole accusers, and incensed against them; and an ignorant jury being empanneled, by direction of the court presently found them guilty; whereupon they were fined twenty nobles each, and recommitted to prison till payment. George Fox of Chasfield, commonly called George Fox the younger, to distinguish him from the other of that name, being present at the trial, and observing the prejudice expressed by justice Gurdon against the prisoners, said to him, as he was coming out of the sessions house, *Repent of thy unjust actions this day, for otherwise thou canst not escape the just judgment of God.* Upon this Gurdon laid hold on him, and had him before the bench, who demanded sureties till the next sessions, which he not complying with, they sent him to prison with the others.

On the 22d of November Henry Marshal, for speaking a few words to a priest after his sermon was ended, was, by order of justice Gurdon, first set in the stocks, and then sent to Edmundsbury jail. At the next sessions he was fined twenty marks, and remanded to prison.

At

<sup>c</sup> George Whitehead's Journal, p. 69, 70.

**C H A P.** At the same sessions George Fox was called, but  
 VI. no indictment laid against him; yet the court  
 sent him back to prison.  
 1655.

Their hard usage in prison. The usage of these five prisoners was very hard: Because they would not gratify the jailer's avarice in paying him the price he demanded for their lodging, but demanded a free prison, not knowing how long their imprisonment might continue, he turned them down to the common ward among the felons, in a low dungeon with a damp earthen floor, where they lay upon rye-straw; because they declined advancing his gains by buying his strong liquors, against the use of which they had a conscientious scruple; because they bore their testimony against the drunkenness, swearing, and other disorders in his house; and because they reproved him for his hypocrisy, who, while he suffered, and for his gain promoted these disorders, made high pretensions to religion; and on the day called Sunday would summon his prisoners together, pretend to give them instruction, and exercise a kind of devotion among them: for which inconsistency of conduct, and fruits so opposite to religion, being charged with hypocrisy, his daughter exclaimed, '*What! do you call my father a hypocrite, who hath been a saint these forty years!*' But it was such faintship as his which brought too much of the religion of this age into disrepute. For these causes he was exceedingly embittered against them, so as often to strike them on the face, and grievously abuse them various ways, both by words and blows. His servants also, and some of the drunken prisoners, encouraged by his example, were often exceedingly

<sup>f</sup> George Whitehead's Journal, p. 80, 81.

exceedingly abusive to them, by their expressions and mischievous actions; the prisoners frequently took away their food and other necessaries, alledging the jailer gave them leave so to do; and one more desperately wicked than the rest frequently kicked and smote them, and threatened in a drunken fit to kill them, saying, *If he killed them he should not be hanged for it.*

C H A P.  
VI

1655.

It was, as hath been remarked, because they would not take rooms from him at his price, but demanded a free prison, that they were thrust into the common ward among felons, and grossly abused there by the jailer's connivance, if not instigation: Yet even here they could not obtain a free prison; for after they had been in prison about thirty weeks, he demanded arrears of dues for fourteen pence a week from each of them, which they, who were obliged to buy even the straw they lay upon, remonstrating against as an unreasonable demand, he ordered the turnkey to *take away their bed-clothes and boxes, which was done;* and he threatened to *take their coats from off their backs.* Their bed-clothes being taken away, they were obliged to lie in part of their body-clothes upon straw for the space of twenty-four weeks<sup>f</sup>.

When a woman friend brought them some necessaries of linen, &c. to replace what had been taken from them, the jailer caused them to be seized. When provisions were brought them, they were examined before they would be suffered to be delivered. One time being enraged at their constant testimony against the drunkenness, swearing, and other gross disorders abounding in the jail through his self-interested con-

VOL. I.

M

nivance,

<sup>f</sup> George Whitehead's Journal, p. 82, 83, 85.

CHAP. nivance, the jailer caused them to be put down  
 VI. into a dark dismal dungeon, in which was a dan-  
 1655. gerous deep pit. When their friends came to  
 visit them, they would not be permitted; and if  
 they endeavoured to speak to them at the win-  
 dow or door of the jail, they had frequently wa-  
 ter thrown upon them to drive them away.

Enquiry in-  
 to their  
 hard treat-  
 ment, or-  
 dered by  
 Oliver  
 Cromwel,  
 &c,

At length an account of their hard usage was sent to some of their friends in London<sup>s</sup>, upon which they made application to the Protector and his deputy Fleetwood, representing the inhuman treatment they had received: And an order was sent down to have the matters of fact complained of examined into by four justices; who hearing their complaints in the jailer's presence, which he could not gainsay, some of them blamed the jailer, and charged him not to suffer his servants to abuse them, for if they did they would send them to Ipswich jail.

After this examination they met with better treatment: the jailer, although exasperated at their exposing of his cruelty, was restrained, through fear, from exercising himself, or suffering his servants or prisoners to exercise cruel abuse toward them, as hitherto he had done; and therefore afterwards, when provoked, contented himself with calling them ill names. But one of the justices, named *John Clark*, being the jailer's neighbour, and a fellow member of the same community, in favour of his reputation, and that of his religious profession, seemed to discover a manifest partiality to his side, endeavouring as much as he could to palliate or extenuate the jailer's misconduct; so that from his behaviour through the whole examination,

<sup>s</sup> George Whitehead's Journal, p. 84, 85, 91, 92.

mination, they conceived little hope of a full and c H A P. impartial account's being returned to the pro- VI  
tector by them ; or that their release would follow the justice's representation, which it did not for some time.

1656.

But the report of their barbarous treatment, and of the hardships which they endured, spreading abroad, again reached their friends in London, which caused them to be more solicitously concerned for their relief, and to redouble their efforts to effect it by repeated applications to Oliver Cromwell ; which being seconded by the private applications of Mary Sanders, (afterwards Mary Stout) a waiting gentlewoman in Cromwell's family, and one of the people called Quakers, whose prudent and exemplary conduct had gained her a respectful esteem in that family ; their joined solicitations at last procured the following order for their release, after an imprisonment from twelve to fifteen months<sup>h</sup>.

“ Thursday the 16th of October, at the Council  
“ at Whitehall.

“ Ordered, by his Highness the Lord Pro- Order for  
“ tector, and the Council, that the Quakers im- their re-  
“ prisoned at Colchester in the county of Essex, leafe.  
“ and Edmundsbury and Ipswich in the county of  
“ Suffolk, be forthwith released and set at liber-  
“ ty. And it is referred to Sir Francis Russell to  
“ take care that the same be done accordingly ;  
“ as also to consider how the fines set upon them,  
“ or any of them, (if any) may with most con-  
“ veniency be taken off and discharged ; and  
“ likewise to take order, that upon their being  
M 2 “ set

<sup>h</sup> George Whitehead's Journal, p. 93, 94.

CHAP. VI. "set at liberty they be forthwith sent to their  
 ~~ own homes.

1656.

"W. Jeffop, Clerk of the Council."

Pursuant to this order Sir *Francis Russell*, who was a moderate man, and averse to persecution, caused them immediately to be set at full liberty, without any restriction as to returning home, leaving them at liberty to travel whithersoever the persuasion of duty or inclination might prompt them.

George Whitehead adds that in all their hard personal sufferings they were favoured with peace and consolation in the inward sense of divine support, bearing up their spirits and strengthening their faith, and preserving their bodily health; under the feeling whereof, in their afflictions, they were frequently made to sing praises to his holy name, who thus preserved them, to the astonishment of their fellow prisoners<sup>i</sup>.

Account of  
James Par-  
nel.

In the beginning of this year James Parnel, who hath been already mentioned to have been convinced in a conference with George Fox, during his imprisonment in the dungeon at Carlisle, travelled southward also, labouring in the ministry of the gospel, and the propagation of those doctrines he received as truth; for which service he was eminently qualified, although but a youth of about eighteen years of age. He was born at Retford in Nottinghamshire, and had the advantage of a good education, in the schools of literature<sup>k</sup>. He was convinced of the truth of the principles of the people called Quakers, and joined them in society as early as the sixteenth year

<sup>i</sup> George Whitehead's Journal, p. 95, 96.  
 p. 106.

<sup>k</sup> Sewel,

year of his age, and for that reason was despised C H A P. and rejected by his relations. Being low of VI. stature, his bodily presence appeared contemptible, which increased the admiration of his excellent mental qualities, in those who could view him through the medium of cool judgment, divested of envy and prejudice; for in the person of the apparently despicable lad, were concealed the wisdom and understanding of age and experience, the affecting preacher, and able disputant; being always ready to give a reason of the hope that was in him, and maintained the doctrines which he preached against their opposers. In qualifications for the ministry he seemed behind few of his fellow labourers; in suffering for his testimony he experienced even greater severity and inhumanity.

He took his journey through Huntingdonshire and the Isle of Ely into Cambridgeshire, preaching the gospel and disputing with opposers. At Cambridge, for publishing a declaration against corrupt ministers and corrupt magistrates, he was imprisoned, and detained in prison over two sessions, and afterwards turned out of the town as a vagabond. He soon after returned, and disputed with the scholars of the university, from whom he met with very rude and cruel treatment. He thence prosecuted his journey into Essex (being the first called a Quaker who preached the gospel in that county.) At Stebbing, Felted, Witham, Coggeshall and Halsted, and other places, he preached with remarkable effect, many by his ministry being convinced of the truth of his doctrine. About the middle of summer he came to Colchester, and on the first day of the week preached to a large number of people, first at his lodging, then at the Travels through Huntingdonshire and Cambridgeshire into Essex.

CHAP. the public place of worship ; next in a great meeting appointed on purpose. After that he disputed with the tow...lecturer and another priest in the French school, all in one day ; in which labours the wisdom and patience of the true Christian manifestly appearing, a considerable convincement was the fruit of his incessant labour. Among the rest, Stephen Crisp, a man of good parts, coming to discourse or dispute with him at his lodging, and James appearing at first sight a mere boy, he viewed him with a contemptuous eye ; but upon entering into discourse with him, the awful frame of his spirit, the weight and conciseness of his expressions fixed so deep an impression on the mind of Stephen Crisp, that he was effectually convinced, and became himself an eminent publisher of the same doctrines. James Parnel spent the rest of that week there in preaching, exhorting and disputing to the convincement of many more ; while others were provoked to such a degree of rage, as often to reward with blows his fervent zeal for their reformation. In particular, as he was coming out of Nicholas's Steeple-house in that town, he was met by a blind zealot, who struck him a violent blow with a great staff, saying, "Take that for Christ's sake ;" to whom this innocent sufferer meekly replied, "Friend, "I do receive it for Jesus Christ's sake." From thence he went to Coggeshall, where the independent professors had appointed a \* fast on purpose

\* It was no unusual thing for the professors of those days to appoint public fasts, and days of humiliation, frequently on no very important occasions ; but by their fruits they too often manifested their humiliation to be but voluntary humility, their praying will-worship, and their fasting the fast of the

pose to pray against the spreading of error, by c H A P. VI.  
which they meant the doctrine of the people called Quakers. The priest who officiated on the occasion had prepared a sermon, replete with the common-place invectives against that people, the fruit of prejudice and prepossession. James Parnel being present, esteemed it his duty to vindicate himself and brethren against his opprobrious misrepresentations ; but stood still till the priest was coming out of the pulpit, he then began with these words : *This is the order of the true church, that all may speak one by one ; and if any thing be revealed to him that stands by, let the first hold his peace.* Then proceeding in his vindication of the Quakers (so called) in reply to an assertion of the priest, that they were on a sandy foundation, he signified, *I am ready to prove that the Quakers are not on a sandy foundation, and that thou art a false prophet and a deceiver.* After some words had passed, a person standing by accused Parnel, that he owned no church :

He

the hypocrite. The day of humiliation giving no interruption to the pursuit of their ambitious views ; their praying, performed in an unforgiving spirit, discovered in their vindictive disposition to all that opposed them, or thwarted their measures ; and their fasting to be seen of men : on many other occasions as well as this proving them proper objects of the severe reprobation of the prophet Isaiah, delivered in the name of the Almighty to the Jews, “ Behold, ye fast for “ strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness ; “ ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to “ be heard on high. Is it such a fast as I have chosen, a “ day for a man to afflict his soul ? Is it to bow down his “ head as a bulrush, and spread sackcloth and ashes under “ him ? Wilt thou call this a fast or an acceptable day to “ the Lord ? Is not this the fast that I have chosen : to “ loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, “ to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every “ yoke ? ” Isaiah, lviii. 4, 5 and 6.

CHAP. VI.  
1656.

He replied, *That's false*: Being asked, what church he owned, he answered, *the church in God*. Whereupon the priest said, *that was nonsense*: Parnel taking a bible out of his pocket shewed it was a scriptural expression, and charged the priest with blasphemy in calling it nonsense.

*His sufferings.* Upon his coming out of the Steeple-house he was apprehended and brought before four justices. After examination he was committed to Colchester Castle, where he was closely confined. And at the time of the ensuing assizes at Chelmsford, he was fastened to a chain with felons and murderers, and so led above twenty miles through the country, remaining chained both day and night.

*His trial.* At his trial he was brought to the bar handcuffed, but the people exclaiming against that barbarity, at his next appearance his manacles were taken off. The accusations brought against him were, That in a riotous manner he did enter into the parish church of Great Coggeshall, that he there did stand and told the minister *he blasphemed and spoke falsely, using many other reproachful words against him*: *And that he could not give a good account where he was last settled, or of his life or conversation, appearing to be an idle person*. He was also accused *with contempt of the magistracy and ministry*. In his defence he alledged, *That he entered the Steeple-house in no riotous manner; but came thither perfectly quiet and alone without any disturbance*: *That he had told the priest he blasphemed in saying the church in God was nonsense he denied not; but did not own himself a vagabond or idle person*. *And he did not think it either criminal or indecent to call an unjust judge unrighteous, a persecutor persecutor, or a deceiver deceiver*.

The

The judge seemed to be predetermined against him, saying, the Lord Protector had charged him to punish such persons as should contemn either magistrates or ministers; and in his charge to the jury he directed them to bring him in guilty. After consultation, the jury found nothing to lay to his charge but a book or paper, entitled The Fruits of a Fast, in which he had answered the justice's mittimus, in purport agreeing with the accusation before recited; and wherein he exposed the errors and inconsistency of the charge against him, justified the peaceableness of his own demeanour, and gave a solid account of the work of divine grace upon his soul, and of the necessity laid upon him to testify against the formalities and will-worship of human invention; and this writing he had owned to be his. But being indicted for a riot, they found themselves under a difficulty to agree in their verdict. The judge and the clerk strove to wrest some expressions for their purpose from the foreman, which the others did not consent to, and himself was unwilling to answer their questions fully. James Parnel was then made to withdraw, and being called in again, the judge fined him 40l. for contempt of the magistracy and ministry, and re-committed him to the same prison till he should pay the fine. And the jailer was ordered not to admit any *giddy-headed people*, by whom were meant his friends, to have access to him.

His persecutors, who by their past treatment discovered a disposition of malicious cruelty, having thus far carried their point in obtaining a sentence against him, whereby they had him entirely in their power, lead us to open a scene, which (when we contemplate the innocence, meekness and patience of the sufferer on one hand,

C H A P.  
VI.1650.  
The Judge  
prejudiced  
against  
him.

CHAP. VI.  
1656.

hand, and the persevering insatiable cruelty of his enemies on the other) is sufficient to raise commiseration in every breast less obdurate than theirs.

Used with  
great cru-  
elty in pri-  
son.

The jailer, cruel in his own disposition, or inured to cruelty by his office, punctually observed the orders he had received; for he would suffer none to come near him but such as came to abuse him; and the jailer's wife, equally cruel, not only ordered her servant to beat him, but struck him with her own hands, swearing she would have his blood<sup>1</sup>. When his friends sent him victuals, she ordered the other prisoners to take them; and when a bed was sent him, she refused him the use of it, but obliged him to lodge on the hard damp stones. After this he was put into a hole in the castle wall, not so wide as some baker's ovens, which hole was a great height from the ground; and the ladder placed for the purpose of going up to it, being several feet too short, he was obliged to climb up and slide down by a rope to fetch his victuals and other necessaries; for when his friends would have given him a cord and basket to draw up his food by, the savage keeper would not suffer it. By lying long in that damp hole his limbs grew greatly benumbed, so that as he was once going up the ladder with his food in one hand, attempting to catch the rope with the other, he missed his aim and fell down on the stones, whereby he received such contusions in his head and body that he was taken up for dead<sup>m</sup>. After this he was put into a hole underneath the other, there being two stories of such narrow vaulted holes in the wall. In this, while the door was shut,

<sup>1</sup> Sewel, p. 108.      <sup>m</sup> Ibid. and Besse, v. i. p. 193.

shut, was scarce any air, there being no other aperture to admit it. Thus bruised with his fall, and shut up where he could hardly breathe, his life appeared in imminent danger; whereupon two of his friends, William Talcot and Edward Grant, wealthy tradesmen of the town, offered to be bound in sufficient bonds, and Thomas Shortland, another of his friends, offered to lie in prison in his stead, so that he might have liberty to go to William Talcot's house till he might recover of his bruises; but this was denied. Nay, so great was the inhumanity and inexorable malice of his persecutors, that when they were requested only to grant him the common privilege of the other prisoners, liberty to walk sometimes in the yard, they would not grant it by any means. It happened once that the door being open, he went out of the hole into a narrow yard between two walls, at which the brutal keeper was so enraged, that he locked up the door and shut him out in the yard all night, in the extremity of winter. His tender constitution, unable to support such severe shocks, Dies by his hard treatment. sunk under the multiplied hardships of his unmerited imprisonment, and after ten or eleven months he fell sick and died. Two of his friends, Thomas Shortland and Ann Langley, were present at his departure. When death appeared, he said, *Here I die innocently*; and a little after, turning his head to Thomas, *This death I must die, Thomas, I have seen great things, don't hold me, but let me go.* He had repeatedly said one hours sleep would cure him of all. His last audible words were, *Now I go*; and then stretched himself out and breathed his last. Though His character. he finished his course in his youth, dying about the age of nineteen, he had approved himself a strong

CHAP. strong man in Christ, and having an eye to the  
VI.  
1656. eternal recompence of reward, was preserved in  
faithfulness to the end, through manifold suffe-  
rings, with remarkable innocence, patience and  
magnanimity. The mere consideration of the  
youth of real offenders hath not uncommonly  
excited commiseration, even towards such as  
have been guilty of flagrant enormities, and pro-  
cured a mitigation of their punishment or pardon  
of their crimes. But the relentless obduracy of  
his persecutors seems to have been proof against  
every incentive to sensations of compassion or  
humanity; no regard to the tenderness of his  
youth, to the innocence of his demeanour; to  
the solicitations of his friends, or to the danger  
of his dying under their hands, could prevail  
upon them to relax of their rigorous treatment  
in the least degree. And instead of repenting of  
their cruelty, the apparent cause of his death,  
they seemed to continue it even beyond the grave;  
for they raised a slanderous report, that he was  
the occasion of his own death, by wilfully re-  
fraining from food, which, whether it originated  
in the remains of that malicious disposition, the  
effect of which he so severely felt, or from con-  
viction of guilt to palliate the infamy of their  
unmerciful usage, was proved absolutely untrue  
by the testimony of credible witnesses, who were  
frequently with him during his sickness; and to  
whom that groundless calumny was a clear indica-  
tion of the deep rooted malice or criminal po-  
lity that invented it.

## C H A P. VII.

*Sufferings of William Dewsbury.—Imprisonment of him and Joseph Storr.—Examination before the Judges Hale and Windham.—Imprisonment of John Whitehead and Marmaduke Storr.—Second Examination before Judge Atkins, and Recommitment.—Released by Order from Oliver Cromwell.—Thomas Stubbs imprisoned.—Committed to Bridewell and whipped.—Edward Burroughs writes to the Protector.—Reflections on Cromwell's Conduct in regard to the People called Quakers.—Account of John Lilburn: 1. Prosecuted in the Star Chamber, and put in the Pillory. 2. Prosecuted by the Long Parliament, and acquitted. 3. Prosecuted by Cromwell, acquitted, but detained in Prison.—In Dover Castle he is convinced of the Principles of the People called Quakers.—Anne Downer committed to the House of Correction and whipped.—Miles Halhead and Thomas Salthouse taken up and passed as Vagrants.—An angry Priest procures their Imprisonment.—Their Examination.—Committed to Exeter Jail.—Indictment at Sessions.—Cruel Usage of Margaret Kellam.*

So epidemical was the causeless inveteracy  
against this people; so general the persecution  
under which they suffered, that we scarce meet  
with one person, whose travels and services are  
preserved on record, who escaped personal abuse  
or cruel imprisonment in any quarter of the na-  
tion.

C H A P.  
VII.  
1656.

**C H A P. t i o n.** VII. William Dewsbury about this time travelling in Northamptonshire, came to Wellingborough, where as he was passing along the street, the priest Thomas Andrews called out to him “ Give over deceiving the people, lest the <sup>1656.</sup> ~~Suffering of~~ <sup>Wm. Dewsbury.</sup> “ plagues of God fall upon thee<sup>a</sup>;” to whom William replied, “ Dost thou say I deceive the “ people? make it appear wherein I deceive “ them<sup>b</sup>.” Andrews answered, “ Thou tellest “ them there is no original sin;” to which William Dewsbury rejoined, “ Didst thou hear me “ say any such words?” upon which the priest went away. William being thus in public charged by the priest as a deceiver, thought himself called upon, in vindication of his own character, and that of the society, to bring the priest to the proof of his charge or public acknowledgment of the truth: For that purpose he went soon after to the Steeple-house, and waiting till the people were dismissed, he spake to them, who gave attention to his exhortation. Then addressing himself to the priest, he said, “ Thou hast accused me of deceiving the peo-“ ple; prove thy accusation before this audi-“ ence, or acknowledge the falsehood of it.” But the priest without giving an answer went away: And William was haled out of the worship-house into the yard, where he preached to the people again, who stood quietly to hear him, till the high constable came, and laying hold of him led him to the market place, saying he would bring evidence against him for blasphemy. After a short time he was let go, and lodged at a friend’s house that night; but next day a constable apprehended him with a warrant, granted against

<sup>a</sup> Sewel, p. 119.

<sup>b</sup> Besse, v. i. p. 518.

against the Quaker, without mentioning his name, <sup>C H A P.</sup>  
 and took him before a justice, who committed <sup>VII.</sup>  
 him to Northampton jail by a mittimus, which  
 was said to contain a charge of *blasphemy*; where-  
 fore William solicited for a copy of it; but his  
 request, though just and reasonable, *was not*  
 granted.

By the same mittimus Joseph Storr, who only <sup>Imprison-</sup>  
 came to hear his friend's examination, and <sup>ment of</sup>  
 against whom there was no accusation, was sent <sup>him and</sup>  
 to prison along with him: So arbitrary were the <sup>Joseph</sup>  
 proceedings of those magistrates, under a go-  
 vernment professedly set up for dispensing univer-  
 sal liberty. They were imprisoned in a dungeon,  
 twelve steps under ground, among felons, till  
 the ensuing quarter sessions, at which they were  
 brought before the bench of justices, where their  
 mittimus was read: a copy of it again requested  
 and refused.

No cognizance was taken of their cause, but  
 they were remanded to prison, to lie there till the  
 next assizes. At which they were brought before <sup>Examina-</sup>  
 the judges Hale and Windham, and after a long <sup>tion before</sup>  
 examination, in which nothing criminal was made <sup>the judges,</sup>  
 out against them, they were offered their liberty, on <sup>Hale and</sup>  
 condition of giving bail for their good behaviour,  
 and also for their appearance at the next assizes;  
 which proposal they were unwilling to comply  
 with, as an unreasonable demand from them who  
 had given no just occasion for it, being neither  
 convicted nor guilty of ill behaviour<sup>c</sup>. They were <sup>Returned to</sup>  
 recommitted to the same filthy dungeon, amongst <sup>prison.</sup>  
 the felons as before, till another assize. In the  
 mean time several other of their friends were sent  
 to bear them company in prison in the like arbit-  
<sup>rary</sup>

<sup>c</sup> Besse, v. i. p. 519.

**C H A P.** <sup>VII.</sup> **trary manner, viz. John Whitehead, Mar-**  
**duke Storr, and Francis Ellington.**

**1656.**  
**Imprison-**  
**ment of**  
**John**  
**Whitehead**  
**and Mar-**  
**maduke**  
**Storr.**

John Whitehead going into the Steeple-house at Wellingborough, and waiting quietly till the public worship was ended, asked the priest some questions about his doctrine and practice, to which he made no answer, but in contempt called him madman, and went away: But the people generally staying, were soon convinced he was not mad; for his powerful preaching and rational discourse impressed very different sentiments of him on their minds, procuring their assent to the soundness of his doctrine and his understanding. Intelligence of this being carried to the priest, irritated him to challenge John to a dispute; but the issue mortified him still more, because he missed his aim, which was to get some matter of complaint to the magistrates. He next wanted John to meet him before a persecuting justice to settle the dispute; but he avoided this open snare, signifying to the priest that he must appoint some other place. He then sent him notice to meet him at a public lecture, which he accordingly did; and there being several other ministers and many people present, he waited quietly till their service was over: Then he proposed a question to the preachers, which they refused to answer; and Andrews, the priest, who had challenged him to dispute, instead of entering into the discussion of their differing religious sentiments, launched out into personal invectives and accusations against John Whitehead, who was not at a loss to vindicate his character by plain truth, to the conviction of many of the people. The priests seeing themselves not like to compass their design by these means had recourse to their last argument. By-field,

field, priest of Torrington, having laid violent hands on John, and dragged him by force out of the Steeple-houſe; a warrant was procured to apprehend him as a vagrant, and he was carried before two justices, convened for that purpose. In contradiction to the charge, he insisted he was no vagrant, that he could prove his habitation and manner of living by one of his neighbours, a ſubſtantial man, if they would admit him to come in. Upon this Marmaduke Storr was called, who informed them of the place of John's residence, and that he had a wife and family, whom he maintained reputably<sup>a</sup>.

Then they asked Marmaduke his name and place of abode, and what was his buſineſſ in thoſe parts? He gave them full ſatisfaction in these points: that his reſidence was in Holderneſſ, and his occupation that of a grazier; that his buſineſſ there was to viſit, and be an aſſistant to his brother Joseph Storr, priſoner at Northamptōn; and that from thence he propoſed to proceed into Staffordshire to renew the leaſe of his farm near expirīng. The account he gave both of himſelf and his neighbour was ſo unexceptionable that the juſtices were at a ſtand, and after ſome conſultation with the priеfts, dropt the pretenſe of vagrancy, and determined to enſnare them both another way. They asked Marmaduke if he would confirm his testimony upon oath, and finding that he would not, they tendered them both the oath of abjuration. They anſwered, that they had ſufficiently demonstrated their good affection to the commonwealtheſt, in aſſiſting it with their perſons and eſtates in times

**C H A P.** of its greatest straits, that they were well known  
 VII.  
 1655. to be no papists, but that they could not swear  
 for conscience-sake. They then required sure-  
 ties of them for their good behaviour, and upon  
 their refusal they were committed to prison,  
 whereby M. Storr was prevented from getting his  
 lease renewed ; so that his family were constrain-  
 ed to remove, and carry off his stock at a day's  
 notice, to his great detriment. And these, as  
 well as the former, were detained in prison till the  
 ensuing assizes, <sup>c</sup> in the month called July, 1655,

**2. Examina-**  
**nation be-**  
**fore Judge**  
**Atkins.** when they were all brought before Edward  
 Atkins, Judge of Assize, before whom they pas-  
 sed under a long examination, for it cannot be  
 properly termed a trial, there being nothing  
 against them to found an indictment upon, nor  
 any living witness produced only an information  
 exhibited by the Clerk, that W. Dewsbury, came  
 into the church of Wellingborough, and stood  
 there during the time of sermon and prayers with  
 his hat on : and after the Minister had done, he  
 spoke these words “ the Priests preach for hire,  
 and my people love to have it so, and what will  
 you do in the end thereof,” with other railing  
 words, which made disturbance among the peo-  
 ple. In his vindication Dewsbury related the  
 matter of fact as specified before.

The Judge after examination of him and his  
 fellow-prisoners, finding the allegations against  
 them too frivolous for his attention, express his  
 displeasure at being troubled therewith ; and al-  
 tho' he conducted himself towards them with a  
 degree of temper and moderation beyond some  
 others, yet he left them where he found them,  
 that is, recommitted them till the next assizes,  
 upon

**Committed  
 to prison  
 again.**

upon their refusal to put in bail for their appearance there\*. C H A P. VII.

During 1655.

\* Their trial or examinations at large, would take up more room than I can conveniently spare, and therefore refer those who may desire further information to Besse's Sufferings, vol. i. p. 518, &c. from whence this account is abstracted. The examination, however, of Francis Ellington, discovering the measure of justice dispensed to them all, will serve as a specimen of the rest :

*Judge.* Which is Ellington? *F. E.* I am so called. *Judge.* What are you here for? *F. E.* I was in bonds 15 weeks for my appearance at the general sessions, and when I appeared, no accuser or evidence appeared against me; I was convicted of the breach of no law, yet those called Justices committed me to gaol, where I have been kept in the dungeon these 13 weeks, among those arraigned for felony and murder; being taken from my outward habitation at Wellingborough, from my outward calling, and from my wife and five small children: and here am deprived of the benefit of the law of this nation, which no felon or murderer that is here is deprived of, for they have liberty to speak for themselves, and to have a fair trial, which is denied to us. *Judge, to the Clerk of the peace.* Where is your evidence against these men? *Clerk.* This Ellington is a receiver of these men, and here is a letter he writ to a Justice of Peace, wherein he accuseth him of injustice in committing Dewsbury and Storr to prison. *Judge.* Why do you trouble me with that which there is no matter of fact in? I much wonder you should trouble a Judge of Assize with such small things, and not end them in your own sessions, for we come hither to determine greater matters. Mr. Ellington, I have a great love for you, being a man that lives in this country: Will you enter into bond for your good behaviour, and to appear at the next assizes? *F. E.* I am of no evil behaviour, neither to this day hath any thing been proved against me, and if it can yet be proved by any one man here, that I have been of evil behaviour, or have broken any law of this nation, I am present to answer it, and give bonds for my liberty. *Judge.* You have transgressed the law, in that you come to the bar with your heads covered, because it is a contempt of authority. *F. E.* There is no law in this nation requires any such thing as putting off the hat; if there be any, I desire it may be read, that so before the country I may be convinced by the law, before bonds may be required. *Judge.* I shall deal favourably

CHAP. During their imprisonment their friends were  
 VII. not suffered to visit them, but several who attempted it were taken up and sent out of town  
 1655. with a pass : About six months after their last examination as above, they were discharged by an order from O. Cromwell, after having suffered a grievous imprisonment (the two first 15 months) without any just cause or legal process against them <sup>f</sup>.

Released by  
order from  
Oliver  
Cromwell.

Imprison-  
ment of  
Thomas  
Stubbs.

Thomas Stubbs was another who experienced the illegal severity of the magistrates of this country about the same time ; being concerned to exhort the inhabitants of Daventry to repentance, he was for this office of christian charity sent to prison by a Justice, of whom, when Thomas required by what law he proceeded, he received for answer, *by the law that saith all Quakers must*

go

favourably with you, for I shall take your own bond to appear at the next assizes. *F. E.* First prove me a transgressor of the law ; for the righteous law of God saith, where there is no law, there is no transgression ; and there is no law in England that requires putting off the hat, therefore it is not a transgression ; for which reason I desire I may have the benefit of an Englishman, which is not denied to any felon here among us ; for I have to this day stood always faithful to the commonwealth, and have not forfeited any liberty, but have hazarded my life and estate to procure freedom, which I am now deprived of. *Judge.* If you will not put in bond, which I think is very reasonable, take him away. *F. E.* For my behaviour, if there be any here that can accuse me, I would have you countrymen to speak, any of you ; if not let all the poor people in Wellingborough, and the towns thereabout, and those in Northampton, whom I have employed for those 15 or 16 years, in carding, spinning, dying, and weaving, declare what my behaviour has been towards them or others : For, till I was cast into prison, I employed more poor people at work about wool, than any one man in this country doth ; yet notwithstanding what I have done and still do, I may not have the benefit of the law, as all malefactors here have. *Judge.* Take him away.

<sup>f</sup> Besse, vol. i. p. 528.      ibid.

*go to prison.* On this ill-founded committal he c H A P. was detained in prison thirteen weeks, till the sessions at which he was released, and then sent out of the county: Returning soon after to a meeting at Isham, he was taken thence and by two Justices committed to bridewell as a vagrant, where he was cruelly whipped, and endured much hardship, being not suffered to purchase necessities for his money.

VII.

1655.

These arbitrary proceedings and severities of the magistrates incited Edward Burrough by letter to apply to the Protector to put a stop thereto, wherein he reminded him of his vows in the day of his distress; and that he suffered cruelty, oppression and tyranny to be practised in his name, by unjust imprisonments, and merciless persecutions of a peaceable and religious body of people; that he was to be accountable to the great judge of all mankind for the use he made of the power he was invested with. It doth not appear that his plain-dealing either drew any marks of resentment from the Protector, or any interposition of his authority to put a stop to the persecution of his friends<sup>g</sup>.

It is asserted that Cromwell's principles were in favour of religious liberty, and that he allowed it in the fullest extent to all, but the papists and prelatists: yet the Quakers (so called) may be justly added to the number of those who were not allowed that liberty. From what motive, in violation of his solemn professions, confirmed by oath on his entrance upon the protectorate, and probably in violation of the convictions of his own conscience he suffered and connived at the severe persecution of this unoffending society, is not easy perhaps to determine at this day. Mosheim writes, that “ He entertained uneasy apprehensions concerning

Reflections  
on Crom-  
well's con-  
duct in re-  
gard to the  
Quakers.

“ ing

CHAP. " ing them ; and in his first thoughts formed a  
VII. " resolution to suppress their rising community ;  
1615. " but when he perceived that they treated with  
" contempt both his promises and threatenings,  
" and were in effect too powerful, or too head-  
" strong to yield to either, he prudently abstain-  
" ed from force."

It doth not appear upon what authority this account is founded, or from what source he drew his intelligence of Oliver's private thoughts; but from any historical narratives, which have fallen in my way, or the records of their sufferings kept amongst *this* people, I recollect no instance of the Protector's either amusing them with promises, or attempting to awe them by menaces ; neither that he himself openly disturbed them on account of their religious opinions or practices : yet those who acted under his authority did grievously persecute them, and he gave little or no check to their persecution, although he had the power, and was repeatedly and earnestly solicited to do it. I do not imagine, however, that the uneasy apprehensions he entertained of them was the ruling motive of his conduct towards them. They not only professed themselves to be followers of peace with all men, but exemplified their pacific principles, by their patience under suffering, and unresisting submission to all the trying injuries they were exposed to, never betraying the least symptom of a disposition to revenge their wrongs, various and aggravated as they were ; so that I imagine that Oliver's sagacity and intelligence would not be long in discovering he had nothing to fear from them.

But there was another body of men, whom he might be fearful of offending, because they have

have proved able to shake the foundations of C H A P. established governments, much more his recently usurped dominion ; the supporting himself in which at this time was with him the predominant consideration : I mean the clergy or popular preachers of the age, a set of men who had shewn themselves capable of exciting civil tumults to a disastrous degree, and who, the greater part of them, seem to have imbibed a spirit of hatred and bitter animosity against the Quakers, for their honest and undisguised testimonies against their hypocrisy, self-interestedness and lust of power, no less than their bringing over many of their hearers, and maintaining it unlawful to take tithes, or preach for hire. These men being the principal agents in promoting the persecution in which they suffered, I am ready to conjecture, that Oliver, who made every religious and moral consideration subordinate to that of retaining his sovereignty, might consider the Quakers as too contemptible, or too pacific a body to fear any danger from, even under the greatest provocations ; and that therefore he might safely connive at the oppression and persecution exercised by these men and their adherents, whereby he would keep them in temper, and attach them to his interest, to the strengthening of his authority with the people ; as, on the contrary, by disobliging them, he might be fearful to add a powerful and dangerous party to the number of his adversaries, who were already too many.

For not only amongst the royalists and presbyterians, but even amongst the independents themselves, he had created himself many enemies ; and these last perhaps the most virulent as being agitated under a keener sense of their  
more

CHAP. more recent disappointment, in the abolition of  
 VII. their favourite republick, and the beholding of  
 1655. that power, which they expected to share amongst  
 them, wrested out of their hands, and usurped  
 by one man ; who was therefore odious to them  
 as the most perfidious of men, and the great betrayer of the publick cause <sup>h</sup>.

Account of John Lilburn. Amongst the malecontents John Lilburn was one of the foremost to oppose his usurpation.

This man, originally a book-binder in London, ranked early with the assertors of civil and religious liberty on the broadest base. In his efforts in this cause, the ardency of his zeal, and the inflexibility of his temper, rendered him obnoxious to punishment or prosecution under the different successive governments of this age. First, in the year 1637, he suffered under the petulant tyranny of archbishop Laud, being accused before the Star-chamber for publishing and dispersing seditious pamphlets, when refusing to take an oath to answer to interrogatories, as being a violation of the privilege of Englishmen, secured by magna charta, whereby no man was bound to accuse himself ; for this contempt, as it was termed, he was condemned to be whipt, pilloried and imprisoned. During the execution of this sentence he harangued the populace, and declaimed against the tyranny of the bishops <sup>i</sup>. The Star-chamber, sitting at this time, ordered him to be gagged, and added to his former punishment, the lying in irons, and confinement in that part of the Fleet where the basest and meanest sort of prisoners are used to be put. In the year 1640 he recovered his liberty, by order of

Put in the pillory.

the long parliament <sup>k</sup>, and was decreed damages against

<sup>h</sup> Rapin.

<sup>i</sup> Macaulay.

<sup>k</sup> Smallet.

against his judges. On the breaking out of the C H A P. VII.  
war between the King and Parliament, his principles led him to side with the latter, and his merit with this party raised him to the rank of lieutenant-colonel, in which capacity he defeated the Earl of Derby on his march thro' Lancashire to join Charles II. in his invasion of England. In the year 1649, after the civil war was terminated, and the independent members of the long parliament had fixed themselves in the seat of government, Lilburn apprehending, that finding their ambition fully gratified, and tasting the sweets of unlimited and undivided authority, their sole aim was now the establishing and perpetuating of the supreme power in their own hands, forgetting or overlooking the more generous alledged purposes, for which the war had been undertaken and carried on, to the overturning of the monarchy, viz. the redressing of the grievances of the subjects, and establishing their liberties and immunities on a permanent foundation (and the sequel seemed to prove his apprehensions not entirely groundless) published a pamphlet, entitled<sup>1</sup> *England's Second Chains*. This liberty was so ill relished, that he was thrown into prison<sup>m</sup>, as a promoter of sedition and discord in the commonwealth, and illegally prosecuted; and altho' a petition was presented to the parliament, signed by a vast number of subscribers, to stop the prosecution they had commenced against him, and seconded by a female petition of the same tendency; yet, disregarding these solicitations, the prosecution was carried on, and Lilburn was brought to a trial for high treason after about seven months imprisonment,

<sup>1</sup> Sewel, p. 122, 123.<sup>m</sup> Hume.

<sup>2.</sup>  
Prosecuted  
by the long  
parliament,  
and acquit-  
ted.

CHA P. <sup>VII.</sup> prisonment, on which occasion his intrepid spirit did not desert him; with invincible constancy he maintained his sentiments, and pleaded his cause; so that, notwithstanding powerful exertions to prevail on the jury to bring him in guilty, <sup>n</sup> he was acquitted, and after some time regained his liberty. Again, when Oliver Cromwell had usurped the supremacy, this zealous partisan of liberty rose against his usurpation, and both by word and writing exerted himself in representing to the publick the treachery and tyranny of his proceedings, whereby Cromwell, being both provoked and alarmed, in the apprehension of the danger of his credit and authority being undermined by such bold attacks, likewise ordered him into custody, and to be impeached of high treason. At his trial he maintained the like intrepidity as before, asserting in answer to the charge against him, "That what he had done was not only no high treason, but the government was such that no high treason could be committed against it, and that it was the duty of all good Englishmen to oppose it, as a tyrannical usurpation; that he might have attained great preferment if he could have brought himself to acquiesce in it; but believing this to be unlawful, his life was to be a sacrifice for his honesty, but he was exempt from fear, because he was asserting a good cause." After this defence the jury acquitted him, notwithstanding the endeavours of the judges to the contrary. Being acquitted by the jury, his immediate release was his legal right, but Cromwell, in defence of his own safety, thought it necessary to transgress the boundaries

<sup>3.</sup>  
Prosecuted  
by Oliver  
Cromwell.

Acquitted.

ries of law, and kept him in prison, thro' the remainder of his government, during which time, being moved from one prison to another, he was at length confined in Dover Castle. His long confinement had changed the temper of his mind, from an active and bustling to a serious and contemplative cast, and preventing him from conversing in the busy scenes of life, furnished him with opportunity to be more conversant with himself in religious recollection: In his confinement here, becoming acquainted with Luke Howard, an inhabitant of Dover, and one of the people called Quakers, before mentioned, and conversing with him on religious subjects, Luke gave him such convincing reasons for his profession, <sup>p</sup> as gained Lilburn's assent, and brought him over to his sentiments and profession, in part at least, as appears by the letters that passed between him and his wife at this time, the following abstracts whereof will convey an idea of the present temper of their minds, whereby it may be perceived that adversity had proved a school of profitable instruction to them both.

His wife having visited him in prison, soon after wrote him the following laconic admonition:

“ My dear, retain a sober, patient spirit, which I am confident thou shalt see shall be of more force to recover thee than all thy keen metal hath been. I hope God is doing a work on thee and me too, that shall make us study ourselves more than we have done.”

To

<sup>•</sup> Sewel.      <sup>p</sup> p. 123.

C H A P. To which he returned in answer, after other  
VII. passages :

1655.

" ————— I am deeply entered into my part.—The mighty power of God enable thee to get in too, and also go thro' thine, and effectually to go cheerfully and willingly along, hand in hand with me.—I am sorry thou art so straitly put to it for money ; but to live upon God in faith in the depth of straits, is the lively condition of a christian.—I can now favourily live on bread and cheese and small-beer alone, for saving of money. And as for my liberty, about which thou so weariest and spendest thyself, I can say in my present temper of spirit—*It is good being here* ; for here in Dover Castle, through the loving kindness of God, I have met with more clear, plain and evident knowledge of him, than ever I had in all my life-time.—And now submissively and heartily I can say, the will of my heavenly Father be done in me, by me, and for me."

Dover Castle,  
4th 10<sup>mo.</sup> 1655.

JOHN LILBURN.

After he had lain some time in Dover Castle, Cromwell seemed inclined to release him, on condition of signing an engagement not to draw a sword against his Government ; but being not yet so far convinced, as to believe the use of the sword unlawful, nor perfectly approving of that point of self-denial, he refused to purchase his liberty on this condition. However, persevering in fidelity to that knowledge of duty he had already attained to, he became in process of time, so fully convinced of the unlawfulness of war under the Gospel dispensation, as to make the following

lowing publication of his sentiments : That being brought to believe in his inward teacher, which shall never more be removed into a corner, by the teachings thereof, he was taught to die to sin, and to the very occasion and real grounds of outward wars, and was therefore firmly persuaded that he should never thereafter use the temporal sword, nor join with them that did. This paper was dated from Dover Castle, the 4th of 3<sup>mo.</sup> 1655.

CHAP.  
VII.  
1655.

He was continued a prisoner here till Cromwell's death, and then being liberated from his long confinement, he continued stedfast in his profession of those doctrines he had received as truth, and died in London, Anno 1660.

In this year, Anne Downer, of London, being one of the earliest sufferers in that city, a maiden of about thirty years of age, and the first person of her sex who preached publicly there, for some expressions against the preacher who officiated in the Steeple-house at Stepney, was committed to the house of correction, and detained there ten weeks, and because she refused to work was beaten with a rope's end. She was a woman of excellent endowments, and became exceeding serviceable in religious society, fitly qualified to exhort others, and remarkably exemplary in her christian care over persons in sickness and poverty <sup>a</sup>.

Miles Halhead, and Thomas Salthouse <sup>b</sup>, travelling from their respective habitations in Lancashire and Westmoreland, with intention to visit their friends imprisoned in Cornwall, in their passage through Devonshire were apprehended, and

Miles Halhead, and Thomas Salthouse, passed as vagrants.

<sup>a</sup> Beffe, vol. i. p. 361,

<sup>b</sup> Ibid, p. 146.

CHAP. and after 14 days close confinement at Exeter,  
 VII. were by warrant from Colonel Coplestone, the  
 1655. high Sheriff, ordered to be passed as vagrants  
 from thence to their own dwellings : an illegal  
 procedure against men of substance and reputa-  
 tion, who travelled on horseback, lodged at the  
 best inns, and paid punctually for their enter-  
 tainment. On the way between Taunton and  
 Bridgewater, the officer who had them in charge  
 was suddenly seized with a kind of apoplectic fit,  
 which disabled him from proceeding farther.  
 They returned to Taunton and informed a justice  
 of peace of the casualty. He thereupon suspend-  
 ed the further execution of the warrant, and set  
 them at liberty, wishing the Lord might be with  
 them.

They went to Bristol and returned to Ply-  
 mouth, where they had several meetings ; one of  
 which was in the garden of John Harris, his  
 house being too little to contain the numerous  
 auditory : their plain and powerful ministry reach-  
 ed the consciences of many, and was generally  
 well accepted. At the close of the meeting, one  
 George Brooks, a priest, chaplain of the Night-  
 ingale frigate, but a man of a \* profligate char-  
 acter, spoke to the people in commendation of what  
 had been delivered, declaring it to be the eternal  
 truth. Thomas Salthouse, a man of deep dis-  
 cerning, justly suspecting the chaplain's sincerity,  
 remarked that he had spoken many good words ;  
 but whilas asked him, *Whether his life corresponded with his expressions ? For that it was he who bath the witness in himself that can set to his seal that God is true.* The priest being irritated at  
 this reproof, and meditating revenge, two days  
 after

Return to  
Plymouth.  
  
An angry  
priest pro-  
cures their  
imprison-  
ment.

\* This was proved by sundry certificates from Captains of  
 Ships, &c. &c. See Sewel, p. 118.

after procured a warrant from the Mayor, by c H A P. VII. which they were taken from a meeting at the house of Robert Cary, and imprisoned in Guildhall : Next day they were brought before the mayor, magistrates and common council, who ordered the doors to be shut during their examination, which lasted three hours ; after which they remained in custody several days, while the magistrates, who had determined to send them to the county gaol, were deliberating how to form a plausible pretence for their commitment. At first they charged them with denying the Trinity, of which they fully cleared themselves. Then they tendered them the oath of abjuration, but the proclamation enforcing that oath giving no authority to imprison any for their refusal, they omitted proceeding thereupon. At length they made out their mittimus, grounded on reasons either false or frivolous, or absurd. Their examination.

Commitment to Exeter jail.

1. As disturbers of the publick peace. [A false charge.]
2. For divers other misdemeanors. [A general charge unsupported by any matter of fact.]
3. For acting against a late proclamation prohibiting the disturbing of ministers and other Christians in their assemblies. [It is observable that the meeting was of their appointment, and therefore the disturbance, if any, was made by their prosecutor, and not by them.]
4. For acting against an ordinance of the Lord Protector and his council, lately made against duels, challenges, and provocations thereunto. [The absurdity of this charge appears plainly at first view.]

5. For

CHAP. 5. For refusing to give sufficient security for  
VII. their appearance at the next general sessions.

1655. This appears to be a direct falsehood, for two of their friends, Robert Cary and Arthur Cotton, had given security, and entered into recognizance, for their appearance, but on further deliberation it was vacated, under pretence it would not be according to law, and they were sent to prison next day. A certificate whereof was signed by those two and nine others. *Sewel, p. 116.]*

*Indictment at sessions.* After six weeks imprisonment in Exeter gaol, they were indicted at the sessions for a *breach of the ordinance against duels*, and particularly for divers disgraceful words and gestures against George Brooks, clerk, &c.

Witnesses were provided to prove the indictment, one of whom on his way was heard to say, *I am going to Exeter to swear against the Quakers, and if swearing will do it I'll make them suffer soundly:* But the court did not chuse to bring the matter to a fair hearing: For though they pleaded, and desired a trial, their plea was refused, and no trial granted. But the oath of abjuration was tendered them in court, which, it is well known, they could not take, and only tendered as a pretext to prolong their imprisonment. In fine, they were fined 5l. a piece, and committed to Bridewell till payment, and finding sureties for their good behaviour.

Pursuant to this sentence they were removed from the county gaol to Bridewell, and a guard of soldiers placed over them, with strict orders, signed by one Captain Joyce, *to detain all that should come to visit them, especially if they suspected them to be Quakers.* They lay on the ground in a close dark room many days, and were continued

tinued near seven months under such cruel usage, C H A P. VIII.  
as had the aspect of a design to destroy them : for their persecutors administered not any thing for their support, but exerted their endeavours to prevent others from bringing them the common necessities of life, and imprisoued several of those who came to see and relieve them. But this extreme malice of their enemies rendered the christian charity of their friends the more distinguished, who frequently hazarded the losf of their own lives to supply their wants.

1655.

In the same year Margaret Kellam, an innocent woman, of a tender constitution, good education and considerable property, was treated with great cruelty and ignominy, without any just occasion administred on her part, as is manifest from the sequel. \* On the 19th of December she went to the house of Peter Ceely, mayor of Plymouth, and told him she had a word from the Lord to him : he bid her come in, heard her, and confessed that *what she said was very good and true*; yet was so displeased with this truth, that he sent her to prison, detained her there about a week, when at the intercession of her friends she had liberty to return home. But on the 4th of the next month, about four o'clock in the morning, a constable and serjeant came to her chamber, broke open the door, and refusing to shew their warrant, took her away by violence, tied a rope about her, bound her arms behind her, threw her across a horse, and tied her feet under its belly, and in this inhuman manner carried her ten miles. Then loosening the cords, they told her they had a warrant to carry her to Exeter gaol. There she lay till the quar-

Cruel usage  
of M. Kel-  
lam.

C H A P. VII. ter sessions, when endeavours were used to get  
 1655. an indictment drawn up against her; but the  
 clerk and his coadjutors, altho' desirous to do  
 it, could find nothing in her conduct whereon  
 to ground an indictment, and so she was released  
 by the sheriff after an imprisonment of about two  
 months.

---

## C H A P. VIII.

*Imprisonment of G. Fox, Edward Pyott and William Salt in Launceston Gaol—Their Trial before Judge Glyn.—P. Ceely accuseth G. Fox of Treason.—Who refutes the Accusation.—They are fined and recommitted to Prison in Doomsdale.—The Justices at the Sessions at Bodmin order the Dungeon to be cleansed.—A Friend offers himself to lie in Prison in G. Fox's stead.—Thomas Lower convinced.—The Prisoners discharged by an Order from Major General Desborow.—The Imprisonment of these Friends conducive to spread their Principles.*

C H A P. A SHORT while before the beginning of the  
 VIII. year 1656, G. Fox from London travelled west-  
 1656. ward. <sup>b</sup> At Pool, William Baily, a Baptist teacher  
 was (with others) convinced by his ministry,  
 and entered into society with the people called  
 Quakers, among whom he became afterwards an  
 eminent minister. G. Fox continued his journey  
 through Devonshire into Cornwall to Market-  
 Jew,

<sup>b</sup> Sewel, p. 127.

Jew, being accompanied by William Salt of London and Edward Pyott of Bristol, where he wrote a paper containing an exhortation to fear God, and learn of Christ the light.

C H A P.  
VIII.

1656.

This paper coming to the hands of Peter Ceely, a major in the army, and a justice of the peace, when G. Fox and his companions came to Ives, the place of Ceely's residence, while George was taking a walk by the sea side, his two companions were taken into custody, and brought before the said Ceely, to whose house George soon followed, where the abovementioned paper being produced, he was asked whether he would own it, and he said, *yes*. Then he tendered him the oath of abjuration; upon which he drew from his pocket the answer to said oath, which had been given to the Protector; they were all three nevertheless sent to prison under a guard of horse with the following mittimus:

“ Peter Ceely, one of the justices of the  
 “ peace of this county, to the keeper of  
 “ his highness's jail at Launceston,  
 “ or his lawful deputy in that behalf,  
 “ greeting.

“ I send you herewithal, by the bearer hereof,  
 “ the bodies of Edward Pyott of Bristol, and George Fox of Drayton and Clea in Leicestershire, and William Salt of London, which they pretend to be the places of their habitations, who go under the notion of Quakers, and acknowledge themselves to be such, who have spread several papers tending to the disturbance of the publick peace, and cannot render any lawful account of coming into these parts, being persons altogether unknown, and having no pals for their travelling up and

O 2

“ down

George Fox's Journal.

Mittimus  
to Launce-  
ton jail.

C H A P. " down the country, and refusing to give fure-  
 VIII. " ties for their good behaviour, according to the  
 1656. " law in that behalf provided, and refuse to  
 " take the oath of abjuration, &c. These are  
 " therefore, in the name of his highness the  
 " Lord Protector, to will and command you,  
 " that when the bodies of the said Edward Pyott,  
 " George Fox and William Salt, shall be unto  
 " you brought, you them receive, and in his  
 " Highness's prison aforesaid you safely keep  
 " them, until by due course of law they shall  
 " be delivered. Hereof fail not, as you will  
 " answer the contrary at your peril. Given  
 " under my hand and seal at Saint Ives the  
 " eighteenth day of January, 1655.

" P. Ceely.

By this mittimus it is evident on what vague pretences the Quakers (so called) were committed to prison; for such frivolous reasons as it is grounded upon might be urged against any man almost travelling where he is not known, even men of property and repute, such as G. Fox's present companions were. Their guard was a company of unthinking and unfeeling mortals, by some of whom they were but rudely treated, and particularly by their captain, whose name was Keat. By these men they were guarded to Launceston, and there delivered to the custody of the keeper of the common gaol, who demanded of them seven shillings a week for their horses, and the same for their own diet each. Being the first of this people seen in this corner of the nation, they not only excited wonder and curiosity in the people, who were, many of them, of a dark and insensible cast; but

but by the novelty and simplicity of their manner and address, they raised their animosity and anger to a great degree. When they saw them address every single man of every degree as such, with the plain appellation of *thou* and *thee*, when they saw them decline the compliment of the hat and knee to the great, no less than the mean, there were some so envious or so ignorant as to expect no less than that at the assizes they would be condemned to death, if they declined these marks of honour to the bench; yet there were many others of a more amicable disposition, who from different parts of the country came to visit and discourse with them; with many of whom their religious conferences had that good effect, that they were convinced of the truth of the doctrine held forth by them.

After nine weeks confinement the assizes came on, at which they were brought to their trial before judge Glyn a Welchman, at that time chief justice of England.<sup>a</sup> They were guarded to the court by a band of soldiers and the sheriff's men, and so great was the curiosity raised in the people to see this new kind of prisoners, that it was with great difficulty they could make their way to and from the court, through the multitude with which the streets were crowded; all the doors and windows were also filled with spectators, as if to see some strange sight. Historians generally agree that the Protector in his civil administration paid a just regard to equity and clemency; and was careful to fill the benches with judges of integrity, who did justice without respect of persons. But this chief justice did not appear at that

C H A P.  
VIII.  
1656.

<sup>a</sup> G. Fox's Journal. Sewel, p. 128.

CHAP. this time to act up to that character. He was  
 VIII. so highly offended at their appearing before him  
 1656. with their hats on, that when they made the reasonable demand of justice for their imprisonment for nine weeks wrongfully, being taken up without just cause in their journey by major Ceely, he refused to hear them, unless they would appear before him uncovered, which (it being to them a matter of conscience) amounted to an absolute refusal, being only to be heard and receive justice on a condition they could not comply with Instead of granting their demand, an indictment was read against them, conceived in such terms, that at first G. Fox thought it had been against some of the thieves; for it asserted, that *they came by force and arms, and in an hostile manner, into court*, whereas they were brought thither as prisoners, which made them say, *it was all false*, and there seems to have been no judicial procedure upon it. Then major Ceely falsely and absurdly charging G. Fox with making him privately a treasonable proposal of treason.

Ceely accuses G. Fox of raising forty thousand men to bring in King Charles, George desired their mittimus might be read in the face of the country, that the real causes of his commitment might appear. <sup>e</sup> This request, equitable as it was, the judge repeatedly refused to comply with. At their next appearance, the prisoners repeated their request to have their mittimus read, and the people appearing desirous to hear it, one of his fellow prisoners, having a copy, was permitted to read it aloud. Which being done, G. Fox remarked upon it, that if he would have given surety, he might still have been at full liberty to carry on the design

G. Fox refutes the accusation.

<sup>e</sup> Sewel, p. 130.

design (if he had any) which Ceely charged him with, at the same time appealing to the court, whether Ceely had not made himself a party in the treason by omitting it in the mittimus, desiring him to go out of the country, and never charging him with pretended treason, nor making any discovery thereof till now.

The judge clearly perceiving, that in this accusation Ceely instead of ensnaring G. Fox had ensnared himself, let that business fall. Ceely then finding this intended snare broken, got up again, and accused him, that he struck him such a blow as he never had in his life; seeming thus to sport with justice, truth and conscience, in idle endeavours to criminate innocence with groundless absurdities; for this blow he alledged himself to have received from G. Fox proved to be nothing more than a merited reproof, for an hypocritical complimenting of him, while he was suffering under his malicious imprisonment.

In fine, either from the mittimus, the indictment, or Ceely's accusations, no sufficient grounds of legal crimination appearing, the judge instead of discharging them whom he could not condemn, or regarding their demand of justice for their false imprisonment, ordered them to be taken away; and in their absence fined them twenty marks a piece for coming into the court with their hats on, and ordered them to be detained in prison till their fines were paid.

Being thus fixed in prison upon such a commitment, that there was little probability of their being speedily released, they thought it necessary to discontinue the weekly payment of seven shillings a piece for their diet for themselves, and as much for their horses, which the jailer had hitherto, in a manner, extorted from them. This defal-

Fined and  
recommis-  
ted to pri-  
son.

CHAP. defalcation of his oppressive gains stirred up the  
 VIII. wicked temper of this jailer to use them with  
 1656. great inhumanity: He turned them down into  
 in Dooms- a dismal dungeon, called Doomsdale, usually  
 dale. appropriated to the reception of atrocious cri-  
 minals, after their condemnation.<sup>f</sup> This place  
 was noisome beyond description, it being remark-  
 ed that most who were confined there lost their  
 health thereby; for the excrements of former pri-  
 soners were said to have remained there unremoved  
 for many years, so that it was all like mire, in some  
 places to the top of their shoes, and the jailer  
 would not suffer them to cleanse it, nor to have  
 beds or straw to lie on. They were therefore oblig-  
 ed to stand there all night, the place being too  
 filthy to allow them room to sit down. Thus  
 they were kept a considerable time before he  
 would let them cleanse it, or suffer them to have  
 any viuals brought in, but what they got in  
 through the grate, and even this with difficulty.

The justices  
 at the ses-  
 sions at  
 Bodmin  
 give order  
 for cleaning  
 the dun-  
 geon.

This cruel treatment continued till the sessions at *Bodmin*, when upon representing their case to the justices, they obtained an order for *open-  
 ing the door of Doomsdale, and that they might be suffered to clean it, and buy their provisions in the town*; having obtained this liberty, they sent for Anne Downer,<sup>g</sup> a young woman before mentioned, from London, to come down to them to buy and dress their meat; who readily complied with their request, attended them chearfully, and became a serviceable assistant to them during their confinement here.

A friend  
 offers him-  
 self to lie in  
 prison for  
 G. Fox.

While G. Fox lay here in prison, one of his friends offered himself to O. Cromwell to lie in prison, body for body,<sup>h</sup> in George's stead; to which

<sup>f</sup> G. Fox's Journal. <sup>g</sup> Sewel, p. 132. <sup>h</sup> Ibid.

which proposal Cromwell answered, *he could not grant it, being contrary to law*, and turning to some of his council standing by him, queried, *Which of you would do as much for me, if I were in the same condition?* Upon this, and other applications on their behalf, he sent an order to the governor of Pendennis castle to examine into the circumstances of their case: On which occasion, Hugh Peters, one of the Protector's chaplains, remarked to him, that *He could not give George Fox a better opportunity of spreading his principles in Cornwall, than by imprisoning him there.* The truth of which observation the sequel confirmed, for he was visited by many persons of repute, of whom several embraced his doctrine; one of whom was Thomas Lower, a physician of London, who asking many questions concerning religion, received such clear answers from G. Fox that he said, *his words were like a flash of lightening, they ran so through him*, adding, *that he never met with men of such wisdom and penetration in all his life.* By their means he became fully convinced of the truth of their doctrine, and thenceforward entered into community with them. The whole time of their imprisonment was about thirty weeks, when they were discharged by an order from major general Dischargin-<sup>ed.</sup> Desborrow.

The case of the jailer who had so barbarously used them is observable. He before lay under the infamous character of a thief, and was said to have been burned in the hand, and in the next year after their release he was turned out of his place, and for some crime was cast into jail himself, <sup>i</sup> where for his unruly behaviour, he was

<sup>i</sup> Besse. Sewel, p. 133.

CHAP. VIII.  
1656. was by the succeeding jailer put into Doomsdale, locked in irons, and beaten ; and bid to remember how he had used those good men in that nasty dungeon. Thus the divine justice overtook him, deservedly rewarding him with the same measure, which he had unjustly meted to others. At length he died in prison poor and miserable.

Their imprisonment  
conducive  
to spread  
their principles.

Their imprisonment was (through the ordering of divine providence) conducive to the propagating their principles extensively through the western counties, and adding considerably to the number of their proselytes ; not only of those who came to visit them in prison, and were convinced by G. Fox there ; \* but many others by the ministry of other friends, who being incited by brotherly sympathy to come from different parts of the nation to visit them, and other friends in prison here and in the neighbouring counties, were at the same time engaged to exercise their ministerial labours as they passed along, and met with convenient opportunities, in declaring their experience of the virtue of true religion to the people, in order to excite them to the attainment thereof for themselves ; and these labours met with a cordial reception from many, who were convinced thereby. Their success alarmed the priests and professors, and they, as usual, instigated the magistrates to interpose their authority to check their progress. For which purpose the justices in<sup>1</sup> Devonshire made an order of sessions to apprehend, as vagrants, all Quakers travelling without a pass. They also appointed watches in the streets and highways, under pretence of taking up suspicious

\* G. Fox's Journal. <sup>1</sup> Besse, vol. I. p. 149.

picious persons, principally with intention to c h a p. VIII  
take up these fricnds of theirs on their journey to visit them in prison, and to put a stop to their preaching; in consequence whereof, in the summer of this year, above twenty persons male and female were committed to Exeter gaol. At the assizes the men were fined and confined in like manner as G. Fox had been, for appearing with their hats on; and the women were remanded to prison till they shoud find sureties for their good behaviour. They were lodged among the felons, and lay generally upon straw, by reason of which, and the filth of the place, many of them fell sick, and one of them, named Jane Ingram, died there.

In tracing the variety of arbitrary and unjust <sup>Remarks.</sup> proceedings against this body of people, one might imagine that in these unsettled times, notwithstanding the professed high notions of civil liberty, little regard was paid to legal rule: That men destitute of the feelings of humanity, of virtue and good sense, suddenly starting up into offices of power, which their original station gave them little reason to expect, and for which by their education and prejudices they were ill qualified, knew no bounds of moderation in the use of it; and that their politicks, no less than their religion, consisted more in specious pretensions, than in a clear comprehension of the principles of real liberty, and a practice regulated thereby. \* For these magistrates and officers of their watches took up not only strangers, but

\* We have a curious account in Thomas Elwood's journal of the manner of his being taken up, and the treatment he met with: Calling at Isaac Penington's, in his return from London, and designing to proceed home into Oxfordshire, his

C H A P. VIII. but their own neighbours travelling about their lawful occasions, as clothiers going to the mill, and others upon affairs of busness : Of thosē, some were cruelly beaten, and others taken up and

1656.

his friend kindly accommodating him with a horse as far as he might chuse, at Beaconsfield he sent back the horse, intending to walk the rest of the way ; but he had not walked to the middle of the town before he was stopped and taken up by the watch. He asked the watchman by what authority he stopped him on the highway, who produced an order from the constable to take up all rogues, vagabonds and sturdy beggars. Thomas therupon asking for which of these he took him, and informing him at the same time of the signification of these terms, and that none of them belonged to him, though the fellow was too ignorant to answer him, he was strong-headed enough to detain him : after some time the constable, being sent for, came ; who appeared something more mannerly but not much wiser than his watchman. Being at a loss how to dispose of his prisoner, he went to consult with the chief men of the town upon the subject, who assembling in a poor but, denominated the Town-house, he was by the constable brought before the mock senate, some of whom eying him with a supercilious air, asked him some impertinent questions, to which he returned suitable answers. Then they entered upon consultation how to dispose of him till they could take him before a justice to be examined. At last to save charges they concluded to make him walk about the streets with the watch till next morning ; till one of this grave assembly wist them to consider whether they could answer that, and if the law would bear them out in it. An old woman who lived in this town-house (who had in her youth lived with some of his ancestors) being present at their consultation, upon hearing the prisoner's name, gave them such an account of his family as made them suspect their prisoner as good a man as themselves. Whereupon the council broke up, and the constable took him home to lodge at his house that night, and the next morning, proposing as a favour, to let him slip out at the back door and make off, he signified, that as he came in, so he would go out at the fore door ; when he appeared determined he was suffered to depart his own way, after being causelēsly detained on his journey home. *G. Fox. W. Sewell.*

and whipped for vagrants, tho' men of considerable property and estates, and not above four or five miles from their habitations. Henry Pollexfen, who had been a justice of peace for the most part of forty years, and consequently well known for what he really *was*, *they cast into prison* for a jesuit.

## C H A P. IX.

*New Parliament.—Samuel Fisher attempts to deliver a Message to the Protector, Parliament and People.—Being prevented he publishes it in print. The Parliament passeth an Act against Vagrants, which seems designed against the People called Quakers.—Sufferings of several Persons of that Denomination.—Account of James Naylor.—He comes to London.—Martha Simmonds's Complaint to J. Naylor at first rejected by him.—Afterwards her passionate Sorrow makes an Impression, darkening his Understanding.—He is reproved by G. Fox, but slighteth his Admonition.—He is taken up at Bristol and committed to Prison.—Sent up to the Parliament.—His Sentence.—Remarks thereupon.—Inefficual Petition in his Favour.—First Part of his Sentence executed.—Second petition—Rejected—J. Naylor visited by five Preachers.—Execution of the second Part of his Sentence.—He is sent to Bristol and whipped there.—His Recantation.—Taken ill and dies.—Reflection upon his Case—Account of John Camm.*

**I**T was about this time the Protector thought it necessary to convoke a parliament to sit on the 17th September, better adapted to answer his purpose,

C H A P.  
IX.

1656.

CHA P. pose, than those he had before summoned under  
 IX  
 1656.  
 New par-  
 liament.

that denomination. He is thought to have been conscious of the weakness of his title to the dignity he possessed, having only received it from hands which had no right to bestow it. <sup>m</sup> The authority of a parliament, therefore, appeared to him requisite to confirm his own ; but as he had found by experience that, in the present temper of the times, a free parliament could hardly be procured to coincide with his main design he used every art in his power to influence the elections, and to get a decided majority of his friends into the house ; and in order to make sure of this point, he placed guards at the door, to permit none to enter but such as produced a warrant from his council ; and the council rejected about an hundred, who either refused a recognition of his government, or were on other accounts obnoxious to him. The residue seemed implicitly resigned to act under Cromwell's dictates.

Sam. Fisher attempts to deliver a message to the Protector and parliament. Samuel Fisher, beforementioned, late priest of Lydd, from an impulse on his mind, was present at the opening of this sessions, and heard the Protector's speech, in which he asserted, *that he knew not one man that suffered imprisonment unjustly in all England.* After the speech was ended, Samuel Fisher, taking a convenient stand, said, that he had a word to speak from the Lord to the Protector, the parliament and the people ; but had not proceeded far, till he was interrupted by an exclamation, *A Quaker, a Quaker, keep him down, he shall not speak.* <sup>n</sup> This prohibitory exclamation is said not to have arisen from either the Protector or members, who discovered no disinclination to hear him, but from two angry

<sup>m</sup> Rapin. <sup>n</sup> Sewel.

angry justices and some others, by whom being interrupted, the Protector arose, and the house broke up.

Fisher, by this interruption, being deprived of the opportunity of delivering his message (to which undertaking apprehending himself unequal, he had desired to be excused from it, with fasting, tears and supplications) took the only method left him to ease his mind of its burden, by publishing in print the substance of what he intended to have spoken ; being a zealous reprehension of the hypocrisy of those, who under a shew of godliness, made long prayers, and kept frequent fasts ; yet at the same time lived in pride, pomp and luxury, and persecuted those who were in reality a pious and conscientious people. With an admonitory caution to the Protector, that, *unless he took away the wicked from before him, and all flatterers and false accusers, his throne would never be established in righteousness.*

This parliament appears to have been of a Remark. complexion to which the foregoing reprehension might not be improperly applied, as they soon manifested their promptitude to give a sanction to persecution. It hath been evidently shewn what an illegal and despotic rigour was exercised by the bigotted and passionate magistrates of this age, who disclaiming persecution in theory, practised it in reality, in the misapplication of the laws against vagrants, to the punishment of men truly religious, for their religious persuasion of duty, in travelling at their own charges to preach the gospel, and propagate righteousness and purity of life in the nation. This parliament, as if to give a sanction to their unreasonable severity, and strengthen their hands in

1656.

Being prevented he publisheth it in print.

CHAP. in oppression and cruelty, early passed an act  
 IX.  
 1656. against vagrants, and wandering, idle, dissolute  
 persons, under which description they comprehended all who were gone from home, and could not give a satisfactory account of their business.\*

**Remark.** If the Quakers (so called) found themselves before exposed to tyrannical punishments, and causeless deprivation of their liberty, this combination of the legislative with the executive power riveted their chains, as it deprived them of all hope of redress, and exempted their persecutors from all fear of controul. When we consider this act so perfectly coinciding with the mode of proceeding before adopted by inveterate magistrates, in bringing them to punishment, one must conclude that many of these prejudiced magistrates had been admitted into this packed Parliament, or had a great influence over the members; or else that their teachers had leavened both into one sentiment and disposition towards this *iroffensive* body of men, as the act seems plainly designed to legalize their arbitrary manner of punishing, and the title expressed in vague and indefinite terms, on purpose to admit a latitude of construction, whereby it might be extended to comprehend such of them as travelled abroad to propagate their doctrines, which as their adversaries could not confute by argument, they seemed determined to suppress by violence; and by an arbitrary stretch of power, to make harmless actions illegal, since the general tenour of their conduct administered no just cause of cimination. For the vagrancy is applied, not only to idle, dissolute persons, but all that go from home, who cannot give a satisfactory account of their busines; but what account should be deemed

\* Macauley. Sewel.

deemed satisfactory seems to be left to the judgment, or caprice of the civil magistrates to determine at his discretion. Leaving the admirers of the government of the nation at this æra to reconcile such an act to *any just notion* of civil liberty, I proceed to the consequential sufferings of several of this people, wherein we shall view the same spirit of hostility and intemperate domination actuating the magistrates in the execution, through the remainder of the present and succeeding year; but I mean not to swell the volume, or exercise the reader's patience with a full recital of the various cases of sufferers under this act, preserved in the authentick records before me; but to restrict myself to a few of the most remarkable, as a specimen of unfeeling perseverance in inflicting, and *patient equanimity* in sustaining, unmerited punishment.

Henry Clifton, only riding through Upwell in H. Clifton. Cambridgeshire, was taken up by a constable, and carried before a neighbouring justice; and after some reproach and derision, sent by him to another justice four miles distant, by whom without any reasonable cause he was sent to prison, where he lay in the dungeon among condemned felons a considerable time. Ann Blakely, for Ann Blake- openly testifying against the corruption of the ly. times, being also imprisoned at Cambridge and detained there six months, during her imprisonment, two of her friends, Richard Hubberthorn R. Hubber- and Richard Weaver, being moved in brotherly ton and R. sympathy to pay her a visit, were, for this office Weaver. of christian duty, and no other cause, themselves cast into prison: They had travelled from home, and the account they could give of the motive of their journey, however reasonable and laudable, if not satisfactory to a prejudiced magistrate, he had doubtless an authority from the

CHAP. preceding law to commit them, probably during pleasure. The said Richard Hubberthorn for not departing the town at the mayor's command was also sent to the house of correction for three months.

<sup>IX.</sup>  
1657.  
Devonshire.  
Tho. Curtis and J.  
Martindale.

J. Martindale,  
H. Sprague,  
Tho. Dyer.

Thomas Curtis of Reading, <sup>b</sup> woollen-draper, coming to Plymouth upon affairs of trade, went from thence accompanied by John Martindale to West-Alvington: being in bed at a friend's house, a constable with attendants came with a warrant at midnight, and next day carried them before two justices, who sent them to Exeter gaol, notwithstanding that upon their examination, they made it appear that they were travelling upon lawful and requisite affairs of business: They were brought before the judge at the ensuing assizes, where nothing was laid to their charge; but the judge, taking occasion from their hats, fined them 40l. a piece for contempt, for nonpayment of which they were kept prisoners above a year after. During his imprisonment Martindale having obtained leave of the jailer to visit a friend at Ilchester went to meeting at Cullington, where he, Humphry Sprague and Thomas Dyer lodged at a friend's house. In the evening two constables came and required the strangers to go with them, which (they having no warrant) was refused. Next morning they came with a warrant, and carried them before the justices at the quarter-sessions at Honiton, to whom they gave account of their places of abode, being one of them but two miles from home, and another not above five: however the justices sentenced them all as vagrants, to be whipt in the market-place, and sent with a pass from

from tything to tything, which was accordingly C H A P.  
done. IX.

George Whitehead after his release from Edmundsbury jail took the opportunity of paying a religious visit to his friends in the city of London, a service which he had in prospect before his imprisonment, but was prevented thereby: his visit was very acceptable to friends, and conducive to the conviction of several, through his powerful and effectual ministry. His stay in the city was not long, till he thought it his duty to go back into Essex and Suffolk, notwithstanding his late suffering and imprisonment there, and the inimical disposition of several of the magistrates to the society of which he was a member; for being favoured with the conscious sense of inward peace, in reward of the faithful discharge of apprehended duty, and relying upon divine protection for support, while they continued in the way thereof, the ministers of that day were neither to be deterred by the remembrance of past, nor the prospect of future sufferings.

Having travelled through Essex and part of Suffolk, appointed several meetings and met with a variety of occurrences, he appointed a meeting at Nayland at a friend's house, which being too small for the purpose, the meeting was held in the yard or orchard, which many friends from Essex and Suffolk, as well as others, attended. While Geo. Whitehead was in the course of his testimony, a person, under the character of a gentleman, rushed into the meeting, with a rude company of attendants, and with violence pulled him down while he was preaching, and some of them with the constable took him to Assington, before John Gurden, an old and bitter adversary, Taken before justice Gurden.

CHAP. who, as soon as he appeared before him, began  
 IX.  
 ~~~~~ 1657. to threaten him ; upon which George desired his moderation, to hear him before he passed judgment ; to which, he replied, *you are a moderate rogue : moderate rogue !* said George, such language doth not become a magistrate, especially one professing christianity.

By whom  
he is order-  
ed to be  
whipped.

Gurden repeating his menaces, and unseemly language, bidding him *go quake*, after some examination, ordered his clerk to take it down in writing, which being read, George was required to sign it, which he refused to do, as being partially taken. Afterwards Gurden bringing a law-book in his hand, read an abstract of a statute against vagrants, sturdy beggars, idle and dissolute persons, pedlars, tinkers, &c, with the penalty appointed for them. And although the prisoner came no more under any of these descriptions, properly understood and applied, than the justice himself, yet he was informed by this justice, that *they had ordered him to be whipped at Nayland, and if he came again into the country, he should be branded in the shoulder for a rogue ; and if he came a third time he should be hanged.* To which menace George replied, *I am no such person as thou hast mentioned ; thou art an old man, and going to thy grave, and dost not know how soon the Lord may put an end to thy days, and disappoint thy evil designs against me : however I fear not thy threats : If the Lord whom I serve require my return into those parts, I must obey him.*

The warrant for his punishment being signed and sealed by John and Robert Gurden, father and son, two justices, was delivered to the constable with this charge from R. Gurden, to see it executed upon him to purpose at his peril. The copy of the warrant followeth, viz.

To

" To all Constables, and all whom it may con-c H A P.  
cern, and every of them."

IX.

" Be it remembered, That one George White-  
head, a young man of about twenty years of  
age, who confesseth himself to have been born  
at Orton in Westmoreland, being this present  
day found a vagrant, and wandering at Nay-  
land in this county, contrary to the laws of  
this nation, and being thereupon brought be-  
fore us, two justices of peace for this county,  
is by us ordered to be openly whipped at  
Nayland aforesaid, till his body be *bloody*, as  
the law in such case enjoineth: and he is to  
pass thence from parish to parish by the officers  
thereof the next way to Orton aforesaid, before  
the first day of June now next ensuing. Dated  
at Assington in this county of Suffolk the first  
day of April 1657."

1656.

Warrant  
for the ex-  
ecution.

The warrant was the next day put in execution, Severity of  
with such severity as displayed the malignancy, the execu-  
and acrimony of the justices and officers in full  
light. The constable procured a foolish fellow,  
without feeling or discretion, to inflict the punish-  
ment, who being provided with a long sharp whip,  
laid on his stripes with unmerciful violence, where-  
by George Whitehead's back and breast were  
grievously cut, his skin torn, and his *blood* shed  
in abundance, and the insensible fool still went  
on, unrestrained by the constable, till some of the  
spectators, who were numerous, and many of  
whom were so affected at beholding their cruelty  
as to drop tears, cried out to stop him; whilst  
the victim of the justices' vengeance was so sup-  
ported in patience, so filled with inward peace  
and consolation in Christ, under the cruel tor-  
ture and mangling of his body, that his spirit  
was raised, and his mouth opened to sing aloud  
in praise to that divine being, who had counted  
him

C H A P IX him worthy to suffer persecution for righteousness' sake, to the amazement and conviction of the by-standers.

1656.

When the hand of the executioner was stayed by the cry of the people, G. Whitehead, as he stood there, undressed with his wounds and stripes fresh upon him, addressed the spectators, informing them it was a proof of a minister of Christ patiently to endure affliction, according to the Apostle's testimony, 2 Cor. vi. *Approving ourselves as the ministers of God in much patience, in afflictions, in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults:* Whereby he appeared to rise superior to the indignity intended him by these invidious magistrates, to manifest himself to be no proper object of the servile and contemptuous punishment they had adjudged him to suffer, being neither a vagrant in the legal sense of the word, nor in any sense a disorderly person. And therefore the shame and ignominy designed to him more properly reverted to these magistrates, who abused the power they were invested with to the oppression of innocence, and the punishment of those that did well.

After the execution he mounted his horse, and was attended by the proper officers with the warrant and pass to Sudbury, Clare, Haverill, and to the edge of Cambridgeshire; the said warrant and pass all along reflecting disgrace and disgust to the justices who signed them, it being a common and natural reflection with the people who saw him well-habited and well mounted, "This young man doth not look like a *vagrant.*" When he came to the last place the constable being employed in his necessary labour, looking upon the young man, upon the warrant, upon the unreasonable burden imposed upon himself by

by the caprice and malice of two distant justices, C H A P. IX.  
delivered him the warrant and pass to convey himself whither soever he might think best. 1656.

Being thus set at liberty he returned, notwithstanding the justices menaces, to finish his service in those parts, where he was interrupted by his being causelessly arrested and punished: the curiosity of the people being awakened by his late sufferings, caused a great resort to the meetings where he was, to see and hear the young man who was so cruelly whipped at Nayland.

Many were tenderly affected towards him, and many convinced of the truth of the doctrine he delivered. Thus by the over-ruling hand of divine providence the arbitrary measures pursued to prevent the growth of this people contributed to their encrease and establishment.

Humphry Smith and Samuel Curtis riding together near Axminster, were stopped, and carried before a justice, who, upon consultation with a priest, ordered them to be whipt as vagrants, burnt their books and papers, took their money from them, and sent them away with a pass.

Joan Edmunds, wife of Edward Edmunds of Totnes, was stopped on the road by a drunken fellow, who took away her horse: she complained to a justice of peace, being then about ten miles from home; but having no pass, the arbitrary and officious justice sent her to Exeter gaol, ordered her horse to be sold, and part of the money applied to defray the charge of carrying her to prison. Her habitation being in the direct road to Exeter, they took her by another road six miles about, to prevent their injustice being exposed amongst her neighbours, who well knew she was no vagrant.

George

**C H A P.** George Bewley, John Ellis and Humphry Sprague, after a meeting at Bridport in Dorsetshire, were by the mayor and bailiffs caused to be whipt for vagabonds and sent away with passes : George Bewley desired liberty to go to the inn for his horse and clothes, but was not suffered. When he had gone some miles from the town, the officer who conducted him gave him his liberty ; whereupon he returned for his horse and clothes, and the bailiffs caused him to be whipped again, and sent away without them : he returned again, went to his inn, paid his host, and was riding out of town on his horse, when the bailiffs ordered him to be taken and whipped the third time. They then suffered him to depart with his horse and clothes which they had unjustly detained without any colour of law, and cruelly tortured the owner for claiming his own property.

It was under this parliament that James Naylor suffered punishment by a most rigorous sentence, most unmercifully executed. And although that extravagant conduct, which subjected him to those sufferings, was disclaimed and censured by the generality of those of his own persuasion ; yet as some authors (Hume in particular) instance his case, almost singly, as a specimen of Quakerism, it seems proper in this place to introduce a narrative of the principal occurrences of his life, whereby we may be enabled to form a sounder judgement, how far his miscarriage ought to be imputed to the body of the Quakers so called, or their principles.

Account of James Naylor. James Naylor was born near Wakefield, of honest parents, his father was an husbandman of good repute, having a competent estate to live upon after the manner of that country ; about the

the age of twenty-two he married, and continued his residence near Wakefield till the civil war broke out in 1641. He then entered into the army, in which he continued eight or nine years, first under Lord Fairfax, and afterwards as quarter-master under major general Lambert, till being disabled by sickness, he returned home about 1649. As to his religious profession, he was in society with the Independents till the year 1651, when, being convinced by the ministry of G. Fox, as noticed before, he joined in community with the Quakers. He was a man of excellent natural parts, and had received a tolerable education in his native language, and wrote well. And being by his convincement turned to the measure of divine grace in his own heart, by a diligent attention thereto he grew in experience of the work of sanctification, and received an excellent gift in the ministry; and while he kept in obedience to the dictates of this preserving principle, he was eminently favoured in his ministry with divine power, and a convincing influence, reaching to the consciences of his auditory, and awakening many to a clear sight of the internal state of their minds; of their misery under the bondage of sin, and to ardent desires after redemption and sanctification. By the same divine principle he was so preserved in circumspection of life as to confirm his doctrine by his example, shewing forth the fruits of the spirit out of a good conversation; exemplary in godliness, humility, and every christian virtue; and instrumental, by divine grace, in turning many from darkness to light, and from the power of satan to the power of God. During the space of three years, he continued

CHAP.  
IX  
1656.

CHAP. tinued in near unity with his friends, and in just estimation amongst them, for his works sake.

<sup>IX.</sup>  
1656.  
Comes to London.

Gains a party in London.

In the latter end of 1654, or beginning of 1655, he came to London, where he found a meeting of his friends already gathered, through the effectual ministry of Edward Burrough and Francis Howgill. Among them he preached in a manner so nervous and affecting, that he thereby captivated the affections of several of the more superficial and unexperienced part of the auditory, so as to hold his person in admiration, and to prefer him much above his fellow-labourers, which was injurious to him, and tended to introduce divisions, like those the Apostle Paul reproves in the church of Corinth, when the *carnal walkers as men* were disposed to pay that veneration to the respective Apostles, which belonged only to Christ, and to separate into parties. Of these were some forward females of weak intellects, strong passions, and flighty imaginations, who carried their impertinence so far as to oppose F. Howgill and E. Burrough, men of great worth, openly in their ministry, to the great disturbance of the meetings. <sup>4</sup> For which disorderly behaviour, meeting with merited reproof from these judicious and discerning men, who clearly perceived the tendency of these pernicious proceedings, they could not bear the rebuke with any patience; but one Martha Simmons, with another woman, carried their complaints to James Naylor, flattering themselves, that as they were endeavouring to make him the head of a party, he would not hesitate to give his opinion in their favour, but herein their hope deceived them; for his judgment being as yet

Martha Simmons complains to J. Naylor.

found

found and unclouded, he thought it his duty to <sup>to CHAP.</sup> IX.  
discourage their insinuations or complaints, as tending to sow discord between brethren. Her unexpected disappointment proving a trial too <sup>1656.</sup> At first rejected.  
severe for this Martha's impatient spirit to sustain with any degree of moderation, she immediately vented her passion in doleful exclamation, lamentation and weeping; these passionate expressions of sorrow moved Naylor's commiseration, and left an impression on his mind, which resulted into a deep melancholy, under the effect whereof he became darkened and bewildered in his understanding and judgment; estranged from his best and most judicious friends, who were concerned to admonish him of his danger; and open to the pernicious flatteries and intoxicating praise of these unsettled spirits, which in his better days he would have heard with abhorrence and rebuke; by which means he gradually lost the brightness, beauty and humility, which formerly adorned his ministry and his conversation; became exalted above his sphere, and lifted up in spiritual pride to a lamentable degree. From London travelling westward to visit G. Fox in Launceston, he was in the summer of 1656, one of those before related to have been committed to Exeter jail, where he was a prisoner at the time of G. Fox's release,\* who upon the

\* From thence we came through the countries to Exeter, where many friends were in prison, and among the rest James Naylor. For a little before the time that we were set at liberty James run out into imaginations, and a company with him; and they raised up a great darkness in the nation. And he came to Bristol, and made a disturbance there: and from thence he came to Launceston to see me, but was stopt by the way and imprisoned at Exeter. That night that we came to Exeter, I spake with James Naylor; for I saw he was out, and

CHAP. the night of his arrival at that city visited his  
 IX.  
 ~~~~~  
 1656.  
 Reproved  
by G. Fox,  
but slighted  
his admoni-  
tion.

friends in prison there, and James Naylor in particular, to admonish him of the delusion and danger he and his partisans were fallen into ; being impressed with a sorrowful sense of their error : but James being covered with darkness, and exalted in his imagination, slighted this admonition : for his ranting adherents set no bounds to the madness of their enormities ; they proceeded from bad to worse ; from wildness to an excess of frenzy : in their letters to him, at this time, they addressed him with appellations not fit to be attributed to any mortal man, diametrically opposite to the avowed principles of the people called Quakers. Nor did their madness stop here, for three of these silly women, in this prison, kneeled before him, and kissed his feet : after his release, riding into Bristol, one Thomas Woodcock went before him bareheaded, a woman led his horse ; and the three women before mentioned spread their handkerchiefs and scarfs before him, singing

and wrong, and so was his company. The next day, being the first day of the week, we went to the prison, to visit the prisoners, and had a meeting with them in the prison ; but James Naylor and some of them could not stay the meeting. The next day I spake to James Naylor again, and he slighted what I said, and was dark, and much out ; yet he would have come and kissed me ; but I said, " since he had turned " against the power of God, I could not receive his shew of " kindness ;" so the Lord moved me to slight him, and set the power of God over him. So after I had been warring with the world, there was now a wicked spirit risen up amongst friends to war against. And when he came to London, his resisting the power of God in me, and the truth that was declared to him by me, became one of his greatest burdens. G. Fox's journal, octavo, vol. I. p. 374.

ing in imitation of the Hosanna before our Sa- C H A P.  
viour riding into Jerufalem. Here they were taken up, and carried before the magistrates, by whom being examined, they were committed to prison. Upon search, some of those foolish and extravagant letters of his followers were found in his possession, with others of a very different strain from his former friends, reproving him for his instability and self-exaltation ; the former were divulged to aggravate his offence, the latter not answering any purpose of his *prosecutors* seem to have been suppressed. Not long after he was transmitted to London to be examined by the parliament, who judged these senseless enormities of a few deluded individuals, little affecting the publick good, or the nation's safety, of sufficient consequence to engage their attention for ten days. Debates ran high, many of the members being very averse to the severity of the measures taken against him ; but the majority (to whom J. Naylor's zeal in his writings and discourses, reprehending self-righteousness and pretences to religion, deformed by immorality in life and conversation) had given offence, actuated by vindictive motives, to gratify private hatred under the colour of publick justice, on the 17th of December passed the following dreadful sentence upon him †.

“ That

† The trial of J. Naylor was published ; but the extravagancy of the sentence passed upon him, with other circumstances, give great reason to suspect the account was partially taken, and published to justify the cruelty thereof ; some of his answers were innocent enough, some not clear ; and some wrested and aggravated by his adversaries : and it is remarkable, that upon his appearing before the parliament, he was ordered not only to uncover his head, but also to kneel before them, when one of the heaviest charges against him was that he

CHAP. IX. " That James Naylor be set on the pillory,  
 ~~~~~ " with his head in the pillory, in the palace-yard  
 1656. His sentence. " Westminster, during the space of two hours on  
 " Thursday next, and be whipped by the hang-  
 " man through the streets from Westminster to  
 " the Old Exchange, London, and there like-  
 " wise be set on the pillory, with his head in the  
 " pillory, for the space of two hours, between  
 " the hours of eleven and one on Saturday next;  
 " in each place wearing a paper containing an  
 " inscription of his crimes, and that at the Old  
 " Exchange his tongue be bored through with  
 " an hot iron, and that he be there also stig-  
 " matized in the forehead with the letter B,  
 " and that he be afterwards sent to Bristol, and  
 " be conveyed into and through the faid city  
 " on horseback, with his face backward, and  
 " there also publickly whipped the next market  
 " day after he comes thither; and that from  
 " thence he be committed to prison, in Bride-  
 " well, London, and there restrained from the  
 " society of all people, and there to labour  
 " hard, till he shall be released by parliament,  
 " and during that time be debarred the use of  
 " pen, ink and paper, and shall have no relief  
 " but what he earns by his daily labour."

Reflections  
on the sen-  
tence.

The prosecutions and punishments of the Star-chamber in the last reign, as being exorbitant and unreasonably barbarous, excited general disgust and indignation; and the tyrannical proceedings

he barely suffered some to kneel to him, for it doth not appear that he required or expected any such thing: when the Speaker Widderington was going to pronounce the sentence, J. Naylor said *he did not know his offence*. To which the Speaker replied, *he should know his offence by his punishment*. After the sentence, he seemed desirous to have spoken something, but was refused the liberty: he then just express himself with a composed mind, *I pray God, he may not lay it to your charge*.

ceedings thereof occasioned an almost universal outcry, particularly amongst the puritans, and with very good reason; upon which account, when they found themselves the majority in the long parliament, they justly abolished this court, as an intolerable grievance. But here we find a fresh occasion to remark upon the inconsistency of these puritans of the independent class, of whom, I imagine, the majority of this parliament was composed, for it was this party Oliver principally trusted and employed. The sentence passed on this unhappy man, is for the greater part almost a copy of that by the aforesaid infamous court passed upon \* Leighton for his book called, *Zion's Plea against Prelacy*. And the poignant censure of a late historian on the latter, may with little impropriety be applied to the other also. " Notwithstanding all that may be said against the conduct of this unfortunate enthusiast, his offence was by no means adequate to his punishment; his treatment and prosecution notoriously inhuman and illegal. The judgment passed against him was by an illegal court †, whose jurisdiction was unconstitutional;—was directly contrary to the humane spirit of the British laws; and the single instance of such an execrable barbarity would have disgraced the government of an absolute monarch."

Many people <sup>h</sup> (not of the society of Quakers) Petitions in esteeming the sentence passed upon Naylor exorbitantly in his favour.

\* For a comparative view of the similarity of the two sentences, see that passed upon Leighton in the above quoted author, viz. Macaulay; vol. II. p. 93.

† The House of Commons by the constitution is no court of judicature, nor hath any power to inflict any other punishment than imprisonment during their session.

<sup>h</sup> Sewel.

**C H A P.** orbitantly severe, for a crime proceeding more from a disordered understanding than a malignant intention, actuated by the feelings of compassion for the man, of which his judges appeared divested, solicited the parliament with petitions in his favour, but to no purpose : for after the sentence was passed, the Speaker was authorized to issue his warrants to the sheriffs of London and Middlesex, the sheriff of Bristol, and the keeper of Bridewell, to see the judgment put in execution <sup>2</sup>.

**Execution  
of the first  
part of his  
sentence.**

And the very next day, viz. on the 18th of December, the first part was severely executed ; after standing two hours in the pillory, he was stripped, and tortured with a most cruel whipping from Palace-yard to the Old Exchange, receiving three hundred and ten stripes ; so that according to the testimony of Rebecca Travers, a woman of indisputable veracity, who washed his wounds, in a certificate presented to the parliament, and afterwards printed, “ There was “ not the space of a man’s nail free from stripes “ and blood from his shoulders down to near “ his waist, his right arm sorely striped, and “ his hands so hurt with the cords, wherewith “ he was tied, that they bled, and were greatly “ swelled.” This cruel torture Naylor endured with patience and quietude to the astonishment of the spectators. The 20th of the same month was the day appointed for the execution of the second part of his sentence ; but he was reduced to such a state of weakness by the severe execution of the first part, that many persons of note, compassionating his condition, interposed in his favour by petition to the parliament, and obtained

<sup>2</sup> Sewel.

obtained a respite of one week, during which C H A P. interval a second petition was presented in the IX. following terms.

“ Your moderation and clemency in respiting 1656.  
 “ the punishment of James Naylor, in consider- Second pe-  
 “ ation of his illness of body, hath refreshed the  
 “ hearts of many thousands in these cities, al-  
 “ together unconcerned in his practice: where-  
 “ fore we most humbly beg your pardon, that you  
 “ are constrained to appear before you in such a  
 “ fuit (not daring to do otherwise) that you  
 “ would remit the remaining part of your sen-  
 “ tence against the said J. Naylor, leaving him  
 “ to the Lord, and to such gospel remedies, as  
 “ he hath sanctified; and we are persuaded you  
 “ will find such a course of love and forbearance  
 “ more effectual to reclaim, and will leave a  
 “ zeal of your love and tenderness upon our  
 “ spirits.

“ And we shall pray, &c.”

This petition, replete with good sense and humanity, was presented to the house by about an hundred persons on behalf of the subscribers, but the same vindictive temper, which had dictated the sentence, resisting all solicitation for mitigating it, obliged these petitioners to endeavour, by an address to the Protector, to obtain from him that favour, they could not obtain from the parliament; whereupon he wrote a letter to the house, which occasioned some debate, but no resolution in favour of the prisoner. Finding their interposition hitherto ineffectual, the petitioners presented a second address to the Protector; but, it is said, the publick preachers, by their influence, prevented its effect. However it is probable that these reiterated petitions Rejected.

CHAP. of persons unconnected with the offender in religious community, conveyed a plain indication to his adversaries, that their severity was not generally well relished.

<sup>IX.</sup>  
1656.  
J. Naylor  
visited by  
five preachers.

Wherefore five of the noted publick preachers, *Caryl, Nye, Manton, Griffith and Reynolds*, by order of the parliament, (as it was said) visited J. Naylor in prison to treat with him concerning those offences for which he was detained, and bring him to a sense thereof, as if to varnish over the deformity of their proceedings with a colour of intending only the reformation of the man, by an *heterogeneous* mixture of ghostly counsel with corporal punishment, and inhuman severity with some semblance of christian charity; but this amiable virtue had little place in their publick or private transactions with him: for these men would admit no friend of his nor any other person into the room, although requested, upon which Naylor insisted that what passed should be put in writing, and a copy left with him or the jailer, to which, in order to draw such answers from him as they wanted, they consented.

The reason of his making this demand, was an apprehension he had of an insidious design, as they would suffer no impartial person to be present at the conference to testify the truth if requisite, and the result seems to manifest his fears not groundless, for after some discourse, perceiving they were endeavouring to wrest words from him, to pervert to his crimination, in order to furnish some colour of justification to the publick, he remarked to them, “ They had soon forgot the work of the bishops, who were now treading the same steps, seeking to ensnare the innocent.” Whereupon they rose up in a rage, burned what they

they had written, and left him to undergo every c H A P. jot and tittle of his unmerciful sentence.

IX.

At the expiration of his respite, on the 27th of December, the second part of his sentence was executed upon him<sup>a</sup>. There was one Robert Rich, a zealous partisan of his, who mounting the pillory with him, held him by the hand, while he was branded in the forehead, and bored through the tongue, who being much affected with his sufferings, licked his wounds in order to allay the pain. The spectators, who were very numerous, behaved with decency and quietness, without reviling or throwing any thing at him, seeming generally affected with commiseration and regret at his unchristian treatment. He was afterwards sent to Bristol<sup>m</sup>, and there whipped from the middle of Thomas-street, over the bridge up High-street and to the middle of Broad-street, all which he bore with astonishing patience, according to the testimony of an eye witness; thence he was sent the back way to Newgate, and from thence returned to Bridewell, London, pursuant to his sentence, and was there detained a prisoner about two years: During his confinement he was favoured with a clear sight of his lamentable fall, and sincere repentance on account thereof, and after his release he published his recantation, the following extracts from which evince that he not only repented of his transgression, but through the divine mercy was again restored to a lively feeling sense of true religion, whereby he recovered his unity with his friends, and continued therein to the end of his days.

“ Condemned for ever be all those false wor- J. Naylor's  
“ ships<sup>n</sup>, with which any have idolized my per- recantation.

Q 2

“ son

<sup>a</sup> Sewel, p. 143.<sup>m</sup> Ibid.<sup>n</sup> Ibid.

CHAP. " son in the night of my temptation, when the  
IX. " power of darkness was above ; all their cast-  
1656. " ing of their clothes in the way, their bowings  
" and singings, and all the rest of those wild  
" actions, which did any ways tend to dishonour  
" the Lord, or draw the minds of any from the  
" measure of Christ Jesus in themselves, to look  
" at flesh, which is as grafts, or to ascribe to the  
" visible that which belongs to Christ Jesus ;  
" all that I condemn, by which the pure name  
" of the Lord hath been any ways blasphemed  
" through me, in the time of temptation ; or the  
" spirits grieved, that truly loved the Lord Jesuſ,  
" throughout the whole world, of what ſort  
" ſoever. This offence I confefs, which hath  
" been ſorrow of heart, that the enemy of man's  
" happiness in Christ ſhould get this advantage  
" in the night of my trial, to stir up wrath and  
" offences in the creation of God ; a thing the  
" simplicity of my heart did not intend, the  
" Lord knows ; who in his endleſs love hath  
" given me power over it, to condemn it ; and  
" also that letter which was ſent me to Exeter  
" by John Stringer, when I was in prison, with  
" theſe words : Thy name ſhall be no more  
" James Naylor, but Jesuſ. This I judge to  
" be written from the imaginations, and a fear  
" ſtruck me when I firſt ſaw it, and ſo I put it  
" in my pocket close, not intending any ſhould  
" ſee it ; which they finding on me, ſpread it  
" abroad, which the simplicity of my heart never  
" owned. So this I deny alſo, that the name  
" of Christ Jesuſ was received instead of James  
" Naylor, for that name is to the ſeed to all  
" generations, and he that hath the ſon, hath  
" the name, which is life and power, the falva-  
" tion

“<sup>c H A P .</sup> tion and the unction, into which name all the <sup>IX.</sup> children of light are baptized.

“ And all those ranting wild spirits, which  
“ then gathered about me in that time of dark-  
“ ness; and all their wild actions and wicked  
“ words against the honour of God, and his  
“ pure spirit and people; I deny that bad spirit,  
“ the power and the works thereof; and as far  
“ as I gave advantage, through want of judge-  
“ ment, for that evil spirit in any to arise, I  
“ take shame to myself justly, having formerly  
“ had power over that spirit, in judgment and  
“ discerning, wherever it was; which darkness  
“ came over me through want of watchfulness,  
“ and obedience to the pure eye of God, and di-  
“ ligently minding the reproof of life, which  
“ condemns the adulterous spirit. So the ad-  
“ versary got advantage, who ceaseth not to seek  
“ to devour; and being taken captive from the  
“ true light, I was walking in the night, where  
“ none can work, as a wandering bird sit for a  
“ prey. And if the Lord of all mercies had  
“ not rescued me, I had perished, for I was as  
“ one appointed to death and destruction, and  
“ there was none could deliver me. And this  
“ I confess, that God may be justified in his  
“ judgment, and magnified in his mercies with-  
“ out end, who did not forsake his captive in  
“ the night, even when his spirit was daily pro-  
“ voked and grieved, but hath brought me forth  
“ to give glory to his name for ever. And it  
“ is in my heart to confess to God, and before  
“ men, my folly and offence in that day. Yet  
“ were there many things formed against me in  
“ that day, to take away my life, and bring scan-  
“ dal on the truth, of which I am not guilty  
“ at

CHAP. IX.  
 1656.

" at all ; as that accusation, as if I had committed adultery with some of those women, who came with us from Exeter prison, and also those who were with me at Bristol, the night before I suffered there ; of both which accusations I am clear before God, who kept me in that day, both in thought and deed, as to all women, as a child, God is my record. And this I mention in particular (hearing of some who still cease not to reproach themselves with God's truth and people) that the mouth of enmity might be shut from evil speaking, though this toucheth not my conscience."

Sundry other papers which he published during his imprisonment, and after, confirm the sincerity of his repentance ; and so deeply was the humbling sense of his fall imprest on his mind, that during the remainder of his life he was a man of great self-denial, and very diffident and jealous of himself. At last, taking his departure from the city of London in the fall of 1660, in order to go home to his wife and family at Wakefield, he travelled on foot as far as Huntingdon, and was observed by a friend as he passed through the town in such an awful, solemn frame, as bespoke him a man redeemed from the earth, seeking a better country and inheritance. He went not many miles from Huntingdon before he was taken ill, being reported to have been robbed and left bound<sup>P</sup>; and being found in a field by a countryman toward evening, he was removed to a friend's house at Holm, not far from King's Rippon, where he was attended by Thomas Parnell, a physician of said town, and not long after

Taken ill,  
and dies.

after departed this life in peace, about the ninth month (November), 1660, in the forty-fourth year of his age. The following expressions, uttered by him about two hours before his departure, evidence the peaceful and even tenor of his mind at that solemn period.

“ There is a spirit which I feel, that delights to do no evil, nor to revenge any wrong, but delights to endure all things, in hopes to enjoy its own to the end : Its hope is to outlive all wrath and contention, and to weary out all exaltation and cruelty, or whatever is of a nature contrary to itself. It sees to the end of all temptation : As it bears no evil in itself, so it conceives none in thought to any other : If it be betrayed it bears it ; for its ground and spring is the mercies and forgiveness of God : Its crown is meekness, its life is everlasting love unfeigned, and takes its kingdom with entreaty and not with contention, and keeps it by lowliness of mind. In God alone it can rejoice, though none else regard it, or can own its life : It is conceived in sorrow, and brought forth without any to pity it ; nor doth it murmur at grief and oppression. It never rejoiceth but through sufferings, for with the world’s joy it is murdered : I found it alone being forsaken ; I have fellowship therein with them who lived in dens and desolate places in the earth, who through death obtained this resurrection and eternal holy life.”

There seems to be a pride and malignity in human nature while unreformed by religion, diametrically opposite to christian charity, which, unconscious of sublime virtue in itself, and aiming to depress the rest of mankind below its own level,

CHAP. level, delights to dwell on the dark side of characters, to magnify the failings of men, and draw a suspicious shade over their virtues, or the mitigating circumstances of their defects, and this malevolent disposition receives new force from the spirit of party, which peculiarly characterized this age, and raged with unabated violence against the Quakers. So in this poor man's case, and that of the society with which he had been connected, his failings were not only greatly exaggerated, but crimes imputed to him of which he appears entirely innocent ; his enormities are overlooked by few who have given an account of him, his \* repentance by most : That he was a Quaker (so called) is carefully preserved from oblivion ; that his extravagant conduct was disapproved by the Quakers mostly passed over unnoticed. The fall of one man in the hour of temptation, or the infirmity of another, recorded as a picture of Quakerism, without any regard to the far greater number of those people, who evidenced the virtue and efficacy of the divine principle of light and grace they bore testimony to, by an undeviating observance of every christian and moral virtue in their lives ; and the solidity of their religion, and the purity of their consciences, by the divine support they felt, bearing up their spirits at the approach of the awful hour of death.

While

\* There is a passage in a book, entitled, *A Complete History of England*, vol. iii. p. 201, which asserts that James Naylor died with no fruits, nor as much as signs of repentance : How the author came by such information we cannot tell ; but that it is a manifest mistake we doubt not but the impartial reader is by this time convinced.

While some, to involve the body of the <sup>CHAP.</sup>  
Quakers at large in the reproach of James <sup>IX.</sup>  
Naylor's extravagancies, have passed over in si-  
lence their general disapprobation thereof; others,  
on the contrary, because Rich and a few more  
wrongheaded forward people took part with him  
throughout, with pleasure observed, as they were  
willing to persuade themselves \*, <sup>a</sup> the symptoms  
of

<sup>a</sup> Sewel, p. 143.

\* Mosheim, who omits no occasion of depreciating this people, discovers his accustomed partiality and unfriendly bias, in his ill-natured description of these imputed divisions. "Even during the life of their founder (says he) the Quakers, notwithstanding their extraordinary pretensions to fraternal charity and union, were frequently divided into parties, and involved in contests and debates. These debates, indeed, which were carried on in 1656, 1661, and 1683, with peculiar warmth, were terminated in a short time, and without much difficulty." The dividing into parties, he mentions, in 1656, was no more than what is here represented, which how far it falls short of his exaggerated description is referred to the judgment of the dispassionate reader. It gave no interruption, that I can discover, to the general subsistence of that fraternal charity and union at this time remarkable amongst the members of this society, not in pretension but in reality, being demonstrated by facts, which are more indisputable evidence than uncandid insinuations or assertions. What else but true brotherly affection, the essence of charity, could induce them to come from the remotest parts of the nation to visit and administer to their imprisoned friends? What else bring them on foot from the extremity of the North to London to solicit the protection and commiseration of government in their favour? We have seen in more instances than one, some of these people offering up their bodies to lie in prison, if thereby they might release a friend, whose life or health was endangered by the hardships of imprisonment; we see these offices of brotherly kindness still continue, and shall find them again hereafter. Are these extraordinary *pretensions*? Are they not rather extraordinary *instances* of fraternal charity and union, to which the silly conduct of a very few

C H A P.  
IX.  
1656. of dissention and divisions among the members  
of this society from whence their sanguine wishes  
led them to prophesy the speedy dissolution there-  
of; but such diviners found themselves mistaken  
in their conjectures and disappointed in their  
wishes, on this as well as former occasions; for  
the imprudence of a very small number of the  
most unsteady and insignificant members occa-  
sioned no division, properly speaking, none of  
consequence or long duration. George Fox,  
coming up from Exeter, after his release from  
Launceston jail, by Bristol (where he had large  
meetings to good effect) to London about this  
time, ever vigilant to guard the people he had been  
*made instrumental to gather into a separate society,*  
against every danger, whereby they might sus-  
tain harm, writ them a short caution on this  
occasion, to beware of that disposition which hath  
a life in strife and contention; to forbear mutual  
aggravation, which breeds confusion, but to let  
their moderation, temperance and patience ap-  
pear to all men, that they might enter into  
peace and covenant with their Creator, and pre-  
serve their fellowship one with another: his care  
was exercised towards all, the weak especially,  
to whom I apprehend this caution was addresed,  
for except a very few weak members the body  
at large took no part with James Naylor \*.

This

few misguided individuals gave no interruption. This author, in conclusion, seems to refute his preceding description by an inexplicable inconsistency. "These debates which were  
" carried on with peculiar warmth—were terminated in a  
" short time, and without much difficulty."

\* Upon Robert Barclay's opponent saying, "one thing I  
" would ask, what he, Robert Barclay, thinketh of that honour  
" and

This year died John Camm of Camm's-gill, in the barony of Kendal in Westmoreland, a man blessed with religious inclinations from his childhood, which gathered strength as he approached the state of maturity, whereby he was incited in a sincere enquiry after true religion, and the most certain way to salvation, to separate himself from the national worship of that time, and associate with several others, who from a similarity of impression and pursuit, formed a select assembly at Firbank chapel and other places, amongst whom he sometimes officiated as a minister.

C H A P.  
IX.  
1656.  
Account  
of John  
Camm.  
Convinced  
at Firbank  
chapel.

" and worship that was given to James Naylor, as he rode into Bristol, October 24th, 1656?"

Robert Barclay answers, " I think it was both wicked and abominable, and so do the people called Quakers, who thereupon disowned him, and all those that had an hand in it, as by the several letters found written to him and other papers, if need were, I could at large prove; but it sufficeth to inform the reader of this, that he was denied by that people, and not any ways owned by them until several years afterwards, that he testified his full repentance for that thing in a publick assembly with many tears, signifying the same also under his hand, which was also printed."

*Robert Barclay's works, page 876.*

James Naylor himself gives the following account: After I was put into the hole at bridewell, I heard of many wild actions done by a sort of people who pretended that they owned me; and these were earnestly stirred up at that day with much violence and many unseemly actions, to go into the meetings of the people of the Lord, called Quakers, on purpose to hinder their peaceable meetings, and yet would take that holy and pure name of God and Christ frequently in their mouths, whereby the name of the Lord was much dishonoured and his pure spirit grieved, and much disorder they caused in many places of the nation, to the dishonour of Christ Jesus, for which I feel wrath from God; which when I understood that they had any strength through me, I used all means I could to declare against that evil spirit, which under the name of God and Christ, was against God and Christ, his truth and people.

**C H A P.** nister. Here it was that he, with the greater  
**IX.** part of that congregation in the notable meeting  
**1656.** which George Fox had there in 1652, by his  
 effectual ministry, was happily prevailed with to  
 turn the attention of his mind more closely to  
 the measure and manifestation of the spirit,  
 which he recommended, as a certain guide from  
 darkness to light; in obedience whereunto he  
 was made willing to take up the cross to the  
 glory and friendship of this world, in endeavours  
 to secure an everlasting inheritance in that  
 which is to come. And abiding in patience the  
 refining operation of this sanctifying grace, he  
 was fitly prepared for the reception of the gifts  
 of the spirit, and had a share in the ministry  
 committed to him, more formed to reach the  
 heart than please the ear, being weighty and  
 deep, conveying awakening reproof to the li-  
 bertine, the hypocrite, and such as disgraced the  
 profession of truth by a disorderly conversation.  
 In his moral conduct very circumspect, exem-  
 plifying the doctrine he taught by the example  
 he set. In the capacity of a parent he con-  
 scienciously discharged his duty in a religious care  
 over his children and family.

He was amongst the first of these preachers  
 who travelled into different parts of the nation  
 to propagate the Gospel, according to the prin-  
 ciples of the people called Quakers, in which  
 service he was careful not to make the gospel  
 chargeable, having an estate of his own. His  
 first journey was through the northern counties

In company with Francis Hewgill pays a visit to Oliver Cromwell.

to the borders of Scotland; his next, in com-  
 pany with Francis Howgill, to visit Oliver Crom-  
 well, protector, on behalf of their brethren un-  
 der persecution. Afterwards he travelled in  
 company with Ed. Burrough, through the mid-  
 dle

dle of the nation to London, where they met C H A P.  
 with their countrymen John Audland, Francis IX.  
 Howgill, Richard Hubberthorn, and others from  
 other parts : From thence John Audland and he  
 became fellow-travellers to Bristol, where their  
 united powerful ministry was effectual to the  
 convincement and reformation of many hun-  
 dreds, as before related in its place. But the  
 fatigue and exercise of his travels and labour  
 proved too great for his bodily ability to sustain  
 without feeling the natural effects thereof, for  
 his constitution, naturally weak, was hereby re-  
 duced into a gradual decline ; and as he drew  
 near the termination of his well spent life, sup-  
 ported by the testimony of an approving heart,  
 he viewed the awful scene without dismay. His  
 indisposition being sanctified to him by that  
 word that sanctified his soul, he was filled with  
 a thankful sense of divine goodness, under the  
 impression whereof he thus expressed his lively  
 hope : " How great a benefit do I enjoy beyond  
 " many, who have such a large time of prepa-  
 " ration for death, being daily dying that I  
 " may live for ever with my God in that king-  
 " dom which is unspeakably full of glory. My  
 " outward man daily wastes and moulders  
 " down, and draws towards his place and cen-  
 " ter ; but my inward man revives, and mounts  
 " upwards towards its place and habitation in  
 " heaven."

The morning he departed this life he called  
 his wife, children and family, to whom he im-  
 parted solid instruction, to love and serve the  
 Lord, and to walk circumspectly in his fear,  
 adding, that " his glass was run ; the time of  
 " his departure was come ; he was to enter  
 " into everlasting joy and rest ;" charging them  
 all

CHAP. all "to be patient and content in his removal;"  
 IX. presently after fainting, he seemed to pass quietly  
 1656. away, as falling into an easy sleep, whereupon some about him, weeping aloud, as one awakened out of sleep, he expressed himself again in these words: "My dear hearts, you have wronged me and disturbed me, for I was at sweet rest: You should not so passionately sorrow for my departure: This house of clay must go to its place, but this soul and spirit is to be gathered up to the Lord, to live with him for ever, where we shall meet with everlasting joy." So again taking his leave of them, and repeating his charge, he lay down, and in a little time departed this life, in the fifty-second year of his age.

---

## C H A P. X.

*George Fox applies to Oliver Cromwell to stop Persecution.—Edward Burrough writes to him on the same Subject.—Attempt to make Cromwell King.—Articles relating to Religion.—Remarks.—The excluded Members admitted into Parliament, which is soon after dissolved.—Fruitless Applications for Relief from Persecution.—Edward Burrough's Proposal to vindicate the Doctrines of the People called Quakers rejected.*

CHAP. GEORGE Fox, near London, seeing a course of people, found they were gathered to see the protector passing by; and as the persecution

cution of his friends continued unabated, he <sup>X.</sup> CHAP. rode up to the coach side to speak with him thereupon, continuing in discourse with him on the subject till they came to James's park gate, and at parting, Cromwell desired him to come to him at Whitehall: He accordingly went thither, accompanied by Edward Pyott, where they opened the subject more fully, acquainting him with the sufferings of their brethren, and remonstrating against persecution, as entirely inconsistent with Christianity, and a manifest deviation from the example of Christ and his apostles, who suffered persecution, but never persecuted any<sup>a</sup>.

About the same time Edward Burrough also, 1657. finding his former applications ineffectual, resumed his pen and wrote several epistles to Oliver on the same subject, with his usual plainness. The following extracts whereof give us a specimen of the honest simplicity and undisguised plain dealing which these men used in their applications for redrefs, not (as falsely represented) in contempt of authority, but in conformity to the dictates of their consciences, which taught them to decline every appearance of flattery and refinement in their addresses to the greatest, as apprehending these things inconsistent with the simplicity and godly sincerity recommended in the gospel: These extracts also exhibiting a lively description of the sufferings which this people at that time endured, are a confirmation of the narrative thereof, comprised in the preceding pages<sup>b</sup>.

After reminding the Protector of the obligation he was under to the supreme being for his providential

<sup>a</sup> Sewel, p. 161.      <sup>b</sup> Ibid. p. 163.

CHAP. providential favours, both in prospering his undertakings and preserving him from the plots and treacherous designs of his enemies, he proceeds : " In that day when thou wast raised up, when the fear of the Lord was before thy face, and thy heart was towards him, and thou wast but little in thine own eyes, it was well with thee, and the Lord blessed thee ; and it was not once thought concerning thee, that the hands of the ungodly would have been strengthened against the righteous under thee, or that such grievous and cruel burdens and oppressions would ever have been laid upon the just, and acted against them in thy name and under thy dominion, as unrighteously have come to pass in these three years. Many are unjustly and woefully sufferers, because they cannot swear, though in all cases they speak the truth, and obey Christ's commands ; such are punished by unjust fines imposed upon them, and this by the corruptness of some that bear rule under thee, who rule not for God as they ought, but invert the sword of justice. Some suffer long and tedious imprisonments, and others cruel stripes and abuses, and danger of life many times from wicked men, for reproving sin and crying against the abominations of the times (which the scriptures testify against) in streets and other places. Some have been taken up on the highway, sent to prison, and no crime charged against them ; and others committed, being taken out of peaceable meetings, whipped, and sent to prison, without transgressing any law, just or unjust, through the rage and envy of such who have perverted judgment and justice ; and some in

" prison

“ prison have suffered superabundantly from c H A P.  
 “ the hands of the cruel jailers and their ser- X.  
 “ vants, by beatings and threatenings, and  
 “ putting irons on them, and not suffering  
 “ any of their friends to visit them with neces-  
 “ saries ; and some have died in the prissons,  
 “ whose lives were not dear to them, whose  
 “ blood will be reckoned on account against  
 “ thee in one day. Some have suffered hard  
 “ cruelties, because they could not respect per-  
 “ sons, and bow with hat or knee ; and from  
 “ these cruelties thou canst not altogether be  
 “ excused in the fight of God, being inflicted  
 “ in thy name and under thy power.”

1657.

A copy of the letter from which this extract was taken was delivered into Oliver Cromwell's own hands ; but not producing the desired effect, he soon after waited upon him in person, to procure a conference with him upon the subject, in the course of which Cromwell told him in effect that all persecution and cruelty were against his mind, and that he was not guilty of those persecutions carried on unjustly against Burrough's friends. The futility of this excuse, too apparent to escape Burrough's penetration, drew from him the following remonstrance <sup>c</sup> : “ Con-  
 “ sider what is the cause, that what thou desirest  
 “ not to be done is yet done : Is it not that  
 “ thou mayest please men ? that thou mayest do  
 “ the false teachers of this nation and wicked  
 “ men a pleasure : Thou knowest of some in  
 “ this city and elsewhere, whom we know to be  
 “ just men, who suffer imprisonment and the  
 “ loss of their liberty, because for conscience  
 “ sake they cannot swear ; and many others in

R

“ this

<sup>c</sup> Sewel, p. 165.

CHAP. X.  
 1657.

" this nation suffering cruel treatment even for well-doing, and not for evil, which oppression might be put a stop to, and their unjust sufferings relieved by thee, by a word of thy mouth or pen, shewing thy dislike of these cruel persecutions; but there seems in thee rather a favouring of them, by connivance at the actors of cruelty, to the strengthening of their hands, than any dislike shewn by thee, in bearing witness, as thou oughtest to do, against them; and this makes that thou canst not be clear in the sight of God in these things, because not helped by thee, when thou hast power to help them."

These honest remonstrances met the like reception with former applications; they were received without apparent resentment, and persecutions carried on without redress. Cromwell's attention about this period was engrossed by a subject much nearer his heart than redressing the grievances of this society. The supple parliament now sitting, entirely devoted to his humour and to his interest, had complimented him with the offer of the crown and the title of king; and although it is thought to have been in consequence of his own management, and his ambition prompted him to accept the offer, yet finding his nearest friends and most powerful partisans, together with the body of the army, averse to the measure, deterred by the prospect of the danger attending this advancement, after some perplexity and hesitation, he finally determined to reject the proffered crown.

The parliament upon this confirmed to him his dignity of protector, with an addition of more power, in some instances, than had been annexed to it by the council of officers, by a solemn

Attempts  
to make  
Cromwell  
king.

solemn act, entitled "The humble petition and c H A P.  
" advice," which after investing him with power X.  
to name his successor, to convoke a yearly par-  
liament composed of two houses, and settling  
his revenue, concluded with the following arti-  
cles relating to religion :

" That his highness would encourage a godly Articles re-  
" ministry in these nations ; and that such as lating to re-  
" do revile and disturb them in the worship of ligion.  
" God, may be punished according to law, and  
" where laws are defective, new ones to be  
" made : That the protestant christian religion,  
" as it is contained in the Old and New Testa-  
" ment, be asserted and held forth for the pub-  
" lic profession of these nations, and no other ;  
" and that a confession of faith be agreed upon  
" and recommended to the people of these na-  
" tions ; and none to be permitted by word or  
" writing to revile or reproach the said confes-  
" sion of faith <sup>d</sup>."

These articles seem to betray little liberality of Remarks.  
sentiment concerning religious or civil liberty,  
and whether they originated from Cromwell him-  
self or the parliament, give us a specimen of the  
change of principles effected in men by the pos-  
session of power, according to the concurrent  
accounts historians have given us of the inde-  
pendents and their principles : " The fanaticism  
" of the independents abolished all ecclesiastical  
" government, disdained all creeds and systems,  
" and rejected every ceremony. Of all christian  
" sects this was the first, which, during its prospe-  
" rity as well as its adversity, always adopted the  
" principle of toleration ; and it is remarkable  
" that so reasonable a doctrine owed its origin,  
" not to reasoning, but to the height of extra-  
" vagance and fanaticism <sup>b</sup>."

R 2

" The

<sup>a</sup> Rapin.<sup>b</sup> Hume.

CHAP. X. " The doctrine of toleration, in these enlightened ages, adopted by the liberal of almost all persuasions, owed its origin to the 1657. " independents, whose declared aversion to persecution and church tyranny was too opposite to the bigotry and views of the presbyterians not to be productive of high contest and animosity. Whilst the presbyterians claimed that toleration was but an indulgence for soul-murder, &c. the independents, from the authority of the gospel and the dictates of reason, argued that every man had a right to direct his religious conscience, and interpret the scriptures according to his own lights and apprehensions ; that the doctrine of intolerance would equally justify all religious persecutions, pagans against christians, papists against protestants, with that which had been so lately endured from the power of the episcopacy; and that the presbyterians, by preaching up the doctrine of obedience in spiritual matters to established powers, passed a self-condemnation on their own opposition to former tyrannies ."

These sentiments are laudable, and the reasoning upon them just ; but I think the first quoted author hath gone too far in asserting, that they always adopted the principle of toleration in prosperity as well as adversity, except we understand it as a mere speculative truth, for that they always adopted it in practice, matters of fact will not support the assertion. And if their former principles are justly described by the fore-cited authors, it appears evidently, from the foregoing articles, that their *principles were changed with the times.* The first seems to be aimed directly at the Quakers, and the proposal

<sup>o</sup> Macaulay.

of

of making new penal laws against them bears c H A P.  
little marks of a tolerating spirit ; the second is X.  
expressed in terms of remarkable ambiguity,  
yet from this and the next we may gather thus  
much, that if formerly they disdained all creeds  
and systems, they had now altered their senti-  
ments ; since they propose the formation of a  
system for the profession of the nation, exclusive  
of all others, and a \* confession of faith so sa-  
credly inviolable, that both the freedom of speech  
and the liberty of the press were to be violated  
in its favour.

1657.

I would not be understood by these occasional  
remarks to tax the whole body of the indepen-  
dents with this inconsistency of conduct; but those  
only, who in contradiction to their former pro-  
fessions, when invested with power, perverted  
it to the persecution of such as dissented from  
them, and those who fomented the persecution.  
There were doubtless very many, more sincere  
in their profession, and more uniform in their  
conduct, who were so far from promoting, that  
they

\* Soon after this a confession of faith, drawn up by se-  
veral of the teachers at the Savoy, was published; and  
George Fox having previously procured a copy of it, not-  
withstanding the parliamentary prohibition, he animadverted  
upon it with freedom, and published his remarks about the  
same time, the Church Faith, as they termed it, was published,  
which incensed some of the members to that degree, that one  
of them threatened him, " That they must have him to  
" Smithfield." To which menace he replied, he was over  
their fires and feared them not, wishing him to consider  
whether all people had been without a faith this one thousand  
six hundred years, that the priests must now make them one ;  
that as Christ Jesus was the author of the apostles faith,  
of that of the primitive church and of the martyrs, should  
not all people look unto him to be the author and finisher of  
their faith, and not unto the priests ?

**C H A P.** they secretly condemned these unnecessary severities, as hath been noticed in James Naylor's case and others. I wish the reader to apply this distinction to my future observations on this body of men, as I shall be under a necessity, in the sequel, to lay open still more exorbitant severities, practised by arbitrary magistrates, who were instigated by vindictive teachers of this denomination, against the people called Quakers.

After all, we need not perhaps admire that the measures of this parliament were not favourable to liberty: Men who had given themselves up to act by the nod or direction of another, having resigned their own liberty, were not likely to have a tender regard for the liberties of other men.

1658

Excluded members re-admitted, whereupon the parliament is dissolved.

In the next session of this parliament, in pursuance of an article in the aforementioned instrument of government, the members who had been excluded by Oliver's council were admitted to take their seats in the house, which seems to have produced a majority less favourable to his views, and less pliant to his will than that of the former sessions; and their proceedings displeasing him, he soon put a stop thereto by dissolving them<sup>m</sup>.

**Remark.**

When we view this parliament, so much devoted to the Protector, and acting principally under his immediate influence, enacting laws so unfavourable to liberty, we can hardly exculpate him from encouraging, at least by connivance, these persecuting acts and severe proceedings, even while he declared himself against persecution, and disavowed the guilt of those carried on against the Quakers.

<sup>m</sup> Rapin.

After

<sup>d</sup> After the dissolution of the parliament, different applications, by personal interviews and by letters, were made to the Protector by divers of this people in favour of their persecuted brethren, laying before him a full narrative of their grievances, which, when he not only pleaded ignorance of, but pretended not to believe, two of them, Thomas Aldam, and Anthony Pearson, to put the matter out of dispute, undertook the laborious task of visiting all or most of the jails in England, to prove by authentic documents the truth of their representations ; which having done, by procuring copies of their friends commitments under the hands of the respective jailers, they laid the same before Oliver Cromwell; but now, all subterfuge being taken away, he declined to comply with their request in behalf of the sufferers, which was to give order for their release. It was upon this occasion that Thomas Aldam, taking off his cap, tore it, saying, *so shall thy government be rent from thee and thy house.*

<sup>e</sup> The public preachers at this time, both to palliate and promote persecution and rigorous measures against the Quakers, so called, took great pains to represent them as a people deluded, deceived and involved in error ; and particularly to Cromwell and others in authority : For which reason Edward Burrough, in a letter to the Protector, proposed that these teachers might be directed, abstracted from general reflections, and vague accusations, to put their objections to the Quakers doctrines, and their imputed errors, in plain terms and clear propositions ; and that by divine permission they should receive

1658.  
Applicati-  
ons of the  
Quakers for  
relief prove  
ineffectual.

CHAP. receive a suitable answer, concluding his letter  
 X.  
 ~~~~~ to the following purport ; " We are willing to  
 1658. " be made manifest to all men, and that our  
 " principles may be brought to the test of true  
 " judgment ; when, if any objections against  
 " us cannot be answered to the satisfaction of  
 " sober and unprejudiced men, our adversaries  
 " will be more justified in their censures and  
 " their severity against us. But if our answers  
 " shall prove our principles, practices and doc-  
 " trines agreeable to the scriptures, and vindi-  
 " cated thereby, then let the truth be owned,  
 " and no longer persecuted : Let the teachers  
 " and all our adversaries refrain their contu-  
 " melious aspersions, uncharitable railings against  
 " us, and false accusations of us to thee : Let  
 " thy ears be shut from believing lies against  
 " the innocent ; and let none in thy dominions  
 " suffer under the cruelty of men, upon such  
 " groundless pretences."

This proposal was fair and reasonable, but we have no account that it was acceded to by Oliver or his teachers : The latter found it easier to rail than to reason ; and their hatred of this people impelled them to endeavour the supressing of them by rigour, rather than convincing them by argument. Persecution continued unabated till Oliver Cromwell's death, which happened on the 3d of September this year. And being by the humble petition and advice empowered to nominate his successor, he nominated his son Richard, who was accordingly proclaimed Protector of the Commonwealth.

## C H A P. XI.

*Applications continued to Richard Cromwell, but without Success.—Friends violently abused by the Populace.—The Nation in great Commotion.—George Fox writes a Caution.—Account of Friends Sufferings presented to the Parliament.—Remarkable Proposal of a number of Friends to the Parliament.—The Quakers so called invited to take up Arms.—George Fox cautions against it.—General Monk's Order to his Soldiers not to molest the Meetings of this People.—Account of their suffering in Property, especially for their Testimony against Tithes.—Specified in various Cases.—Remarks upon Tithes, &c.*

THE same fraternal compassion for the hardships sustained by their suffering brethren, which had animated several of this community to make repeated applications to the late Protector for redress of their grievances, continued to operate, and produced similar applications to his successor. Edward Burrough in particular, who (as before related) made repeated applications to the father with much plainness of speech, was not backward, from a sense of duty, and the impulse of brotherly sympathy, to take the like liberty with his successor<sup>s</sup>. Very soon after his advancement to the Protectorate, he communicated

C H A P.  
XI.  
1658.  
Applica-  
tions con-  
tinued to R.  
Cromwell,

<sup>s</sup> Sewel, p. 189.

CHAP. cated by letter to Richard Cromwell, a clear  
 XI. and concise relation of the sufferings and per-  
 1658. secutions his friends were afflicted with, putting  
 him in mind that the power of the magistrate,  
 by divine ordination, was for a terror and re-  
 straint to evil-doers, and the protection and  
 praise of all that do well. But that at that  
 time, in this nation, it was diverted from its ori-  
 ginal purpose to the oppression of the poor, by  
 injustice, subverting the good laws of God and  
 man to a wrong end, abusing authority, by  
 turning the sword against just men, and inflict-  
 ing punishment on the innocent for righteous-  
 ness sake.

but without success. This remonstrance met with the same dis-  
 regard as the former applications for redress.  
 The persecution of the Quakers (so called) re-  
 ceived no check in consequence thereof, that I  
 can find. But, as in this interval between  
 Cromwell's death and the restoration of Charles  
 the second, through the ambitious struggles, and  
 the alternate success or failure of the contend-  
 ing parties for the sovereignty, the nation was  
 almost in a state of anarchy; gross abuses of  
 Friends greatly abused by the populace.  
 the licentious rabble, instigated by the inflammato-  
 ry calumnies of their priests against the Quak-  
 ers (so called) were added to the severity of  
 persecuting magistrates, who not confining them-  
 selves to the abuse of individuals, began to dis-  
 turb and attack these devoted people in their  
 public assemblies for divine worship, in a shame-  
 ful and riotous manner; of which we have many  
 instances in this and the succeeding year\*.

Many

Lancashire. \* At a meeting near Zanchy, where Elizabeth Leavens  
 was preaching, a rude company, headed by an elder of their  
 church,

Many of these abuses being committed on C H A P.  
the first day of the week, the day they called <sup>XI.</sup>  
their <sup>~~~~~</sup> 1658.

church, pulled her down and abused her much. As she and others were going home, the people fell upon them and grievously beat several.

Rebecca Barnes, Elizabeth Holme and others, coming from a meeting near Ormskirk, met with David Ellison, a priest, to whom Rebecca spake some words which displeased him; the persons who accompanied the priest fell to abusing her, while he animated them, crying out, *down with her, down with her*, which his cruel comrades effectually performed, for they beat, bruised, and struck her on the breast so cruelly, that within seven days after she died. Besse, v. i.

p. 304.

On the 7th of the month called June was a meeting at London, the house of William Mullins of Vine-street, Holborn, when 1658. one Atkins, bailiff to the Earl of Southampton, came to the window, swearing desperately that *he would quake them*; and gathered a mob, whom he heated with strong drink, until they threw dirt and stones in at the window, and shamefully abused many there assembled, he pushing his sword in at the window, and threatening to strike his dagger into the preacher's face, calling him reproachful names, and belching out all manner of evil speaking, till the meeting was ended.

Besse, v. i. p. 365.

On the 7th of the month called April, this year, was a meeting at the house of Thomas Budd, in the parish of Mar-

Somerset-shire. 1657.

tock, to which five priests came, attended by a rabble, furnished with staves, cudgels, pitchforks, and such like rustic arms. They rushed into the meeting with so much confusion and noise, that the preacher could not be heard: Their coming made it indeed a riotous assembly, which the moment before was a congregation of grave and serious christians, of sober and virtuous conversation, and some of them of considerable estates: However, the priests who brought the mob, and caused the riot, complained to the magistrates that the meeting held at Thomas Budd's was a riotous assembly, to the disturbance of the public peace; whereupon one Captain Raymond, with his soldiers, was ordered to disperse the next meeting that should be held there: Accordingly he came thither on the 23d of the month, when Thomas Salthouse was preaching, and took him, together with Thomas Budd,

into

C H A P. their sabbath, with impunity, under a govern-  
 ment, and by a people who pretended to make  
 it  
 1658.

into custody, and conducting them next day to Robert Hunt, justice of the peace, they were by him and others examined and committed to prison, and indicted for a riot at the quarter sessions at Ilchester: Great endeavours were used to find them and others taken with them guilty thereof, yet their attempts were frustrated by the concurring testimonies of the witnesses produced against them; whereupon the justices tendered the oath of abjuration to Thomas Salthouse, and for refusing to take it fined him five pounds. Besse, v. i. p. 578, 582.

Cornwall.  
 1657. On the 27th of the month called June, this year, was a meeting in the borough of Liskeard, where a multitude of rude people came in, hallooing, singing, railing, throwing dirt, stones, mire, and filthy excrements on the clothes, heads and faces of those that were met, beating some with clubs, others with their fists, and breaking a pitcher about the head of George Bewley. One wicked fellow sounded an hunting horn, and raised a cry of his hounds, to drown the voice of the preacher. They threw George Bewley and others down a steep hill on the pavement; and while they were pulling the hair off their heads, the priest, who sat smoaking his pipe in a Chamber window, animated the rabble, crying, *Hold him fast, keep him in, if his brains be knocked out, he has his own seeking.* This violence continued till some of the persecuted were almost strangled and ready to faint. At length some of them being let into an house, and secured from the inferior mob (for some of the mob were men of figure, and one a magistrate of the town) the tumult began to cease. Besse, v. i. p. 115.

Hertford-  
 shire.  
 1658. With much barbarity did the rabble insult this innocent people assembling at Sabridgeworth, striking them as they came thither, throwing them off their horses, and wallowing them in the mire, daubing their faces and clothes, filling their hats with dirt, and so putting them on their heads: When this cruelty could not deter them from meeting, a rude multitude surrounded the place, and assaulted them, breaking down the tiles, boards, windows and walls of the meeting-house, and throwing stones, dirt, rotten eggs, human dung and urine, that few or none of the assembly escaped unhurt: They tore their clothes in pieces, laid some as dead,

it a point to observe it with all the pharisaical strictnes, and in many cases beyond the strictness 1658.

as dead, forely bruised others, and thus continued abusing them for the space of three hours, the whole time of the meeting, and at their departure repeated the like abuses, pursuing some of them with stones and dirt about two miles.

Besse, vol. i. p. 241.

It was customary with the scholars at Cambridge, when any of this people passed the streets to or from their meetings, to throw dirt and stones at them, to tear their clothes and spit in their faces. In their publick meetings the scholars insulted them by breaking the windows, throwing great stones and shooting bullets in, to the hazard of their lives. When William Allen, who was frequently concerned to preach in those meetings, was declaring, they would run through the meeting-house like wild horses, throwing down all before them, hallooing, stamping and making a noise, as if several drums had been beating, to prevent his being heard: while he was speaking, they threw stones at him, broke his head in several places, cut his face and bruised his body; he nevertheless persisted in his known duty undismayed. In like manner did they abuse others of the assembly, pulling off the women's headclothes, and daubing their faces with filth and excrements. Some of the barbarities were acted in the sight of the senior fellows and proctor of the college, who shewed no dislike thereat; and when Alderman Nicholson, a sober and moderate man, grieved at such inhumanity, complained to the proctor, desiring him to use his authority to keep the scholars quiet, he churlishly answered that *he could not, nor would not.*

Do. 86.

On the 7th of November, this year, William Dewsbury, Notting-hamshire, preaching at a meeting at Newark upon Trent, was insulted and much abused by the people; however, the meeting was held, though through much disturbance, and at the close of it another meeting was appointed at the same place on the 11th of same month, being the first day of the week, at which while the testimony of truth was declaring, a rude multitude broke in, thrusting down both men and women, buffeting, punching and stoning them, so that some were knocked down, others had their teeth beaten out and their faces bruised; women had their head-clothes pulled off.

After

**C H A P.** XI. nes which the mosaical law appointed for observing the seventh, furnish an occasion to reflect upon the irrational inconsistency of superstition in every shape, by which I understand an overzealous attachment to some circumstantialis of religion, while the essential part, viz. the inwardly sanctifying power thereof, whereby we are taught to honour God, and love and do good to mankind, is overlooked. These men, it's probable, would have thought it a heinous crime to have been employed on that day in any honest labour, though in itself lawful, and in some fort necessary, and yet shewed no reluctance or compunction in committing unlawful actions,

**Somerset-** After this manner they continued to abuse about an hundred persons who were there religiously assembled, and who bore all patiently as Christian sufferers. Besle, v. i. 552, 553.

**Shire,** 1659. On the 22d of the month called March, this year, was a meeting at the market-cross in Glastonbury, where Edward Burrough preached. Samuel Winney, priest of that parish, attended by some drunken fellows with a drum, came thither, and demanded *by what authority he came there to preach?* Edward answered in the scripture phrase, *he that hath received a gift, let him minister according to the gift received.* He then returned the question upon the priest, desiring him *to prove his call to the ministry from scripture.* This pinched him, and he withdrew, leaving the rabble to plead his cause, who fell to beating their drum, whooping, hallooing and thrusting the friends to and fro in a wild and barbarous manner; and it was said that one of the priest's agents had made many of the mob drunk on purpose to qualify them to perform such wicked service for the church. Do. 585.

**Dorsetshire,** 1660. On the 17th of the month called May, a rabble raised by beat of drum came to the meeting at Broad Cerne, beset the house, fired guns under the windows, beat those that were met with poles and with their guns, stoned them through the streets and hurt several of them, so that some spilt blood a long time after, and others were sorely bruised, narrowly escaping with their lives.

actions, as opposite to good government as to religion, in assaulting the persons, and destroying the property of their inoffensive, unresisting neighbours and fellow citizens, with violence and outrage, whose only crime was the applying the day to the best purpose, the assembling to worship their maker in that way they were persuaded in their consciences was most acceptable to him. The magistrates and teachers also could not only let such riots pass unpunished and uncensured, but too often abet them, and at the same time fine and confine several of these people as \* fabbath-breakers, for riding a few

CHAP.  
XI.  
1659.

\* Such was the superstition of those times, that many of the people called Quakers, going to religious meetings a few miles distant from their own dwellings, were taken up by officers under pretence of breaking the Sabbath, had their horses impounded, and sometimes detained for a penalty of ten shillings for travelling on that day; and at other times themselves, for refusing to pay that penalty, were set in the stocks. *Besse, v. i. 75.*

1658.  
1656,  
1659.

The religious zeal of this people in frequenting their assemblies for worship, obliged them to travel to the places where they were held, which being sometimes at a considerable distance, their going to or coming from them on the first day of the week was called a breach of the Sabbath, and punished by fines, distresses of goods or imprisonment. For this cause, Samuel Skillingham and Zachary Child, going to a meeting at Weathersfield, were stopped by wardens in the street, and sorely beaten and abused by a justice's clerk: and for the same cause Elizabeth Court was sent to the house of correction, where she was whipped and suffered much cruel usage, being kept without candle or fire in the cold winter when she was sick of an ague. John Child, for riding to a meeting, had his horse taken away and kept from him three weeks, and then returned home without bridle, saddle, pillion or cloth, all which they detained for a pretended forfeiture. Edmund Crofts, John Pike, Richard Waite and William Halley, were taken out of a meeting at Horsley and set in the stocks

six

**C H A P.** a few miles to a meeting on that day : Proving  
 XI. their ostentatious religion to be like that of the  
**Pharisees,**  
 1659.

six hours for coming thither on the Sabbath day, &c. &c.  
 Besse, v. i. 193.

**Somerset-**  
**shire,**  
 1657. George Taylor and his wife, riding on the first day of the week to Puddimore meeting, had one of their horses taken away ; and on the same day of the next week, passing thither again through Ilchester, had their mare taken away, with saddle, pillion and bridle. In like manner Christopher Pittard's horse was taken from him as he was riding to the same meeting : at which meeting, the justices Hunt and Cary being informed that Thomas Budd's wife was present, they granted their warrant for levying ten shillings upon her husband's goods. About the same time, Christopher Bacon of Sutton, going to Puddimore meeting, by the way went to visit his friends in Ilchester jail, where he was taken by the watch ; after three days detention there he was sent to prison, where he lay three months till the sessions, at which he was fined five pounds for not taking off his hat, and recommitted. Besse, v. i. 582.

**Cornwall,**  
 1659. Anne Upcot, daughter to the priest of Anstell, being convinced of the truth, separated from the public worship, and testified against the vain conversation of the professors of those times : this incensed her father and three brothers against her, so that they sought occasion to prosecute her, a peculiar instance of which is as follows, viz. on the first day of the week, as she was putting on her clothes, she found her waist-coat torn, and was mending it, when one of her sisters came into the room ; she acquainted her brother, who also was constable, he goes to a justice and gets a warrant to bring her before him, who ordered her to pay five shillings for Sabbath breaking, and authorized her brother either to levy the same upon her goods, or set her in the stocks. The spiteful brother took the rougher course, and put her in the stocks in a time of much rain, himself with his father and brothers being placed in a window hard by, and from thence jeering and scoffing at her, and encouraging the boys and other rabble to abuse her, insomuch that some of the neighbours wept to see their unnatural usage of her ; which cruelty of theirs affords this observation, that *men of ill morals may be extremely superstitious.*

Pharisees, who would strain at a gnat and swallow a camel.

1659.

In this year the nation was in great commotion and fluctuation. Oliver Cromwell, notwithstanding the authority he possessed, notwithstanding his reputed political abilities, his penetration, his artful duplicity and address, is said to have felt himself greatly embarrassed and perplexed near the close of his time, to manage the different contending parties into which the nation was divided; but after he was removed, his successor not inheriting his father's capacity, experience or dissimulation, being a man rather of a tranquil and pacific disposition, and more adapted to fill a private station than to guide the helm of government, in these days of turbulence and confusion, the different factions were upon the watch for some event or revolution favourable to their respective interests, and the re-possession of the supreme power, which Oliver had wrested from them all. Party animosities revived with additional heat. The officers of the army, the republicans and royalists, all caballing, plotting and waiting the favourable season to promote a revolution in support of their own power. George Fox, solicitously concerned for the preservation of his friends in an honest, quiet and peaceable life, and fearful lest any young or unexperienced people, who might sometime come amongst them, might be drawn into associations with one or other of these parties, wrote an epistle of caution, wherein he admonishes his friends 'to live in love and peace with all men, to keep clear of all the motions of the world. and not to intermeddle with the powers of the earth, but to let their conversation be in heaven, which is above

G. Fox writes a caution against joining in parties.

CHAP. XI. all the combustions of the earth, to let the innocence of their lives and circumspection of their conduct manifest to all men the spirit of the gospel of Christ; that whereas those who speak evil of them, beholding their chaste conversation coupled with fear, might glorify their Father which is in heaven.' And he thus remarks: "All that pretend to fight for Christ are deceived, for his kingdom is not of this world, therefore his servants do not fight. All that pretend to fight for the gospel are deceived, for the gospel is the power of God unto salvation," and the distinguishing characteristic thereof is peace on earth and good will towards men; he seems to have the Millenarians or fifth-monarchy men in view<sup>a</sup>, who by an absurd combination of wild inconsistencies, had brought themselves to a belief, that the time was come to erect a fifth monarchy, or the reign of Jesus Christ upon earth, and that they were obliged in conscience to use their utmost endeavours to promote it, even by force of arms, as if Christ wanted the assistance of weak mortals to effect his purposes or assert his rights: Or the Prince of Peace, who came to save men's lives and not destroy them, would establish his kingdom by compulsion, violence and bloodshed.

Account of Friends' sufferings, presented to the parliament.

Afterwards a printed account of their sufferings was presented to the parliament which this Protector convened, exhibiting a relation of above one hundred and forty then in prison, and of one thousand nine hundred who had suffered in the last six years, twenty-one of whom had died in prison, generally by hardship or by violent abuses<sup>b</sup>. But the unmerited prejudices of the age

<sup>a</sup> Rapin.

<sup>b</sup> Sewel, p. 205.

age ran in a current so strong against that people, as to bear down every sentiment of compassion. Amongst the different classes into whose hands the government fell, none could be prevailed upon to yield them effectual relief.

C H A P.

XI.

1659.

The principal officers in the army, who had been the chief instruments of promoting Richard's succession to the Protectorate, had exerted their influence, principally from self-interested views, in expectation, under the umbrage of his nominal power, to hold the reins of government in their own hands. But Richard, dissatisfied with this shadow of power, took measures for possessing himself of the real authority, by an attempt to enlarge the number of the Privy Council, so as to introduce a majority of his own creatures, and to bring the army to a dependance on himself. These measures roused the jealousy of the officers, and the parliament now sitting having also discovered a purpose to weaken their influence, they combined together to force Richard to dissolve this parliament, and shortly after restored the supreme authority to the remnant of the long parliament, now reduced to about forty in number.

We have had sundry occasions to remark the brotherly affection and sympathy abounding amongst this people, manifested by a mutual concern for each other's welfare; and that while they seemed each regardless of his own liberty, they were strenuous advocates for that of their brethren, zealously and almost incessantly in their several turns, representing to those successively in authority the suffering cases of their friends, either by word of mouth, in writing or in print. So upon this change of government, fresh application was made to this parliament for relief in

CHAP. a very extraordinary proposal : A printed paper  
 XI. was presented to them, subscribed by one hundred  
 ~~~~~ and sixty-four of this people, wherein (re-  
 1659. ferring to the account of their sufferings before  
 presented to the parliament) they offer themselves  
 freely person for person to lie in prison instead  
 of such of their brethren as were under confine-  
 ment, and might be in danger of losing their  
 lives from the length and extremity of their im-  
 prisonment as several of their brethren had done,  
 whereby they demonstrated the perfection of  
 christian charity amongst themselves, and left  
 their oppressors without excuse, although their  
 offer was rejected with some marks of resent-  
 ment \*.

### Commotions

\* I find in Macaulay's Hist. Ann. 1659, the following note : " Even so early as the commencement of the last parliament, when the bill for recognizing Richard was in debate, a petition in favour of a republic was presented to the house by a formidable body of citizens ; and after the army had declared themselves, was seconded by another from the sectaries called Quakers. This last petition was highly resented, and the following angry answer returned ; That the house had read the paper, and did dislike the scandals thereby cast upon magistracy and ministry ; and did therefore order that the petitioners should forthwith resort to their respective habitations, and there apply themselves to their callings, and submit to the laws of the nation and the magistracy." — What I have to remark on this note is, that I apprehend a mistake as to the purport of the petition presented by the people called Quakers, so far as it conveys an idea of their petitioning for a republic or restoration of the long parliament. It was an established principle with them to demean themselves quietly and peaceably under that government which providence might permit to exercise the rule over them in their temporal concerns, reserving to the divine Being what properly belonged to him, and in their estimation to him alone, the dominion over their consciences. But (as far as I

Commotions still continued in the nation. The C H A P. royalists meditated a general insurrection, and George Booth, in Cheshire, rising in arms in favour of the exiled monarch, the committee of safety invited the Quakers, so called, to take up arms, offering considerable posts and commands to some of them : <sup>XI.</sup> But being very sincere in their profession of religion, and esteeming war and violence inconsistent with pure christianity ; steady to those principles they believed true, the prospect of human honour and worldly advancement, had no place with them to turn them aside from the undeviating pursuit of a point, in their view, of much higher importance, the endeavouring to secure to themselves admission in that kingdom which is higher than all the kingdoms of this world. Yet some unsettled and inconsiderate persons who at times seemed to associate with them, appearing inclined to comply with these

can discover) they attached themselves to none of the political parties which at that time distempered the state, having been treated with severity by all in their turns ; having made successively ineffectual application for redress of their grievances, and met with nothing but rejection, indignities and contempt, they had no political reason for wishing well to any one of the present contending powers above the other, as all were their adversaries. And it was with them a principle of religion to have no intermeddling with secular factions ; for notwithstanding the contemptuous light in which they were generally viewed and represented, they were undoubtedly actuated by as clear notions of the essence of christianity and the spirit of the gospel, as any other sect at that time existing, in authority at least, being thereby convinced that the kingdom of Christ was not of this world, and that of consequence the strugglers for worldly power were not establishers of the kingdom of Christ, which was their principal aim. Ignorant as they are generally represented, they had the good sense to discern the selfish views and partial politics of all these parties,

\* George Fox's Journal.

CHAP. these proposals, and take up arms under Lambert, George Fox found it his duty, by an epistle XI. to caution them against it, and his concern for 1660. their preservation had the desired effect.

Edward Burrough, indefatigable in his endeavours to procure some relief for his brethren under suffering, wrote very copiously and plainly to the successive governors of the nation ; and in sundry letters was concerned to tell them (particularly in one to the parliament now sitting) that if they desisted not from persecuting the innocent their power would be cut short, which the event proved to be a true prediction.

During this time of anarchy, the meetings of this people being frequently disturbed by the populace, as before remarked ; and when General Monk marched up to London, some of the soldiers under his command having been guilty of such

ties, under the disguise of plausible professions, and that all were guilty of palpable errors :

*Seditione, dolis, scelere atque libidine & Irâ  
Iliacos intra muros peccatur ; & extra.*

In factious deeds, deceit or lust or rage,  
Republicans and royalists engage.

Under these circumstances, I meet with no addresses of theirs to the ruling powers of this æra ; but either plain and honest testimonies of individuals against their unrighteous application of the power in their hand, or remonstrances in a collective capacity of their grievous sufferings, and applications for relief : Of the latter sort is the above, which I presume is the petition mentioned in the note, which as it contained a full account of their grievous sufferings under arbitrary magistrates, instigated by their vindictive teachers to treat them with illicit severity, such representation of real fact being displeasing to the parliament, as it was disgraceful to their government, was by them termed (though indisputable truth) a scandal cast upon the magistracy and ministry.

such disturbance, a complaint was made to the C H A P. general, which met with better success than XI. similar applications to those in authority before had generally done, as it produced the following order. <sup>1660.</sup>

*"St. James's, March 9th, 1659."*

General  
Monk's  
Order.

" I do require all officers and soldiers to forbear to disturb the peaceable meetings of the Quakers, they doing nothing prejudicial to the parliament or commonwealth of England.

*"GEORGE MONK."*

Besides the personal injuries they suffered, to which I have hitherto chiefly confined myself, Account of sufferings in property. they were also exposed to great spoil and degradations in their property, by unreasonable fines and exorbitant distressments on divers accounts, and especially for their conscientious refusal to pay tithes, and other ecclesiastical demands, which the present preachers (notwithstanding their representing them as a relict of Judaism, when in the possession of the Episcopalian) being gotten into the possession of, were as rigorous and severe in the exactation as their predecessors.

To record all their sufferings for their testimony against the propriety of these demands under the Christian dispensation would fill a large volume. The few following cases will afford a sufficient specimen of patience under suffering, extravagant damage and tyrannical malice, in exacting unreasonable demands.

In

<sup>d</sup> Sewel, p. 240.

- C H A P.** In the month called August, Elizabeth Bruce,  
**XI.** a poor widow, was sent to prison for tithes of  
1660. small value, her house and garden being rented  
 Bedford-  
 shire. but at 6l. per annum, out of which she supported  
 herself and two fatherless children; she was  
 continued a long time in prison. *Besse*, vol. i.  
 p. 4.
- Berkshire,** Leonard Cole, for refusing to pay tithes, suf-  
1655. fered six weeks imprisonment at Reading, and soon after his discharge, for a demand of 5s. had an horse taken from him worth 4l.
- 1656.** The aforesaid Leonard Cole was imprisoned twelve weeks at Reading, and then removed by *Habeas Corpus* to the Fleet, London; While there, the priest his prosecutor, with bailiffs, made a feisurie of his corn and cattle to the value of near 100l. all for one year's tithe, for which the former occupier of the same farm told Cole he used to pay but 6l. *Ditto*, p. 11.
- Durham** John Richmond suffered distress of his cattle  
 and Nor-  
 thumber-  
 land, to the value of 40l. for 8l. demanded for tithe.  
**1658.** *Ditto*, p. 173.
- Essex,** For 50l. demanded, were taken from John  
**1659.** Pollard of Steeple, corn, &c. to the value of  
 322l. *Ditto*, p. 19.
- Gloucester-** On the 9th of the month called July, Richard  
 shire, Attwood was committed to prison for tithes,  
**1657.** where, after a year's imprisonment, he died.
- In the same month Edward Buden and Wil-  
 liam Beafeley, for demands of tithe less than  
 20s. each, were sent to jail and detained there  
 above seventeen months. During their im-  
 prisonment the prosecutor took away three cows  
 from the former and six from the latter of  
 them.

William

William Wooley was prosecuted in the Exche- C H A P.  
quer for tithes of but 6d. value. Rachel True- XI.  
man was sued in the Hundred Court, and for  
10s. demanded for tithes had a cow taken from  
her worth 5l. 1658.

John Tyler of Frampton Cotterel, sued by  
his parish priest for tithe of about 20s. value,  
was adjudged by the court to pay 10l. 10s. be-  
sides 3l. 10s. costs he had been put to. Besse,  
vol. i. p. 209.

Thomas Welsted, for a demand of 3l. for Hampshire.  
tithes, had his goods taken away to the value of 1659.  
12l. 10s. And in this year several persons for  
claims of 1l. 9s. 3d. for steeple-house rates, suf-  
fered distress of goods to the value of 11l. 12s.

In this year were taken from Henry Streater,  
for 4l. demanded for tithes, three mares and two  
cows, worth 42l. Robert Biddle, for a demand  
of 16s. two horses and two cows, worth 15l. 1660.

John Bishop of Gatcomb in the Isle of Wight,  
a poor labouring man, having a large family  
dependent on his labour, was imprisoned in  
Winchester gaol for tithes twenty weeks. Besse,  
230.

In this year Elizabeth Maynard, a poor widow, Hertford-  
shire. for tithe of about 2s. value, had a cow taken  
from her by distress; also Richard North of  
Yardly, for tithe of an acre of wheat, had his  
house ransacked by a bailiff, when only two little  
children were at home: He took away beside his  
household goods, the wearing apparel of himself  
and children, and the covering of their beds,  
for want of which they were much prejudiced in  
their health, the weather being cold. The bai-  
liff had been heard to boast, *that now he had to  
do with the quakers, he should grow rich, but  
death*

CHAP. death deprived him of his expectation soon after.

XI. Befle, vol. i. p. 240.

1657.  
Hunting-  
donshire.

On the 19th of the month called January, this year, Simon Sanford was prosecuted in the Exchequer for tithes under 5l. value, and committed to Huntingdon gaol, where he lay seventeen months, till discharged by order of a committee of parliament. *Ditto, 261.*

Kent.

1659.

Edward Noakes of Word near Sandwich, after he had suffered imprisonment at Canterbury, at the suit of Paul Pettit, an impropriator, for tithes, was removed to the upper bench at London. At the next assizes a judgment was obtained against him, and in the term following an execution, by which, for tithes valued by the jury at 20l. he suffered distreſs of cattle to the value of 99l. Moreover this poor man was kept prisoner in the upper bench above two years, in which time his wife died, and his family suffered much by his absence. He was also sued by the priest of the parish in the Exchequer for small tithes at the same time. *Ditto, 289, 290.*

Leicester  
and Rut-  
land.

1656.

Edward Muggleton, after a prosecution in the Exchequer for tithes, was committed to prison at Leicester. While he lay there his son was prosecuted for the same tithe, though known to be but a servant to his father.

1658.

Zachary Gilby of Thisleton was imprisoned in Oakham jail by an attachment out of the Exchequer: He was confined there about sixteen weeks amongst felons in a cold nasty place. John Riddish was also imprisoned there, on an attachment, for tithe of ten groats value, he being a poor labouring man, and having a wife and five small children. The woman in her distreſs applied

plied to the priest, his prosecutor, to intercede CHAP.  
XI.  
1658. for his liberty, and took one of her little children with her, judging that might be a means of moving his compassion; but the priest, void of pity, thrust them out of doors, and churlishly told her *She might get her husband out again how she could.* Besse, vol. i. p. 331.

William Vincent, for a demand of only 4d. for Northamp-  
tonshire.  
1658. tithes, was imprisoned in Northampton low jail, at the suit of Thomas Andrews, priest of Wellingborough, above a year, among felons, by whom he was much abused, being a very weakly man, and having above a dozen sores about him, by which he was rendered almost unable to help himself, and obliged to go on crutches. His miserable case was represented to the priest, who yet shewed no lenity towards him, but seemed to value the poor man's life at less than one groat. Ditto, p. 530.

Margaret Parker of Aino on the hill, a poor Northamp-  
ton.  
1659. widow, having three children, was imprisoned at Northampton seven and twenty months for tithes of corn and hay less than 13s. 4d. in value. This poor woman's sufferings were grievous, being close confined among murderers, thieves and whores, where her friends were not admitted to see her, otherwise than through the key-hole of the door. Besse, vol. i. p. 530.

Arthur Goddard was arrested for tithes at the suit of Richard Rogers, priest of Clopton, and after he had been six months in custody, his prosecutor obtained a warrant from two justices to make distress for the same tithe, and took about four times the value. Hard was the case of John Causton, imprisoned in Ipswich jail, in the coldest time of the winter, three months in Sussex.  
1658.  
an

**CHAP.** an open room, under a cruel keeper, where,  
 XI. through the extreme hardship he endured, he  
 ~~~~~ contracted a sickness, of which he there died.  
 1658.

In this year were taken for tithes,

|   | L. s. d.      |
|---|---------------|
| 1659. From William Driver of Tremlic,<br>for 1l. 14s. demanded, goods<br>worth - - - - -            | 12 — —        |
| From Thomas Pinson of Ditto, for<br>14l. 1s. demanded, goods worth - - - - -                        | 57 — —        |
| From William Burroughs of Great<br>Fenborough, for 3l. 8s. 6d. de-<br>manded, goods worth - - - - - | 40 — —        |
| From Arthur Goddard of Clopton,<br>for 3l. 10s. demanded, goods<br>worth - - - - -                  | 14 — —        |
| From Richard White of Mendlesham,<br>for 4l. demanded, goods worth - - - - -                        | 15 — —        |
| For 53l. 13s. 6d. Taken - - - - -   | <hr/> 138 — — |

Lucy Oxe, widow, her son-in-law Christopher Sharpe, and Lucy his wife, were cast into Melton jail, at the suit of Francis Davis, priest of Clifford; though the son and daughter had no property in the land out of which the tithe was claimed, being only servants to their mother. Besse, vol. i. p. 666, 667.

**1660.** It may be proper here to remark, that al-  
 Remark on though at this day the people called Quakers  
 tithes. are single in their opposition against the legality  
 of tithes under the gospel, yet many others be-  
 fore them, and many contemporary with those  
 of the first generation as well as they, looked  
 upon this relick of Judaism to be abolished with  
 the law which appointed them. That in the  
 purc

pure ages of the church they were neither paid CHAP.  
nor demanded. That they were re-established XI  
among the numerous corruptions introduced in  
the darkness of a declining age, and wrested  
from the people to the sole use of the clergy, so  
called, by Romish craft and policy, and were  
by many of that age esteemed a relick of po-  
perty, retained by a partial reformation, through  
the management of self-interested priests and  
rulers, and looked upon as an intolerable grie-  
vance, to be abolished in the progress of refor-  
mation to apostolical purity; the redressing  
whereof, with other grievances, the people were  
amused with the hopes of, by those preachers  
and leaders who had instigated them to arms  
against the civil and ecclesiastical encroachments  
on their liberty and property: But they were  
only amused; for when their leaders attained  
their aim in reaching the pinnacle of power,  
they were more intent on keeping by policy a  
fast hold of the reins of government, which  
they had seized by violence, than to redress the  
grievances of the subject. When the dissenting  
teachers, by the revolutions of the state, became  
the establishment, and succeeded to the posses-  
sion of the ecclesiastical revenues of the episco-  
paliens, they manifested the genuine spirit of  
the priesthood, in securing to themselves the  
possessions and emoluments of the church, (so  
called) and opposing in a body every attempt to  
lessen them, or make any alteration therein;  
being as tenacious of the power, the privileges,  
the incomes and the perquisites of the facerdo-  
tal office, and as oppressive in exacting and re-  
covering them from those, who from a con-  
scientious scruple withheld them, as those that went  
before

CHAP. before them ; proving that priestcraft in all de-  
XI. nominations is the same. And thus through all  
1660. the revolutions of government, and all preten-  
sions of attempting a further and more perfect  
reformation, this anti-christian yoke continues  
unremoved.

Other denominations, to evade suffering, gave up the contest ; but the Quakers still maintain their testimony in this case for primitive purity, and against Romish corruptions and usurpations, from a conscientious motive, and therefore rather choose to suffer some loss of property than violate their consciences by actively upholding a practice which they esteem to be virtually forbidden by Christ, in his command to the first and best ministers of the gospel, from whom the following priesthood have idly laid claim, by uninterrupted succession to power they never thought of, and emoluments they neither possessed nor desired : “ Freely ye have received, “ freely give,” was the first and plainest ordination sermon, which this people think amounts to a prohibition not only of tithes, but of stated and involuntary contributions for the support of gospel ministers ; and therefore it is an established principle with them, not to pay tithe or any other fixed stipends either to their own ministers or those appointed by the state.

Being now advanced to a remarkable period, wherein a thorough revolution in the government and state of the nation took place, by the re-establishment of monarchy and episcopacy, in consequence of the restoration of Charles the second to the throne, which was effected in the month called May this year ; and having confined the narrative to England, as the principal scene

scene of action, it seems a proper time to look abroad, and relate the steps taken by sundry members of this society to propagate their doctrines, and the reception they met with in other parts during this period.

CHAP.  
XI.  
1660.

## C H A P. XII.

## W A L E S.

*Morgan Floyd, Priest of Wrexham, sends two of his Congregation to make Enquiry after the People called Quakers, when one of them, John Ap John, is convinced.—He is abused by a Priest, and imprisoned.—Thomas Holmes travels in Wales.—George Fox visits Wales.—Is rudely treated at Brecknock.—Many convinced.—Sufferings of this People in this Principality.*

**I**N the year 1653, while George Fox and his fellow-labourers were yet employing their ministerial labours in the northern parts of England, divers reports going abroad concerning them, Morgan Floyd, priest of Wrexham in Denbighshire, sent two of his congregation into the north to make enquiry concerning this new sect, who upon meeting and conferring with them, were so affected with the power attending their discourse and their ministry, that they were both convinced of their principles, abode with them some

CHAP.  
XII.  
1653.

**CHAP.** some time and then returned home. One of  
**XII.** them, named John Ap-John, retaining his integrity,  
1653.  
John-ap-  
John con-  
vinced. in some time after received a gift in the ministry, and continued a faithful and serviceable member of the society, and a sharer with his brethren in the tribulations of that day.

For in the year 1655<sup>e</sup>, being in the public worship house at Swansey, after the preacher had ended his sermon, he asked him, *whether he was a minister of Christ?* this question gave great offence both to the priest to whom it was addressed, and another who was present; this latter gave way to his passion so far as instantly to seize John by the collar, and without suffering him to speak another word, dragged him out and delivered him to a constable, who confined him that night in a close dark prison<sup>f</sup>. Next day he was brought before the magistrates, whom these priests endeavoured to incite to persecution, as too usual, by desiring in their blind zeal, *to have him whipped, that the devil might come out of him:* and as often as he attempted to speak, one or other of the priests would strike him and stop his mouth with their hands. At length he was sent to prison under a general charge of misbehaviour, no particular cause of imprisonment being specified in the mittimus, the fact being in no wise criminal, nor liable to the penalty of any law; but the justice, to gratify the priests, stretched his power beyond the letter of the law, to oppress an harmless man, of which arbitrary rule our history furnishes not a few instances.

In

<sup>e</sup> Besse, vol. i. p. 735.<sup>f</sup> Besse,

In 1654, Thomas Holmes travelled into Wales, being reputed to be the first minister among the people called Quakers that preached in that principality; of his service I do not meet with very particular accounts, yet there is reason to believe it was effectual to the convincement of several, as in the year 1656 I find that from seven persons of this society in Glamorganshire, for 8l. 10s. 6d. demanded for tithes, their goods were taken by distress to the amount of 28l. 8s. And from nine in Radnorshire for 4l. 3s. 4d. demanded, to the amount of 23l. 6s. 8d. was taken.

In the forepart of 1657, George Fox first visited some parts of Wales: From Bristol coming to Cardiff, a justice of peace sent him a message, desiring, "he with half a dozen of his friends would come to his house;" accordingly he went, accompanied by a few of his friends, and met with a courteous reception from the justice and his wife. \* The next day he had a meeting there, which notwithstanding some attempts of disturbance, was held to good satisfaction, and many were convinced of the truth of the doctrines he published that day.

At Swansey also his labour was blessed with remarkable success, and a settled meeting of this society established there. At Brecknock he met with rude treatment, and apprehension of danger from the populace, raised and stimulated to riot and tumult by the magistrates. Next morning he wrote a paper to the town, to point out their unchristian-like behaviour, and how contrary it was to true religion and virtue.

From hence he went to a great meeting in a steeple-house yard, to which many people came,

VOL. I. T and

\* George Fox's journal.

1654.  
Thomas  
Holmes  
travels into  
Wales.

G. Fox vi-  
sits Wales.  
1657.

At Breck-  
nock rudely  
treated.

CHAP. and amongst the rest Walter Jenkin, who had  
 XII. been a justice, accompanied by another justice: his ministry here was effectual to the conviction of many: after the meeting, he went with  
 1657. Walter Jenkin to the aforesaid justice's house, who expressed his approbation of his service, saying, "you have this day given great satisfaction to the people, and answered all the objections that were in their minds."

Pontemoil. He next proceeded to Pontemoil, had a great meeting there, which several people of account attended, and so many were there convinced, that a large meeting was gathered and established in these parts. From hence he returned to England.

Sufferings. As to the sufferings and persecutions of this people in Wales, as their numbers were not very large during this period, their sufferings were less multiplied, yet chiefly through the instigation of priests, they bore a share of the afflictions of their brethren, in imprisonments, in personal abuse, in the disturbance of their meetings, and distresses for tithes, and those called church-rates, and although some of them were remarkable and severe enough, particularly the sufferings of John-ap-John and Elizabeth Holmes, yet to avoid prolixity on a subject every where supplying abundant matter for reflection, I pass on to

## S C O T L A N D.

First meetings of this people in Scotland.

THE earliest meetings of the people called Quakers in Scotland were held about the year 1653; when several serious enquirers into the nature of true religion, and the purity and spirituality

rituality of gospel-worship, burdened with the <sup>CHAP.</sup>  
 formality, superstition and will-worship, under <sup>XII.</sup>  
 which the national preachers laboured to keep  
 their hearers in bondage, began to separate from  
 the publick assemblies, and to meet together by  
 themselves to wait upon God in silence, and to  
 worship him, who is a spirit, in spirit and in  
 truth. As they were thus exercised in an holy  
 silence, and awful humility of soul, they came  
 to experience the quickening virtue, power and  
 influence, of the holy spirit of God, enabling  
 some of them to speak forth his praise, and from  
 a sense of his goodness to become instrumental  
 for the edification of others in the faith. The <sup>first</sup>  
 first natives of this country, who distinguished <sup>preachers</sup>  
 themselves as preachers among this people, were  
 William Osborne, Richard Ree, and Alexander  
 Hamilton: This Alexander Hamilton, with his <sup>A remarkable</sup>  
 wife and sister, had been members of a church <sup>bale passage</sup>  
 or society of independents, whereof one Thomas <sup>respecting</sup>  
 Chartres was the pastor or teacher. Their de-  
 parture from the church was regretted by the <sup>A. Hamil-</sup>  
 rest of the society, they being persons esteemed <sup>ton.</sup>  
 for their regular life and religious deportment,  
 and Chartres would willingly have induced them  
 to come again and sit under his teachings, but  
 finding all his endeavours to that purpose ineffectual,  
 he at length threatened them with ex-  
 communication, and appointed a day for passing  
 that sentence, giving the said Alexander Hamilton  
 previous notice thereof. Hamilton warned  
 him *to forbear, lest the anger of the Lord should*  
*be provoked against him.* This caution Chartres  
 regarded not, but answered, *it is but Alexander*  
*Hamilton that says so:* To which Hamilton, in  
 the presence of many witnesses, replied, that  
*it was not only he, but what he had said, was of*

**C H A P.** *the Lord.* But Chartres persisted in his resolution, which yet he was prevented from putting into execution, in a remarkable manner, whether providentially, or accidentally, we leave to our readers judgment, and shall only relate the matter of fact, being as follows, viz. About two days before the time he had fixed for pronouncing the sentence of excommunication against the said persons, as he was walking in the steeple-house yard, where his horse was grazing, he stepped to him to stroke him, when the horse gave him such a violent kick on the side as proved mortal, and occasioned his death about the same time in which he had purposed to pass the said sentence. By this means his design was frustrated, and *the curse causeless did not come.*

Prov. xxvi. 2.

English  
preachers  
travel into  
Scotland.

Some of the first of this people from England, who travelled into Scotland, were Christopher Fell, George Wilson, John Grave, Sarah Chevers, and Katharine Evans; also Miles Halhead and James Lancaster, who in the year 1654, being at Dumfries, and Miles, after the priest had ended his customary performance in the steeple-house there, testifying against the deceit and hypocrisy of the people, they were so enraged, that they forced him and his companion out of the town to the side of a great river, intending there to have stoned them, but they by wading through the river, escaped their hands. After which they were at Edinburgh and Leith about ten days, where Miles delivered to the officers and captains of the army and garrisons his message, which was, that *the anger of the Lord was kindled against them, because they had not performed their promises, which they made to him in the day of their distress, when the enemies compassed*

compassed them on every side, for then the Lord C H A P. delivered them and gave them the victory, but they XII. had returned him evil for good, and committed violence against those he had sent to declare his word among them. Having performed his duty in this respect, they went to Glasgow and Sterling, and then returned to England.

Anno 1655. William Caton and John Stubbs w. Caton and J. Stubbs. visited their brethren in Scotland, administering such counsel, as in their low condition at that time, tended to their edification. John Stubbs returning to England, W. Caton went to Sterling, where he was taken and carried before the governor, who at first accosted him in a rough and angry manner, but William being of a meek and christian temper, by his soft answers appeased his wrath, so that he became cool and sedate. He was also at Glasgow, and went into the great cathedral there, where after their worship was ended, he had an opportunity of speaking to the people in the yard, the English soldiers, in garrison there, not permitting any injury to be done to him. At Douglas he published the truth without much opposition.

In October 1657, George Fox was at Edin- G. Fox. burgh, where he was summoned to appear before 1657. the council, who sent an officer to his inn, with the following order, viz.

“ Tuesday, the 8th of October 1657, at his  
“ Highness’s council in Scotland.

“ Ordered, that George Fox do appear before Order of  
“ the council on Tuesday the 15th of October council.  
“ next, in the forenoon.

“ E. DOWNING, clerk of the council.”

He appeared accordingly, and after examination, they told him that he must depart the nation of Scotland by that day sevennight. Nevertheless

CHAP. he continued travelling up and down through  
 XII. several parts of that country, preaching among  
 the people wherefover he came, and afterwards  
 1657. returned to Edinburgh, where he was told, that  
*the council had issued warrants to apprehend him  
 for breach of their order, in not departing the  
 country within the limited time.* To which his an-  
 swer was, *what do ye tell me of their warrants?*  
 G. Fox's  
 courageous  
 answer. If there were a cart-load of them I do not heed  
 them. For he, knowing his commission to be from  
 God, was carried above the fear of man in dis-  
 charging it; and a peculiar hand of Providence  
 was sometimes visible in the manner of his deli-  
 verance.

## ISLE OF MAN.

1656. THE magistrates of this island being early pre-  
 possessed with prejudice against the Quakers (so  
 called) and their doctrine, by the misrepresenta-  
 tions of the preachers of those times, whose in-  
 terest it militated against, made laws against them  
 at their first arrival there<sup>e</sup>, one of which was for  
 banishing all of that persuasion, whether natives  
 or others; accordingly Catharine Evans was  
 taken out of her bed by night, and sent away.  
 James Lancaster was also expelled the island for  
 no other reason than his going under the name  
 of a Quaker. Peter Cosnock, his son, and  
 several others were imprisoned at Castlepeel, by  
 order of William Christen, a magistrate there,  
 from thence they were removed to Douglas, and  
 banished. They applied to the Lord Fairfax for  
 leave to return, but he would not grant it,  
 though some of them were born there. At  
 length, upon application to the parliament, such  
 as were inhabitants of the place were permitted  
 to return to their habitations.

William

<sup>e</sup> Besse, vol. i. p. 269.

William Callow was detained eight weeks in C H A P. prison for reproving a priest, whom he had heard abusing the people called Quakers in his sermon to the people. Several persons were taken out of a meeting on the first day of the week, and set in the stocks four hours in the market place; others were fined, of whom were William Callow, John Christen and Evan Kerush; from the two former were taken ten bushels of oats by distress, which were laid in \* William Christen's barn. On the next first day after sermon the priest gave public notice for the poor of the parish to go to the barn and take some corn, which the governor had ordered to be distributed amongst them; some of the poor people, his own hearers, answered, "That it had been more charity to have given his own goods to the poor than other men's, and that they would receive none of it." However, some of the poor went to the place with the priest and soldiers, and William Callow went also. The priest called to the poor several times to hold their bags, but none of them would; at this the priest grew angry, and looking sternly at William Callow, called to the people, "Why don't you take the corn? Is there any one here that hath aught to do with this corn, or faith it may not be given to the poor;" this he said to provoke from William some expression, but he held his peace. The poor stood still a while, and then withdrew one by one, leaving the corn with the priest and soldiers. On the following first day the parson again published the distribution of the corn as before,

\* This William Christen was a deputy under Lord Fairfax, but falling afterwards under his displeasure for some misdemeanour, he was shot to death on the island. In his last speech he mentioned with much regret his evil treatment of the Quakers.

CHAP before, signifying how much the governor was  
 XII. displeased that they had not taken it. For fear  
 of the governor and the priest, some poor people  
 1657. went again to the place, but only one of them  
 would take any, and he vauntingly said to the  
 rest, "you are so proud you will not take it: I  
 " have got this, and there will be more of his  
 " goods taken before this be eaten, and then  
 " I'll get more;" but it happened, that before  
 he had eaten what he took, he was taken away  
 by death. His sudden exit was interpreted by  
 the other poor as a judgment upon him, and  
 they were glad that they had kept themselves  
 clear. The rest of the corn lay till it was spoiled,  
 for nobody would take it. From this instance  
 we may justly observe, that the innocence and  
 patience of sufferers in the cause of religion,  
 carries with it a force of conviction on the  
 consciences of the people, which the arts of designing  
 and interested men cannot easily eradicate.

1659. William Callow and several others for 2d.  
 each demanded by the priest for bread and wine,  
 of which they had received none, were impri-  
 soned by a warrant from † James Challoner the  
 governor, from whom also in September this  
 year the priest procured another warrant for the  
 imprisonment of William Callow and Evan  
 Christen, for refusing to pay tithes. One morn-  
 ing early, as soon as they came on shore, after  
 being all night in the wet and cold at sea, (for  
 they were fishermen) they were hurried to pri-  
 son

† This James Challoner had been a member of the long parliament, and after the King's return had been sent for to London, in order, as was thought, to be tried among the regicides. The day he was to go he took something under pretext of physick, which killed him in a short time. He had been a violent persecutor, and was heard to say, a little before his death, that he would quickly rid the island of Quakers.

son in their wet clothes, and detained several days in the midst of their herring fishery, the most advantageous season for their business. This, however designed by their adversary, was not productive of the prejudice which might be naturally expected, for the next night after their release they caught as many fish as they were able to bring to shore, so that they had reason gratefully to acknowledge a peculiar providence attending them.

1659.

## IRELAND.

## C H A P. XIII.

*William Edmundson the first of the People called Quakers in Ireland.—Account of him.—Importuned to settle in Dublin, but removes from thence to Antrim.—Going to the North of England hears James Naylor preach, whereby he is fully convinced.—Refuses to swear.—Miles Halhead, Miles Bateman and James Lancaster visit Ireland.—William Edmundson removes to Lurgan, and settles a Meeting there.—Receives a Gift in the Ministry.—John Tiffin comes over from England, William Edmundson accompanies him to Belfast.—Richard Clayton and William Edmundson travel on foot.—Are refused Entertainment at Coleraine.—Several convinced near Kilmore.—Several Friends from England visit Ireland.—First Meeting in Dublin.—Many convinced.—At Limerick Edward Burrough and Francis Howgill assaulted, and put out of the Gate.—Taken Prisoners at Cork, and sent under a Guard to Dublin, and banished.—Edward Burrough's Remonstrance against their Treatment.—Barbara Blaugdon's Interview with the Lord Deputy.—William Edmundson quits Shop-keeping.—Removes to the County of Cavan, and settles a Meeting there.—Removes thence to Queen's County, and settles a Meeting at Mountmellick.—Barbara Blaugdon imprisoned.—William Edmundson set in the Stocks at Belturbet.*

W. Edmundson  
the first of  
the Quakers  
in Ireland.

**T**HE first of the people called quakers in Ireland was William Edmundson, who came over in the way of trade; and being soon after convinced

vinced of the truth of the principles of this people, and adhering to them, was instrumental to the convincement of some others, before any of their ministers came over from England ; and as he fixed his residence in that kingdom, and became a very reputable member and minister in this society there, it seems proper to open this part of the history with an account of him.

He was born at little Musgrave in Westmoreland, in the year 1627, and in his early minority was often seriously affected with consideration about a future state ; and as his age and faculties advanced towards maturity, his desires after everlasting felicity increased in proportion. <sup>Account of W. Edmundson.</sup> About the year 1650 he entered into the parliament's army, but continued in it only for a short season, for during the campaign in Scotland under Oliver Cromwell, the subject which had before closely exercised the attention of his thoughts (i. e. the salvation of his soul) fixing more deeply in his mind, he soon grew weary of the military life, and laid down his arms, in order to be more at liberty to engage in the spiritual warfare. In the year 1651 he returned from Scotland into England, and was quartered in Derbyshire ; which being about the time of George Fox's release from Derby jail, he, and the people who had there lately received the denomination of Quakers, were become a general topick of conversation, and variety of reports were propagated concerning them, some in their favour, and many to their disadvantage : Upon the comparison, William, before he knew them, found his heart inclined to the favourable side.

About

<sup>a</sup> William Edmundson's journal, p. 1.

**C H A P.** About this time he entered into the married state, and quitted the army with a purpose to settle in Derbyshire ; but at the persuasion of his brother John, who was then a soldier in Ireland, and come over to see his relations in England, he removed into Ireland, taking with him such merchandize as might be like to be in demand   
**XIII.**   
**1651.**   
<sup>Importuned to settle in Dublin, but prevented.</sup> Landing in Dublin, he was strongly importuned to settle in that city, and besides the solicitations of others, he had the inviting prospect of a brisk trade and low rents, it being soon after the plague had left many houses uninhabited.—<sup>d</sup> But he writes that he was rescued by a secret hand, which he then knew not, from the deceitfulness of riches, being by his following experience, brought into the persuasion, that by closing in with the tempting prospect, he might, in the acquisition and pursuit of wealth, have been diverted from the principal object, a life of religious devotion to the service of his Creator, as the means of securing future felicity ; which pernicious effect, he observed with regret, the acquisition of wealth and love of the world, had on too many in that day.

From this settled persuasion of mind of the danger hereof, we shall find him in the sequel exerting his zealous endeavours to preserve his friends in that moderation and self-denial of which he set them a lively example, both on this occasion, and at sundry future periods of his life.

<sup>From Dub-</sup>  
lin he re-  
moves to  
reside in  
Antrim.

<sup>d</sup> From Dublin he removed to the North, and took up his residence in Antrim, in or near which his brother was quartered ; and quickly disposing

<sup>a</sup> William Edmundson's journal, p. 6.

disposing of his goods, he went over to Eng- C H A P.  
land to lay in a fresh stock, and in his travels XIII.  
through the North he heard that George Fox <sup>~~~~~</sup>  
and James Naylor were then in those parts, <sup>1653.</sup>  
which raised his desire to see and hear one or  
other of them. Going to a meeting where <sup>Going to</sup>  
James Naylor was, he heard him explain the <sup>the North</sup>  
nature of the kingdom of God, and the work <sup>of England</sup>  
of regeneration; and though his words were <sup>hear James</sup>  
<sup>Naylor</sup> preach.  
not many, they were powerful, reaching the  
divine witness in his conscience. \* The subject  
was so clearly opened, and concurred with so  
many scriptures brought to William Edmund-  
son's remembrance, that he was thereby fully  
convinced, and thought all who heard his dis-  
course must needs confess it was the real truth.  
The impression on his spirit was deep and last-  
ing, and under the humbling and exercising  
effect thereof he returned home, having accom-  
plished his business in England. Upon his ar-  
rival his brother received him with the custo-  
mary salutation, but under his present exercise  
he could not return it in like manner; for being  
convinced of the necessity of being born again,  
in order to inherit the kingdom of heaven, he  
was affected with earnest desire after this happy  
condition, and imprest with inward anxiety, and  
that godly sorrow which works repentance, with  
a mixture of consolation, in feeling the divine  
mercy awakening his understanding, and  
strengthening his resolution to endeavour after  
this arduous attainment. Under this humbling  
conflict of spirit he sat down, his wife and bro-  
ther sitting by in silent astonishment at his vi-  
sible change.

VOL. I.

U

His

\* William Edmundson's journal, p. 7.

CHAP. <sup>d</sup> His sincerity was soon brought to the test.

XIII. When he came to the entry of his goods, he was, according to custom, required to enter them upon oath, but he being persuaded of the unlawfulness thereof, signified he could not swear, because Christ had forbidden it. This doctrine appeared strange to the officers, and no wonder, as it was the first time, in all probability, they had ever heard such a scruple advanced; and his deportment and plain address, standing covered before them, and addressing them after the usual way of this people, with the singular, *thou* and *thee*, was as offensive to them, as his refusal to swear appeared strange. He was not insensible of the contempt and aversion, he should expose himself to by a scrupulous adherence to the imputed singularities of his profession; and found it a strait path to tread, and was therefore engaged in mental prayer to the Lord, who (he writes) was pleased to administer strength and ability, to stand in the cross, and despise the shame, whereby he was preserved stedfast in his testimony to the truth, brought through the present trial without injuring his conscience, received his goods, and went home.

Remark.

It seems not improper here to remark, that these peculiar scruples before-mentioned in the demeanour of this people, contrary to the established customs of the nations at this day, have been (I think) ignorantly imagined to originate merely from an unmeaning affectation of singularity; but whosoever hath been conversant in the memorials these worthy men have left behind

<sup>d</sup> Journal, p. 9.

1653.  
Refuses to  
swear.

behind them, of their spiritual exercises, will ~~C H A P.~~ find sufficient grounds to deduce them from a better original, a conscientious conviction of rectitude and truth being in favour of them; too sincere for affectation, and too honest for flattery; intent (above all things) upon seeking the approbation of their Creator, and the testimony of a good conscience, by an unreserved conformity to his will in their actions, their words, and the very thoughts of their hearts, although as men they were not insensible to the feelings of humanity, and were many of them, at first, affected with the natural reluctance at the prospect of exposing themselves to the censure, the ridicule, and even the abuse of their relations and fellow-citizens, with whom they had before lived on good terms, by whom they had been respected, and with whom they had kept up an intercourse of mutual complaisancy; yet feeling no peace of mind but in adhering strictly to that which was manifested to their understandings as right, even to the jot and the tittle, they preferred the inward testimony of divine approbation, to human respect and every worldly consideration; and in the steady pursuit of this important attainment they were strengthened to take up the daily cross to that carnal disposition, which would win human honour at the risk of solid peace of mind. And apprehending their spirits divinely illuminated, to behold the polluted source from which these modes of complaisant adulation and address originated, and the unmeaning abuse or deceitful purposes to which they were applied, thought it their duty not to hide the candle under the bed of personal ease; but to bear

CHAP. open testimony for truth and sincerity, at the  
XIII. risk of ease, reputation, and the regard of  
man.

1653. In this respect the situation of William Edmundson must be peculiarly trying, circumstanced as he was, all alone, and without a second in similarity of sentiment or deportment, the wonder, the scorn, and gazing-stock to the world around him ; where the name of Quaker had but lately been heard of, and where it was presented to the imagination under all the veil of obloquy, which a precise and censorious age, or interested and exasperated ecclesiasticks thought proper to clothe it with. Besides these external probations he was at this time agitated with internal conflicts in his spiritual warfare, under the work of sanctification, and conviction in the sense of his being (although religiously inclined from his youth) yet short of that perfection of purity which by the divine light was discovered to his mind, as the requisite duty of every Christian to aspire after, and through the assistance of grace follow to the attainment thereof<sup>c</sup>; in which religious exercise he passed through a fight of afflictions, wherein he could find none to speak a word of comfort, or that had trodden in this strait path, his only consolation being the continued inward sensation of divine mercy, thus visiting, strengthening and animating his soul to the steady pursuit of its everlasting well-being. Many professors of religion came to carp at, dispute with him, and speak evil of the way he had embraced. Miserable comforters these, adding trouble to his sorrow.

<sup>c</sup> William Edmundson's journal, p. 10.

sorrow. But even these things wrought for C H A P. good. For the censorious reflections of the XIII. self-righteous professors, and the derision of the profane and irreligious, to which this society was at that time exposed, raised a general curiosity, and spirit of enquiry into their real principles and conduct, whereby several of the sober enquirers were undeceived, as to their mistaken notions of this people through misrepresentation; and finding him and his friends neither deluded nor deceivers, but men of sincerity and truth, joined with them in society.

<sup>1</sup>In the year 1654, Miles Halhead, James Lancaster and Miles Bateman travelled into Ireland, where they published the truth by preaching to the people in the cities, towns and villages, and before the magistrates, as they were occasionally brought into their presence, and many of the inhabitants hearkened to, and became convinced of the doctrine of the divine light, which they every where bore testimony to.

<sup>2</sup>In the same year William Edmundson remov- William Edmundson removes ing his habitation from Antrim to Lurgan, a meeting was kept in his house there, which was from An- the first settled meeting of the people called trim to Quakers in Ireland. This meeting was but small Lurgan, and at first, but their number increased, divers sober settles a people, who were seeking after the knowledge of God, joining with them. They held their meet- trim to Lurgan, and ing for some time in silent waiting upon the Lord, and felt his presence to comfort and strengthen them in their religious exercise, hav- ing no member concerned in the ministry, nor being,

<sup>1</sup> Journal, p. 10.

<sup>2</sup> Besse, v. 2. p. 457.

CHAP. being, since they had a regular meeting, as  
 XIII. yet visited by any from England. But it was  
 not long until William Edmundson received a  
 part in the ministry of the gospel, and was in-  
 fluenced, at times, to speak a few words for the  
 encouragement and edification of his friends,  
 although in weakness and fear. <sup>b</sup> Shortly after  
 he believed it his duty to bear a public testi-  
 mony to the truth in the public worship-house,  
 for which he was severely beaten by Colonel  
 Stewart; but his testimony was effectual to  
 the convincement of some of the auditory, in  
 particular two of them named Mark Wright and  
 Mark Sawyer followed him out of said worship-  
 house, and joined him in community.

John Tiffin  
comes over  
from Eng-  
land.

<sup>i</sup> Now John Tiffin came over from England, sat  
 with these friends in their meeting in Lurgan,  
 and sometimes spoke a few encouraging and  
 edifying words amongst them. William Ed-  
 mundson and he joined as companions in travel-  
 ing, and in the exercise of successful ministerial  
 labour, through much opposition both from the  
 priests and people. The former taking the  
 alarm at their doctrine, pointed against a hire-  
 ling ministry, and the lawfulness of tithes, or  
 compulsory measures to extort antichristian de-  
 mands under the gospel, exerted themselves to  
 incense the magistrates and rulers to persecution  
 against this people, as holding damnable doc-  
 trines: The latter, offended at the apprehended  
 rusticity of their address, frequently ill treated  
 them not only with abusive expressions, but often  
 with blows and stoning them.

They

<sup>b</sup> Rutty's Rise and Progres.

<sup>i</sup> William Edmundson's Journal, p. 14.

\* They went to Belfast (a town of great profession of religion, but very deficient in hospitality) not an inn nor public house in the town being willing to entertain them, one excepted; here John Tiffin lodged, and sought frequent opportunities to promulgate his doctrine there; but the inhabitants, full of their own righteousness, and looking at them through the medium of prejudice, shut their ears, their hearts and their houses against them. Thus at the beginning the way was strait and difficult, but the first of this people being men that truly loved and feared their Creator, all things wrought together for their good: For the general ignominy which the malevolence of their adversaries, who were many, loaded them with, and who were watching for their halting, was the means of increasing their circumspect care over their own words and actions, and over one another for good, to take away all just occasion of reproach; and as they were kept humble, walking in awful fear before the Almighty, and blamelessly before men, preaching in their lives and conversation, to the reaching the divine witness in many, by these means, as well as their doctrinal labours, several converts were brought over to join them; and this society gained ground, and prospered (through divine blessing) notwithstanding all the difficulties they laboured under. John Tiffin, having spent five or six weeks here, returned to England.

The next minister who came out of England, was Richard Clayton, who came directly to William Edmundson's, as he understood it, by the Lord's direction. William joined him in his travel on foot.

\* William Edmundson's Journal, p. 17.

CHAP. his travels on foot, through the county of Antrim to Colerain, where they preached through the street, for the inhabitants would not admit them into their houses, nor suffer them to lodge in the town; so they were obliged to take up their lodging at a cabin in the mountains, and next day they reached Londonderry, where they were hospitably entertained by one Evans, who with several of his family was convinced by them. They had two meetings in that city, both of which were attended by the governor, who with several others, acknowledged the truth of their doctrine, and demeaned themselves with kindness and affectionate regard towards them. From thence returning through the counties of Tyrone and Armagh, they came to the house of Margery Atkinson near Kilmore, where they had a meeting on the first day of the week, at which meeting several sober people were convinced, through the serviceable ministry of Richard Clayton, receiving the truth in the love of it. And having settled a meeting there (which in time became large) they took leave of each other, and soon after Richard Clayton returned to England.

Near Kilmore several convinced.

Now the belief in the inward principle of light and grace began to spread, and the professors thereof to encrease in their number in the northern parts, so that meetings begun to be settled in divers places hereaway. One at Gabriel Clark's, at Grange in the county of Antrim, and another at Archibald Scott's, at Toberhead, county of Londonderry. Convincement spread; and the resentment of the priests and high professors received additional heat from the observation of several leaving them; so that to avenge themselves, they procured the imprisonment

Meetings settled at Grange, county of Antrim, and Toberhead, county of Londonderry.

sonment of William Edmundson, in Armagh CHAP.  
jail. XIII.

<sup>1</sup>This year James Lancaster and John Tiffin came over from England the second time: They landed in the North, and came to Lurgan, where they had a meeting on the green, near the market place; here they were set upon by the populace, who beat the said friends and William Edmundson their townsman very severely, and drove them to the town's end, with intention to drive them out of it entirely; but the more sober part of the inhabitants rising to oppose them, prevented their design.

As yet the profession of those called Quakers had been confined to the province of Ulster; but now it began to extend to other parts, principally through the ministerial labours of Elizabeth Fletcher and Elizabeth Smith; Francis Howgill and Edward Burrough, who went over to that nation in the course of this year; the former are supposed to be the first of this society who had a meeting in Dublin in the chamber of Richard Fowkes near Plegate, and soon after a meeting was settled at George Latham's, near the same place. Their labours were also remarkably successful in the southern parts of that nation, being effectual to the convincement of many in Dublin and in the province of Munster, particularly William Ames who had formerly been a military officer, a bold and zealous man, and a teacher amongst the Baptists.

Francis Howgill and Edward Burrough also travelled southward into Munster; at Bandon, Francis Howgill was kindly entertained by Edward

<sup>1</sup> Rutty's Rise and Progress.

CHAP. \* Edward Cook, a man of good parts, a Cornet in  
 XIII. Oliver Cromwell's own troop, and receiver to  
 Lord Cork, and being convinced, he accompa-  
 nied him on the first day of the week to the  
 public worship, where Francis declared truth to  
 the congregation. <sup>m</sup> In conclusion Edward Cook  
 invited them to come to a meeting to be held at  
 his house that evening, to which accordingly a  
 great concourse of people resorted, to whom  
 Francis preached the gospel, and expounded the  
 Many con- way to life and salvation ; many confessed to the  
 vinced. truth of his doctrine, and joined in society with  
 the Quakers so called.

At Limerick  
 assaulted  
 and put  
 out of the  
 gates.

From hence they went to Limerick, and at-  
 tempting to speak in the public place of wor-  
 ship, were prevented by an assault of the people,  
 and next morning were put forth through the  
 gates. Edward Burrough preached through the  
 streets as they passed along, and without the  
 gates had an opportunity to preach to a great  
 multitude, several of whom were so reached by  
 his testimony, as to become profelytes to his  
 doctrine and profession.

From Limerick, I apprehend, they returned  
 to Cork ; but these their successful labours, and  
 the number of those who thereby were brought  
 to the acknowledgement of the truth of their  
 doctrines, alarming the jealousy of the priests or  
 public

\* The said Edward Cook embraced the truth with his  
 whole heart, and retained it, was given up to serve the Lord,  
 and lived and walked under the cross of Christ Jesus, in  
 great self-denial to the world and the glory and greatness of  
 it to his dying day, and laid down his head in peace with  
 God, and sweet unity with true hearted friends. Rutt's  
 Rise and Progress, p. 95.

<sup>m</sup> Rise and Progress, p. 95.

public teachers, by an order of government, at <sup>C H A P.</sup>  
 at their instigation, these two eminent ministers <sup>XIII.</sup>  
 of the gospel, were taken prisoners in Cork,  
 and sent under a guard from garrison to garrison  
 to Dublin, where they were committed to the  
 custody of Edward Mortimer, Serjeant at Arms,  
 until an order was procured from Henry Crom-  
 well, Lord Deputy, to banish them out of the  
 nation, and a guard of soldiers was appointed to  
 conduct them on shipboard, and so to be trans-  
 ported to England.

<sup>n</sup> As Edward Burrough had been a zealous ad-  
 vocate for the liberty of his brethren in divers  
 remonstrances to the ruling powers in England ;  
 so in his own case his fortitude, founded on con-  
 scious integrity, and internal conviction of in-  
 nocence, did not desert him : With strength of  
 reason, and the manly spirit of evangelical li-  
 berty, in a similar address to the present rulers  
 of Ireland, he pleaded his own cause, and that  
 of his fellow-sufferer, against the arbitrary ex-  
 ercise of power, in inflicting punishment without  
 legal conviction of any crime. Remonstrating,  
 that they were men free born, fearing God, and  
 working righteousness ; supporters of justice  
 and true judgment in the earth, subject to all  
 equal rule, and every just ordinance of man for  
 conscience sake. That they had come into Ire-  
 land under the best impressions, and with the  
 best views, with the message of the Gospel of  
 Christ Jesus, to turn men from darkness to light,  
 and to minister the word of reconciliation and  
 salvation freely, without gift or reward : That  
 they had travelled for this purpose six months in  
 fundry

<sup>n</sup> *Rise and Progress*, p. 100.

CHAP. sundry parts of the nation, through many sufferings and reproaches, preaching the kingdom of God, in sobriety, meekness, and the exercise of  
XIII. 1055. a pure conscience both in doctrine and conversation, appealing to all who had heard the one or beheld the other, as witnesses for them and their inoffensive and peaceable demeanour, and challenging even their bitterest enemies to prove the contrary. That notwithstanding their manifest innocence, upon malicious suggestions and informations, grounded upon no matter of fact, a warrant had been issued against them, as disturbers of the public peace, from the \* chief ruler and council of Ireland, by virtue whereof they were apprehended in the city of Cork, and transmitted under a guard through the country, towns and cities like the vilest criminals to Dublin, where also they were hauled by guards before the council as malefactors: That upon their examination there, none of these things whereof they were accused could be proved against them, nor were they, nor could they be convicted of the transgression of any known law; yet were they, without trial, without conviction, condemned to imprisonment, in order to be transported out of the country as vagabonds, a title applied to them by a gross misapplication and perversion of the term, being men of sufficient property and estate: For, (says he) of whom have we begged? to whom have we been burdensome? or whose bread have we eaten for nothing? or what evil have we done? In fine, making a solemn appeal to the reason and consciences of their persecutors for justice, and boldly demanding

\* Henry Cromwell, Lord Deputy.

manding their right and privilege, as freeborn C H A P. subjects, of their personal liberty, until they XIII. should be proved guilty by the law of equity or        that of the land, to which they professed subjec- 1655. tion, and that for conscience sake \*.

The same day that they were banished from Dublin, Barbara Blaugdon landed there, and went directly to the deputy's house, and with some difficulty got admittance to him : being introduced into the drawing-room, a scheme was laid to impose upon her, for as they knew she had never seen the deputy, another person (a priest) came out of the deputy's chamber covered, those that attended him standing bare-headed ; and as she did not immediately speak, some of those standing by, asked her *why she did not speak to their lord?* But she, having a sense of the intended deception, answered, *When I see your lord, I shall deliver my message to him :* Soon after the deputy himself came forth, and sat down on a couch, to whom she addressed herself, cautioning him, *to beware that he was not found fighting against God, in opposing the truth, and persecuting the innocent ; but, like wise Gamaliel, to let them alone ; for if it was of God, it would stand, but if of man it would fall.* Adding that the enmity was not so much in himself, but that he was incited by evil magistrates and envious priests : But in the mean time, in his name and under his authority, much injury was done to the people of God, all over the nation, and that at last it would lie heavy upon him.

She

\* This remonstrance may be seen at large in Rutty's history of the Rise and Progress of the Quakers in Ireland, as also an excellent Epistle to his Friends in that kingdom.

• Sewel, p. 110.

CHAP. She spake so powerfully, that the deputy appeared under much concern.

<sup>1655.</sup> Having now performed her service in Dublin, she went to Cork, where she had some relations and acquaintance; but her sufferings were great, for she was imprisoned almost wherever she came; and generally wheresoever she preached, it was attended with demonstration, and effectual to the convincement of some of the auditory.

<sup>1656.</sup> <sup>William Edmundson quits shop-keeping and takes a farm.</sup> <sup>P removes to the county of Cavan, and settles a meeting there.</sup> In the year 1656 William Edmundson apprehended it his duty to discontinue the business of shop-keeping, and take a farm; in order to strengthen and encourage his friends to faithfulness in the testimony they had conscientiously to maintain against the antichristian yoke of oppression, the enforcing the payment of tithes, under the dispensation of the gospel, as apprehending his endeavours to preserve them steadfast under their sufferings would be likely to have a more prevalent effect, when by being a sharer therein he should give force to his advice and religious concern, by his own example. With this view, he and some other friends, leaving the meeting at Lurgan, to which they belonged, well settled, and in a prosperous way, removed with their families, and took land in the county of Cavan, and settled a meeting in that county, and held meetings in divers places, whereby their profession gained ground, and the society enlarged its numbers, several being convinced, and associating with them.

<sup>1657.</sup> <sup>Thomas Loe.</sup> In the succeeding year the meetings of this people in Ireland were visited by Thomas Loe, from

from Oxford, an able and eminent minister of C H A P. the gospel, endued with spiritual discernment to divide the word aright, to the differing states of auditory. He travelled (partly on foot) through the greatest part of the nation, and by his powerful and prevailing ministry was instrumental to confirm and edify his friends, who were before gathered into the society, and to encrease their number by the convincement of others.

The next minister of note, who came from England was John Burnyeat from Cumberland, a man from deep experience of the work of sanctification, and the reception of an excellent gift in the ministry, eminently qualified to promote the work of reformation, and to publish the glad tidings of the gospel. He landed at Donaghadee in the province of Ulster, and travelled on foot, through divers parts of that province, and by means of his ministry many were converted from the vanity and evil of their ways. Thence he travelled southward into Munster, and back again into the North, and at Lurgan met with Robert Lodge, who was lately come over from England, and who was also an able minister of the gospel: They joined in travelling and in ministerial labour, promulgating truth, and convincing many. At Londonderry they experienced a very different reception from those who went thither before, these being refused entertainment, when known to be Quakers, so called, although they offered to pay for it. They went to the place of public worship on the first day, and had a good opportunity to publish their doctrine to the people; but at length the mayor sent his officers and forced them out of the city. They proceeded from thence to several other

Travels into  
Munster.

Joined by  
Robert  
Lodge.

At Londonderry  
meet with indis-  
pitable  
treatment.

Forced out  
of the city.

**C H A P.** other places in the province of Ulster, and then  
**XIII.** travelled southward to Dublin, thence westward  
~~~~~ to Galway, and from thence by Limerick to  
1659. Cork and Bandon, and then returned to the  
 North again. Thus with diligence and laborious  
 travels, through cold, hunger and hardship many  
 times (several parts of the country being mostly  
 uninhabited) and divers imprisonments, as at  
 Armagh, Dublin and Cork, for the space of  
 twelve months, they zealously exercised the ta-  
 lents they had received for the good of souls,  
 and the propagating truth and righteousness in  
 this land ; without any view to other reward,  
 than the inward peace resulting from the con-  
 scientious discharge of their duty in the sight of  
 God, who was pleased to bless their labours, to  
 the convincing and gathering many to the truth  
 they promulgated.

*William Edmundson and others removed from the county of Cavan to the Queen's county.*

*Meeting settled at Mountmellick.*

This year several of the friends who had re-  
 moved into the county of Cavan, being disap-  
 pointed by their landlord in not fulfilling his  
 covenant with them, left it, and settled in or  
 near Mountmellick in the Queen's county, viz.  
 William Edmundson, Richard Jackson, John  
 Edmundson, John Pim and sundry others ; and  
 several having been convinced in these parts be-  
 fore, a meeting was settled at Mountmellick,  
 which is since become large. The meeting which  
 they left at Cavan continued there until it was  
 lost by means of the war, friends who lived there  
 being driven from their habitations, and dispersed  
 into other parts.

Although the way was difficult to our first  
 friends in this nation, and they had a share in the  
 sufferings of their friends in England, yet it  
 doth not appear that persecution was either so  
 general

general or so violent as in the latter kingdom, which I am ready to attribute to the moderation and humanity of Henry Cromwell, at this time chief governor, more especially as we have fewer accounts of imprisonments and persecutions in the city of Dublin than in remoter parts, not so immediately under the eye of the government. The most remarkable cases that I meet with, besides those already mentioned, are those which follow :

<sup>1655.</sup> <sup>CHAP.</sup> <sup>XIII.</sup> <sup>1659.</sup> <sup>a</sup> Barbara Blaugdon landing a second time in this country, after narrowly escaping shipwreck off Dungarvan, came to Dublin, where she felt herself concerned to go to the court of justice, and exhort the judges to righteousness and equity in the discharge of their functions : But her <sup>Barbara Blaugdon</sup> exhortation was so ill received, that she was immediately shut up in a very dangerous and loathsome prison, where she lay upon straw, and when it rained, the wet and filth of the house of office ran in under her. She was arraigned and required to plead *guilty* or *not guilty*; to which she answered, "there was no guilt upon any one's conscience for what was done in obedience to the Lord;" which answer not satisfying, she was sent back to prison, where she suffered much. She was afterward imprisoned in Limerick, and when released thence returned to England; but in her passage thither was robbed by a privateer of all she had on board.

Edward Cooke, a soldier in Oliver Cromwell's army, being convinced of the principles of this people, was sent for before the general, where nothing appeared against him, but that he refused to pull off his hat, using the language of *thee* and *thou*,

X

E. Cooke turned out of the army and deprived of his pay.

<sup>a</sup> Besse, vol. ii. p. 459.

CHAP. <sup>XIII.</sup> *thou*, and declining the customary compliments ;  
 for these causes he was dismissed from the army,  
 and defrauded of his pay. Thus those soldiers,  
 who pretended once to fight for liberty of con-  
 science, became oppressors of other men's con-  
 sciences, as soon as they were thereby brought  
 into any practice contrary to their general op-  
 nions.

1656. William Edmundson travelling northward, came to a town called Finah, where the inn-keepers, when they perceived he was a Quaker, refused him lodging<sup>r</sup>, upon which he applied to the constable to provide him lodging as being a traveller, and having money to pay for it, and not without much entreaty obtained admittance into his house, being an ale-house ; into which when he entered, he found a company of troopers drinking, who received him with scoffs and impertinencies. They afterward took great offence at his singular address, one of them swearing *if he thou'd him again he would cleave his head.* And accordingly when in the course of conversation he used the term *thou* to him again, the trooper drew his sword ; but a corporal being present prevented him from mischief, ordered him to put up his sword, and causing the troopers to go to their quarters, he entered into discourse with him till late at night, was convinced, and came to meetings.

He proceeded to Belturbet, and had a satisfactory meeting there, but the provost of the town being invidiously disposed came with some rude people, broke up the meeting, and imprisoned both men and women all night in a very cold

<sup>r</sup> Rutty's Rise and Progress.

cold place, and it being a season of frost and snow, they were greatly pinched with the cold, especially the women. The next morning he set them all at liberty except William Edmundson, whom he set in the stocks in the market-place, where, the people gathering about him, furnished him with an opportunity to preach to them, who heard him with attention and sobriety, and reflected much upon the provost for abusing him.

The people in general appearing dissatisfied with the provost's treatment of William Edmundson, he sent his officer to let him out ; but as he had been thus made a public spectacle without the violation of any law, he would not submit to a release from a petty officer, till the provost who put him in came in person to take him out.

About this time Oliver Cromwell had published a declaration, "That such should be protected in their religion as owned God the Creator of all things, and Christ Jesus the Saviour of men, and the scriptures, &c." Wherefore when William Edmundson was set at liberty, the governor of the garrison, officers and principal inhabitants, had him brought before them to try him by the declaration, whether he and his friends were under Oliver's protection or not. The declaration being read, and William being called upon to answer to the particulars, gave them such satisfaction, that the governor and company gave judgment, they were under protection, and their religion was to be protected. The provost being present, was covered with shame and confusion at this oblique condemnation of his conduct.

C H A P.  
XIII.  
1656.  
Wm. Ed-  
mundson  
put in the  
stocks at  
Belturbet.

CHAP.  
XIII.  
1656.

\* By a general account published about this time, it appears that for speaking the truth in steeple-houses, markets and other places, ninety-four persons of this society had been sufferers by fines, whipping, putting in the stocks, imprisonment and loss of goods. That nineteen persons had been imprisoned for meeting to worship God in their own houses ; and that twelve had been stopped as they were passing the streets and highways about their lawful occasions, and committed to prison.

\* Besse.

CHAP.

## C H A P. XIV.

## NEW ENGLAND.

*Discovery of North-America.—First Planters of New-England.—John Robinson's Farewell-Admonition.—Emigrations multiply in the Reign of Charles I.—Reflection on the Spirit of these Colonists.—Roger Williams banished for his religious Opinions.—Schism at Boston.—Synod convened to decide upon it.—John Wheelwright summoned before the Court, disfranchised and banished.—John Goggeshal disfranchised.—Ann Hutchinson adopts Antinomian Opinions; summoned before the Court and condemned to Banishment; murdered by the Indians.—Some of the People professing Anabaptism are persecuted.—Three of them committed to Prison.—Law against Anabaptists.*

IN order more fully to elucidate this part of the history, it seems not improper to take a retrospective view of the first settlement of Europeans in this country of New England, one of the most considerable states of the late British dominions in North America.

\* The continent of North America was discovered by Sebastian Cabot, in the name of Henry VII. in the year 1497. It first received the name of

\* Guthrie.

CHAP. XIV. of Newfoundland, which is now appropriated solely to an island on its coast. It was a long time before any attempt was made to fix a settlement in this country. Sir Walter Raleigh first shewed the way by planting a colony in the southern part, which he called Virginia, in compliment to his mistress Queen Elizabeth, under which name at first the whole tract of land from the bay of Fundy to Florida was comprehended, and was distinguished only into South Virginia and North Virginia, which together contained the countries which came afterwards to be distinguished by the names of New England, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, Carolina and Georgia. King James I. incorporated two companies by patent, one for South Virginia, called the London Adventurers, and the other for North Virginia, who were distinguished by the name of the Plymouth Adventurers.

first planters of New England. <sup>b</sup> The first colonists who went over to people this latter country were a class of Puritans (so called) distinguished first by the name of *Brownists*, from Robert Brown their leader or teacher, and afterwards by that of Independents. A congregation of these in the eastern parts of England, viz. Nottinghamshire, Lincolnshire and Yorkshire, who had chosen John Robinson for their pastor, and William Brewster for their elder, to avoid the persecution they found themselves exposed to from the bishops in the year 1608, fled for refuge to Holland, and fixed their residence at Leyden, where they enjoyed the privilege of performing their worship in their own way without molestation.

After

<sup>b</sup> Neale.

After some years residence here, Robinson C H A P. XIV. apprehending their church would naturally be brought to a dissolution, and their religion be lost in a strange land, and having little prospect of obtaining \* an establishment or even a toleration for them in England, encouraged his followers to transport themselves and their families into some part of the British dominions in America, where they might live by themselves, and have a prospect of encreasing their number by the future resort of their friends and countrymen of like principles, as to an asylum from the sufferings and persecutions, which their dissent from the national worship still rendered them obnoxious to.

Being thus brought to a resolution to emigrate, 1620. they sent over agents to treat with the Virginia company in England for a large tract of land in the northern part of that country, representing themselves as considerable for their numbers, inured to hardships, industrious and frugal ; and embarking on a religious motive, they hoped for the blessing of the Almighty, and resolution to surmount all difficulties. These representations induced the company to comply with their proposal ; and they agreed among themselves to divide, that one party should go before, to prepare for the reception of the rest. Robinson, their pastor, staid with the residue at Leyden, and

\* These are Neale's expressions, and carry an appearance as if these emigrants had more extensive views in their emigration than merely withdrawing from the reach of episcopal power ; and their subsequent conduct seems to afford ground for the supposition, that even then they were not exempt from thoughts of establishing amongst themselves an independent dominion in church and state.

CHAP. and Brewster their elder put himself at the head  
XIV. of the emigrants.

1620.

When the time of their separation was come, they appointed a day of fasting and prayer, to implore a blessing on their hazardous undertaking ; upon which occasion their pastor preached to them from Ezra, viii. 21. concluding his discourse with the following exhortation, which if the chiefs of his flock and their successors had, in the administration of their government in their new colony, paid a proper attention to, they had rescued themselves from much guilt and censure ; but as their pastor did not live to join them, it seems as if the good man and his admonitions were too soon forgotten ; although, from the christian temper that animates them, well worthy of remembrance.

J. Robinson's fare-well admonition to the emigrants.

" Brethren, (says he) we are now quickly to part from one another, and whether I may ever live to see your faces on earth, the God of heaven only knows ; but whether the Lord hath appointed that, or no, I charge you before God and his blessed angels, that you follow me no farther than you have seen me follow the Lord Jesus Christ.

" If God reveal any thing to you by any other instrument of his, be as ready to receive it, as ever you were to receive any truth by my ministry ; for I am verily persuaded, I am very confident, the Lord has more truth yet to break forth out of his holy word. For my part, I cannot sufficiently bewail the condition of the reformed churches, who are come to a period in religion, and will go at present no further than the instruments of their reformation. The Lutherans can't be drawn to go beyond what Luther saw : what-  
" ever

“ ever part of his will our great God has re- C H A P .  
 “ vealed to Calvin, they will rather die than XIV.  
 “ embrace it ; and the Calvinists, you see, stick  
 “ fast where they were left by that great man,  
 “ who yet saw not all things. 1620.

“ This is a misery much to be lamented ; for  
 “ though they were burning and shining lights  
 “ in their times, yet they penetrated not into  
 “ the whole counsel of God ; but were they now  
 “ living would be as willing to embrace further  
 “ light, as that which they first received. I be-  
 “ feech you remember it, it is an article of your  
 “ church covenant, *That you be ready to receive*  
 “ *whatever truth shall be made known to you from*  
 “ *the written word of God.* Remember that,  
 “ and every other article of your sacred cove-  
 “ nant : But I must herewith exhort you to take  
 “ heed what you receive as truth. Examine it,  
 “ consider it, and compare it with other scrip-  
 “ tures of truth, before you receive it ; for it  
 “ is not possible the christian world shoud come  
 “ so lately out of such thick antichristian dark-  
 “ ness, and that perfection of knowledge should  
 “ break forth at once.

“ I must also advise you to abandon, avoid  
 “ and shake off the name of *Brownist* : 'Tis a  
 “ meer nickname ; and a brand for the making  
 “ religion, and the profellors of it, odious to the  
 “ christian world.”

These first settlers with their families made about one hundred in number, and having taken shipping from Plymouth, they distinguished the place of their settlement in New England by the name of New Plymouth. Their number gradually encreased by the arrival of other emigrants from England ; but it was in the succeeding reign of Charles the First that emigrations became far <sup>In the reign  
of Charles I.  
emigrations  
increase.</sup> 1629.

CHAP.  
XIV.  
1629.

far more numerous and more considerable. The King having committed the direction of ecclesiastical affairs into the hands of the bishops, and more particularly to William Laud, then bishop of London, and afterwards archbishop of Canterbury ; his intemperate bigotry to useless and unmeaning ceremonies ; his aversion to the Puritans, to whom his innovations in worship were an abomination ; and his determined resolution to force them into an uniformity after his superstitious scheme, impelled him to prosecute them with rigorous severity in the high commission court and Star Chamber, two very arbitrary and illegal courts, that seem to have been established for the purpose of subduing the people to an absolute subjection to the crown in temporals, and the mitre in spirituals.

To evade the persecution of this furious prelate and his associates, many of the Puritan teachers with their hearers resolved to withdraw to New England for sanctuary. About the year 1625, *White*, minister of *Dorchester*, encouraged by the success of Plymouth colony, projected a new settlement at *Massachuset's Bay*, as an asylum for the silenced ministers, and engaging several persons of consequence in the project, a patent was obtained from the King by the adventurers.

One Roger Conant was first sent over to establish a settlement in 1625, and after him John Endicot with recruits and provisions in 1628. And in the next year the grand colony sailed in six ships, and arriving at their intended settlement founded there the towns of Salem, Charlestown and Boston.

Reflections  
on the spirit  
of their co-  
lonists.

Religion (saith Neale) being the chief motive of their coming over into these parts, they resolved to settle that in the first place ; accordingly,

C H A P.  
XIV.

1630.

ly, with the approbation of John Endicott, their deputy governor, they adopted the church order and discipline settled by their brethren at Plymouth, upon the \* system of their former pastor, John Robinson; however, disregarding his farewell admonition, their present teachers and governors seem to have been a self-righteous generation, so far from the diffidence in their present attainments, and that openness to the reception of the further revelation of truth, which he recommended; that in their own opinionated apprehensions of their own purity and ultimate refinement of orthodoxy, they watched with a jealous eye every conscientious dissent from their establishment, every attempt towards a further reformation. In their new religious system, with all their regard to the written word, they appear to have overlooked the principal moral rule of the gospel, " whatsoever ye would that men should do unto you, do ye even so to them." For these religious dissenters from established forms of worship, would admit of no dissent from that way or form they established in their new colony; notwithstanding their violent exclamations against the tyranny and oppression of the bishops, in endeavouring to force an uniformity in worship by penal laws and coercive measures, they were no sooner invested with the power, than they trod in the very same steps, being

\* John Robinson was the father of the independents, being the first that beat out a middle way between Brownism and Presbytery; he maintained the lawfulness of separating from those reformed churches amongst which he lived, yet did not deny them to be true churches: he allowed the lawfulness of communicating with them in the word and prayer, but not in the sacraments and discipline.

CHAP. being equally rigorous in exacting uniformity,  
 XIV. and as severe in enacting and executing penal  
 ~~~ laws against con-conformists. Whilst under  
 1634. sufferings, they pleaded for liberty of conscience  
 to themselves, which when in a capacity to  
 exercise authority, they refused to others\*. Of the justice of these remarks, severe as they  
 may seem, the sequel furnishes too many melan-  
 choly instances.

Roger Wil-  
liams ba-  
nished.

Long before those called Quakers came amongst them, and before they existed as a society, as early as the year 1634, about four years after their settlement here, they banished

Roger

\* Guthrie's remarks on this subject are a confirmation of these observations. The inhabitants of New England, who fled from persecution, became in a short time tainted with this liberal vice, and were eager to introduce an uniformity in religion among all that entered their territories.

We have also a full proof of this in a letter dated August 16, 1677, from William Coddington, governor of Rhode-Island, to R Fretwell :

" These forty years to my knowledge, they [the rulers of New-England] have had many warnings from the Spirit of the Lord in his servants, all crying out against their idolatrous practices, confused principles and fighting spirit, long before that reproachful name of *Quakers* got up, and before they were sent of God to call them to repentance and amendment of life; but these they evilly entreated, as they have done John Wheelwright, Anne Hutchinson and others, banishing them at a court at Boston in 1636, Henry Vane, governor, and twelve magistrates, twelve priests, and thirty-three deputies: " Notwithstanding the governor and myself, who was then a magistrate and treasurer of the county, being against it, had for two days the major-part of the magistrates and deputies holding with us; till the third day the priests gained over two of the magistrates to their side, and so got a majority, who proceeded to banish them, although we entered our protest aginst it."

Roger Williams, pastor of their church at Salem, C H A P. XIV.  
 for his religious opinions †. In the year 1637 a more extensive schism broke out, which divided the inhabitants of Boston and the adjacent country into two parties, under the denominations of *Antinomians* and *Legalists*, or such as were Neale. (as they termed it) for a covenant of grace; and such as were for a covenant of works: And as it was no unusual thing with this body to mix politics with their religion, (the general prelude to persecution) the Antinomians exerted themselves to keep Henry Vane, (afterwards a distinguished character in the long parliament) their present governor in power, as he openly espoused their doctrines, and protected their preachers: On the other side, the opposite party employed their efforts to eject him, and substitute \* John Winthrop as governor in his stead, and

† These opinions (according to Neal) were “ that it was not lawful for an unregenerate man to pray, nor for good men to join in family prayer with those they judged unregenerate. That it was not lawful to take an oath before a magistrate. That the patent they had from King Charles for their lands was invalid, and an instrument of injustice to the natives, the king having no right to dispose of their lands to his subjects without their consent. That magistrates had nothing to do with matters of the first table, but the second only; that there should be an unlimited toleration for all religions, and to punish men for matters of conscience was persecution.” I see nothing in these opinions deserving banishment or even censure. Neal’s history of New-England, v. i. p. 159.

\* John Winthrop, although chosen governor for the purpose either of suppressing the Antinomians, or at least depriving them of any powerful support, seems to have been a man of too much good sense and moderation to be a sanguine persecutor. To keep up his party, and to accommodate the furious temper of the priests, he was led too far into the persecuting

CHAP. and with some difficulty succeeded in the election : Winthrop being settled in the government, XIV. and the Antinomians having lost their chief 1637. protector, a synod was convened to consider the controverted points, and give judgment upon them. This synod consisted not only of the ministers and delegates, but the magistrates also, under colour of keeping the peace, were present, and had liberty to speak if they thought proper. By this synod, composed chiefly of their antagonists, the Antinomian opinions to be sure were condemned. This point being carried, the next step was to summon the principals of the party before the secular court, which was removed for the purpose to Newtown, (since called Cambridge) from fear that they had too many partisans in Boston. And three of the Boston deputies having sided with these Antinomians, in the first place were expelled the court ; before the court thus culled for the purpose, John Wheelwright, colleague with John Cotton as preacher at Boston, being an Antinomian, was summoned to appear and give answer, whether he would acknowledge his offence in preaching up these new doctrines, stiling his discourse a seditious sermon, or abide the sentence of the court, his answer being  
 " that he had been guilty of no sedition nor  
 " contempt ; that he had delivered nothing but  
 " the truth of Christ, and for the application  
 " of

John  
Wheel-  
wright  
summoned  
before the  
court.

persecuting measures adopted at this time, but lived long enough to see and condemn his error ; for when advanced in years and infirm, Dudley and others applied to him to sign an order for the banishment of one Mathews, a Welch priest, he refused, saying, *he had his hands too much in such things already.*

“ of his doctrine, that it was made by others C H A P.  
 “ and not by himself:” And refusing, at the XIV.  
 desire of the court, to go into voluntary banish-  
 ment, they sentenced him to be disfranchised  
 and banished the jurisdiction. John Coggeshall,  
 one of the late Boston deputies of this party,  
 was disfranchised for a speech he made in the  
 court, notwithstanding his pleading his privilege  
 as a member. And Aspin, another of them,  
 for signing a remonstrance in favour of Whee-  
 wright, was disfranchised and banished. Wil-  
 liam Baulston and Edward Hutchinson, two of  
 the serjeants of Boston, for signing the said re-  
 monstrance, were turned out of their places,  
 disfranchised and fined, the former in 20l. the  
 latter in 40l. Hutchinson acknowledging his  
 fault had his fine remitted. The exiles found a  
 friendly reception with Roger Williams before-  
 mentioned at Providence for the present, and  
 afterwards purchased a settlement at \* Rhode-  
 Island

\* As Neale, from whom I take this account, follows Cotton Mather, an apologist for these severities, there is reason to suspect his relation of partiality; if we had accounts on the other side to balance against this, I doubt not but these proceedings would appear in even a more unfavourable light. Of these first settlers in Rhode-Island he copies this character from Mather. Cotton Mather represents them as a generation of *Familists, Libertines, Antinomians and Quakers*, whose posterity for want of schools of learning and a public ministry, are become so barbarous as not to be capable of speaking either good English or good sense. They have an extreme aversion to a public ministry, and would never till of late allow any such to preach among them. This seems the language of animosity and contempt; but I have before me a very different description of these Rhode-Islanders drawn up by a more judicious pen in my opinion: “ Several slips, torn from the original government of New-England, planted themselves “ in

**C H A P.** Island of the natives, and fixed themselves and  
**XIV.** families there.

**1637.**  
 Ann Hutchinson.

The treatment of a female, whose name was Ann Hutchinson, was even more severe, and her fate more melancholy. The account Neale gives of her case exhibits much of the invective style throughout, being probably copied after the New England apologists, and her imputed errors in the highest colouring to palliate the severities of the persecuting priests and magistrates. Yet we find no crime laid to her charge, only speculative opinions, which, if erroneous, more properly demanded the labours of the ministers to confute and convince her, than the power of the magistrate to chastise. Her case is represented to be this :

The members of the church of Boston met once a week, to repeat the sermons they had heard at their public worship, and to debate upon the doctrines contained in them. These meetings being peculiar to the men, some zealous women thought it might be useful for them to hold such meetings among themselves ; accordingly this Ann Hutchinson set up one in her house, grounding her practice on the apostle's

“ in a new soil and spread over the country ; such was that  
 “ of Rhode-Island, whose inhabitants were driven out from  
 “ the Massachusett colony (for that is the name by which the  
 “ government first erected in New-England was distinguished)  
 “ for supporting the freedom of religious sentiment, and main-  
 “ taining that the civil magistrate had no right over the spe-  
 “ culative opinions of mankind. These liberal men founded  
 “ a city, called Providence, which they governed by their  
 “ own principles; and such is the connection between justness  
 “ of principle and external prosperity ; that the government  
 “ of Rhode Island, though small, is extremely populous and  
 “ flourishing.” Guthrie.

tle's direction, for the elder women to teach the younger. The novelty of the undertaking, and the fame of the woman, quickly gained her a numerous audience, to hear her pray and repeat John Cotton's sermons, and make her reflections upon them. She adopted and propagated the devoted opinions of the Antinomians, which (the aforesigned author faith) under a pretence of exalting the free grace of God destroyed the practical part of religion, and opened a door to all sorts of licentiousness. But this was not all—she and her adherents insinuated themselves into families, and under a shew of humility and self-denial, *craftily* undermined the reputation of the \*best ministers in the country, calling them *legalists*, †*Men that were not acquainted with the spirit of the gospel, nay, that were unacquainted with Christ himself.* For these offences she was summoned to appear before the court, by which she was condemned to banishment, being ordered to depart the jurisdiction within six months. She was afterwards excommunicated, with eight or nine more.

CHAP.  
XIV.  
1637.

Adopts An-  
tinomian  
opinions.

Summoned  
before the  
court, and  
condemned  
to banish-  
ment.

Being thus driven from her habitation to seek a residence where she could find one, she removed

VOL. I. Y

\* Yet this author represents her as a great admirer of John Cotton, one of the best, if not the very best, minister at this time in New-England.

† That there was too much truth in this description of these ministers, we have reason to conclude from the foregoing abstract of W. Coddington's letter to R. Fretwell, p. 332, where we find the priests day after day exerting their efforts and earnest solicitations to procure a majority to banish her and the forementioned, which proceeding of theirs amounts to a demonstration that they *were not acquainted with the spirit of the gospel.*

C H A P. moved first to Rhode Island, and thence to one  
 XIV. ~~~~~ of the Dutch plantations called Hebgate, where  
 soon after the Indians coming down, murdered  
 her and her whole family, to the number of  
 fifteen persons.

1637.  
 Murdered  
 by the In-  
 dians.

1646. <sup>d</sup> In 1646 they made a law or order for uniformity in religion, by imposing a penalty of 5s. a week upon such as came not to hear the established ministers, thus intrenching themselves against any further discoveries of truth and religion by this penal law.

1650. But notwithstanding these harsh precautions to maintain an uniformity, they found other men influenced by religious considerations, to take the same liberty here they themselves had done in England, to dissent from their established religion, as they had done from that of the bishops. In the year 1650 some of the inhabitants adopted the opinion of the Anabaptists, withdrew from the established worship, and set up a separate meeting, whereupon Obadiah Holmes, one of the principal dissenters, was excommunicated, and then summoned to appear before the court at Plymouth, by which he and his associates were commanded to desist from their separation, and neither to ordain officers, nor to baptize, nor to break bread together, nor to meet on the first days of the week; but looking on this command as an arbitrary violation of their christian liberty, they pleaded, that in their separation they were actuated by the conviction of their own consciences, and that it was better to obey God than man.

Some of the  
 people turn  
 Anabaptists,  
 and are per-  
 secuted.

John

<sup>a</sup> Besse.

John Clarke from Rhode Island, Obadiah Holmes aforesaid, and John Crandall, sometime after travelling into the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, were apprehended in their meeting at the house of William Witters of Lynn, on the first day of the week; and the constable who had them in custody, in the afternoon carried them by compulsion to the public worship, where, signifying they could not join with them in their service, they were next day brought before a magistrate, who committed them to Boston prison by the following mittimus :

C H A P.  
XIV.  
1651.

“ By virtue hereof you are required to take John Clarke,  
 “ into your custody from the constable of Obadiah  
 “ Lynn or his deputy, the bodies of John Holmes and  
 “ Clarke, Obadiah Holmes and John Crandall, John Cran-  
 “ and them to keep until the next county dall com-  
 prifon.  
 “ court to be held at Boston, that they may  
 “ then and there anfwer to such complaints as  
 “ may be alledged against them, for being  
 “ taken by the constable at a private meeting  
 “ at Lynn on the Lord’s day, exercising among  
 “ themselves, to whom divers of the town re-  
 “ paired, and joined with them, and that in  
 “ the time of public exercise of the worship  
 “ of God; as also for offensively disturbing  
 “ the peace of the congregation, at their  
 “ coming into the public meeting in the time  
 “ of prayer in the afternoon, and for faying  
 “ and manifesting that the church of Lynn was  
 “ not constituted according to the order of our  
 “ Lord; and for such other things as shall be  
 “ alledged against them concerning their fe-  
 “ ducing and drawing aside of others after  
 “ their erroneous judgment and practices, and  
 “ for fuspicion of having their hands in re-bap-

C H A P. XIV. tizing of one or more among us, as also for  
 ~~~~~ neglecting or refusing to give in sufficient  
 1651. security for their appearance at the said court.  
 " Hereof fail not at your peril. 22d of the 5th  
 " month, 1651.

" Robert Bridges.

" To the keeper of the prison at Boston."

In a short time after their commitment they were brought before the court and fined, viz. John Clarke 20l. John Crandall 5l. and Obadiah Holmes 30l.; and in case of failure or refusal of payment to be whipped. The prisoners agreed not to pay their fines, but to abide the corporal punishment the court had sentenced them to; but it is said some of Clarke's friends paid the fine, without his consent; Crandall was released upon promise to appear at the next general court, and Holmes received thirty lashes at the whipping post. After the execution of his sentence, two of his friends who were attending him back to prison took him by the hand into the market place, and praised the Almighty for his courage and constancy, for which they were summoned before the general court the next day, and fined each of them 40s. or to be whipped; they also refused to pay their fines, but these being paid for them they were dismissed.

Holmes  
whipped,  
and two of  
his friends  
fined.

Remark.

I imagine those historians who have celebrated the Independents for originally adopting the doctrine of toleration must have been unacquainted with, or overlooked this part of their history. If their principles were really such as we have seen them described, that every man had

had a right to direct his conscience, and interpret the scriptures according to his own light, &c. we see their practice in England, and still more here, as being more out of the reach of censure or controul, evidently militating against these principles. We see them, as well as others before them, for the sake of uniformity, violating the natural rights of mankind, and punishing men, not for disturbing the state, but merely for differing in their sentiments of religion, of which the following law, enacted at this time and on this occasion, is a confirming evidence :

“ It is ordered by this court and authority Law against  
“ thereof, that if any person or persons within Anabap-  
“ this jurisdiction shall either openly condemn  
“ or oppose the baptizing of infants, or go  
“ about secretly to seduce others from the ap-  
“ probation or use thereof, or shall purposely  
“ depart the congregation at the administration  
“ of that ordinance, or shall deny the ordi-  
“ nance of magistracy, or their lawful right  
“ or authority to make war or punish the out-  
“ ward breaches of the first table, and shall  
“ appear to the court wilfully and obstinately  
“ to continue therein after due means of con-  
“ viction, every such person or persons shall be  
“ sentenced to banishment.”

CHAP.  
XIV.  
1651.

## C H A P. XV.

*Anne Austin and Mary Fisher, two of the People called Quakers, arrive at Boston.—Order concerning them.—Their Books burned, and they themselves imprisoned.—Stripped and searched for Tokens of being Witches.—Eight more Friends arrive at Boston.—First Law against Quakers.—Nicholas Upsal testifies against it, for which he is fined and banished.—Anne Burdon, Mary Clarke, and three others whipped.—Addition to the Law. Lawrence and Cassandra Southick and their Son Josiah whipped.—William Shattock sent to the House of Correction, whipped and banished.—Sarah Gibbons and Dorothy Waugh.—Thomas Harris imprisoned and cruelly whipped.—Second Law against Quakers.—Barbarous Treatment of William Brend.—The People discontented at this Cruelty.—The Magistrates endeavour to appease them.—Priest Norton takes the Jailer's Part.—Samuel Shattock, Lawrence Southick and others committed to Prison.—Their Letter to the Magistrates.*

C H A P. BY this retrospective view of the first inhabitants of New England, it is clearly manifest, that a persecuting spirit had found admission amongst these refugees from persecution, long before any of the people called Quakers came into those parts, and did not originate from any necessity occasioned by their extravagant principles or practices, as the New England apologists represent them.

We

We have seen the inimical disposition of the priests and ruling powers in England, and their inveterate prejudice toward this people ; these being many of them of the independent class, doubtless kept up a correspondence with their brethren in New England, and it is probable filled their letters of intelligence with invectives against the Quakers ; for it is manifest they had received an unreasonable prejudice against them before ever they saw their faces ; and had condemned their principles as *heretical*, before they had any fair opportunity of knowing what these principles were.

But buoyed up as they were with the high notion of their own righteousness, and the ultimate refinedness of their religion, they seemed fixed in the determination to give no admission to any other doctrines, than those which their magistrates, under the influence of their teachers and synods, thought proper to establish. No sooner was the intelligence given of two female Quakers, Anne Austin and Mary Fisher, being arrived from Barbadoes, in the road before Boston, than Richard Bellingham, the deputy governor, immediately ordered them to be detained on board, and dispatched officers to search their trunks and chests, who taking away about one hundred books, carried them ashore. On this extraordinary occasion, as Neal terms it, a council extraordinary was convened by the governor, as if to provide for the security of the state against the alarming danger threatening it from the arrival of two harmless women, which issued the following order :

“ At

Anne Austin  
and Mary  
Fisher ar-  
rive at Bos-  
ton.

CHAP.  
XV.  
1656.

" At a council held at Boston 11th July,  
" 1756.

" Whereas there are several laws long since  
" made and published in this jurisdiction,  
" bearing testimony against *hereticks* and *erro-*  
" *neous persons*; yet notwithstanding *Simon*  
" *Kempthorn* of *Charles-town*, master of the  
" ship *Swallow* of *Boston*, hath brought into  
" this jurisdiction, from the island of *Barba-*  
" *does*, two women, who name themselves,  
" *Anne*, the wife of one *Austin*, and *Mary Fisher*,  
" being of that sort of people commonly known  
" by the name of *Quakers*, who upon exami-  
" nation are found not only to be transgressors  
" of the former laws, but to hold very dange-  
" rous, *heretical* and blasphemous opinions;  
" and they do also acknowledge that they came  
" here purposely to propagate their said errors  
" and *heresies*, bringing with them and spread-  
" ing here sundry books, wherein are contained  
" most corrupt, *heretical* and blasphemous  
" doctrines, contrary to the truth of the gospel  
" here professed amongst us. The council there-  
" fore tendering the preservation of the peace,  
" and truth enjoyed and professed among the  
" churches of Christ in this country, do hereby  
" order :

" *First*, That all such corrupt books as shall  
" be found upon search to be brought in and  
" spread by the aforesaid persons, be forthwith  
" burned and destroyed by the common execu-  
" tioner.

" *Secondly*, That the said *Anne* and *Mary* be  
" kept in close prison, and none admitted com-  
" munication

“ munication with them without leave from  
 “ the governor, deputy governor or two ma-  
 “ gistrates, to prevent the spreading their cor-  
 “ rupt opinions, until such time as they be de-  
 “ livered aboard of some vessel, to be trans-  
 “ ported out of the country.

C H A P.  
XV.  
1656.

“ *Thirdly*, The said *Simon Kempthorn* is here-  
 “ by enjoined, speedily and directly, to trans-  
 “ port or cause to be transported the said per-  
 “ sons from hence to Barbadoes, from whence  
 “ they came, he defraying all the charges of  
 “ their imprisonment; and for the effectual  
 “ performance hereof he is to give security in  
 “ a bond of 100l. Sterling, and on his refusal  
 “ to give such security he is to be committed  
 “ to prison till he do it.”

In consequence of this order their books were  
 burned by the hangman, and the said two wo-  
 men were committed to prison by the deputy  
 governor as Quakers, upon no other proof  
 than that one of them said *thee* to him, where  
 their confinement was so rigorous that no body  
 was admitted to converse with them, even  
 through the window. Their pens, iak and  
 paper were taken from them, and they were  
 debarred the use of a candle by night. Next,  
 in violation of every rule of decency, modesty  
 and humanity, they stripped them naked, under  
 the pretence of searching for tokens of their  
 being witches\*, and misused them in this search  
Stripped  
and search-  
ed for  
witches.

in

\* These people, so ready to load the Quakers with reproachful epithets, and impute the original of their religion to a spirit of delusion, were themselves given up to strong and fatal delusions in respect to witchcraft, which some time after affected them so universally that the magistrates, priests and

CHAP. in a shameful and barbarous manner. They  
XV. were not only debarred of light and conversa-  
~~~~~  
1656. tion, but in a great measure of sustenance also,  
which exciting the compassion of Nicholas Up-  
fal, an ancient inhabitant of Boston, he pur-  
chased of the jailer the liberty of sending them  
provisions, at the extravagant rate of 5s. per  
week, for fear they should be starved. After  
about five weeks confinement, one William Chi-  
cester, master of a vessel, was bound in a bond  
of 100l. to carry them back to Barbadoes. And  
the jailer kept their beds and their bible for his  
fees.

A few days after the departure of these wo-  
men, viz. on the 7th of the month called  
August,

and people of all ranks contributed to spread the mischievous  
deception so far as to introduce general confusion and dismay;  
and after their hands were tied up from hanging of Quakers,  
they hanged one another for witchcraft and sorcery on vague  
accusations. Not by the misguided fury of a superstitious  
populace; but with all the formalities of a solemn trial, by  
the hands of the common executioner nineteen persons of  
both sexes suffered death in little more than three months  
time; eleven more lay under condemnation, and one hun-  
dred and fifty in prison untried. Most of these unhappy  
persons asserted their innocence of the matters laid to their  
charge to the last, many of them appear to have been of re-  
putable lives and circumstance in the world. And the prin-  
cipal tokens of fascination recorded in their history appear  
to be in the prosecutors, the judges and the jury, who could  
condemn to death so many innocent persons upon such idle  
tales and senseless absurdities as were given in evidence  
against them; and after all, when the people were so far  
restored to their senses as to make public recantation of  
their erroneous proceedings, their justice went no farther than  
words. The accused persons, being some of them people of  
property, had all their effects seized by the officers, of which  
afterwards, even those, whose innocence was acknowledged,  
could never recover any, or but a very inconsiderable part.

Neal

August, eight others of the same persuasion, C H A P. namely, <sup>d</sup> Christopher Holder, Thomas Thurston, XV. William Brend, John Copeland, Mary Prince, Sarah Gibbons, Mary Witherhead and Dorothy Wugh, arrived at Boston from London, in a ship whereof Robert Locke was master. He would not suffer them to go on shore, till he had delivered a list of their names to the governor, who sent officers on board to search their boxes, chests and trunks for books, and to bring those eight, together with Richard Smith, an inhabitant of Long Island, before the court, then sitting at Boston. After some examination they were sentenced to banishment, and to be detained in prison till they might be sent back in the same ship, the master whereof was required to give security to take them back at his own charge, which he refusing, was committed to prison, but after some days confinement, fearing the loss of his voyage, he complied. They were detained in prison about eleven weeks, the jailer being empowered to search their boxes, &c. as often as he saw meet, for pen, ink and paper, papers and books, and take them away. While they were in prison a law was made to punish them, being the first general law made against *Quakers*.

By this law it was enacted, that if any master or commander of any ship, bark, &c. should thenceforth bring into any harbour in their jurisdiction any Quakers, he should pay the sum of 100l. to the treasurer of the country, or be imprisoned 'till the payment should be made or secured. That any Quaker coming into the country should be committed to the house

<sup>d</sup> Besse.

1656.  
Eight more friends arrive at Boston.

CHAP. XV.  
1656. house of correction, severely whipped, constantly kept to hard labour, and debarred of all intercourse with any person whatever. Importers of Quakers' books or writings, or whoever should disperse or conceal such, to be fined 5l. If any inhabitants of the Colony defended the books or opinions of the Quakers, they were to be fined 40s.; for the second offence 4l. and for the third to be banished.

## Remark.

The uncharitable and unchristian temper, which actuated these colonial legislators, is not more obvious in the severity of the penalties enacted against this body of people and their adherents, than in the illiberal, reviling expressions and opprobrious nicknames whereby they are described as a cursed *sect of hereticks, blasphemous hereticks, who hold devilish opinions*: Such terms of reproach are by men of candour and moderation generally looked upon not so much a picture of the qualities of those they are applied to, as of the intemperate bitterness of their spirits, who degrade themselves so far as to make use thereof.

Nicholas Upshaw testifies against the law, The law being proclaimed by beat of drum in the streets of Boston, Nicholas Upshaw aforesaid, being affected therat, publicly testified his disapprobation, for which being next morning sent for to the general court, he told them, *The execution of that law would be a forerunner of a judgment upon the country, and therefore in love and tenderness, which he bore to the people and place, desired them to take heed, least they were found fighters against God.* \* For this he, though one

\* Neal, notwithstanding his laying claim to the character of impartiality, on this and many other occasions, betrays a manifest

one of their Church-members, and of a blameless conversation, was fined twenty pounds, and three pounds more for not coming to church, from which he had withdrawn, out of a conscientious dissent from a religion without charity.

They next banished him their jurisdiction, allowing him, who was an infirm ancient man, but one month for his departure, driving him into exile in the winter. Application being made to Endicot for a mitigation of his fine, he rudely answered, *I will not bate him a groat.* He removed to Rhode-island, where he met with that hospitality and compassion from an Indian Prince, and a Pagan, which was refused from his countrymen, pretending to refined christianity, who kindly invited him to fix his residence with him, and he would make him a warm house, adding his admiration at the *Englishmen's notion of the divine being, who dealt so cruelly with one another about their God.*

---

*Pudet hæc opprobria nobis,  
Et dici potuisse, et non potuisse refelli.*

That such reproaches stain the christian name,  
And stain with reason, is the christian's shame.

The

manifest partiality in favour of this government, and thus apologizes for their cruel treatment of this ancient man. " This was looked upon as an attack upon the legislature, " which might be attended with fatal consequences ; for if " people might arraign the laws of their country in such an " open manner, the authority of the government would be " quickly destroyed."

C H A P.  
XV.  
1656.

C H A P.

XV.

1657.

*Ann Burden going to Boston to recover some debts is imprisoned and banished.*

<sup>c</sup> The first of this people who came to New-England, after the making of this law, was Ann Burden, widow, who although no preacher, nor administering any occasion of offence, or any cause of being termed a disturber of church or state, being an honest inoffensive woman, coming over on the reasonable errand of recovering or gathering in some debts due to her in that country ; yet she was taken up, and carried before Bellingham, the deputy governor, who upon examining her, although it was manifest, she had lawful business, and he could find no fault or occasion of offence in her, only as she was a Quaker, he said that *she must abide their law*, and committed her to prison, where she was detained a quarter of a year, though sick at the same time. During her imprisonment, some of her acquaintance had procured of her debts in goods to the value of about forty pounds, which, when she was ordered to be sent away, she desired liberty to carry with her to Barbadoes, to be disposed of, being not fit for the English market ; this reasonable request was denied her, and a master of a ship compelled to carry her to England, against her will and without her goods. And when he enquired who should pay for her passage, the magistrates bade him *take so much of her goods as would satisfy him* : <sup>f</sup> Which however he would not do, having so much dependance on her honesty, that though he could not compel her to pay, as she was sent away without her own consent, yet that she would not let him be a loser, and he was not disappointed in his expectation.

<sup>c</sup> Besse, v. ii. p. 181.

<sup>f</sup> Besse. Sewel.

pectation. But after her departure, the officers C H A P. took away from the person intrusted to convey her goods to Barbadoes, as many as were worth 6l. 10s. for her passage, which not they, but herself had paid: 7s. for boat-hire, although the master had offered to take her in his own boat, and 14s. for the jailer. Thus banished, and spoiled of a considerable part of her property, and deprived of the possession and disposing of the residue, no part whereof had come to her hands several years after, if at all.

XV.

1657.

<sup>s</sup> The next of the Quakers who came to Boston, Mary Clark, and suffered the extremity of the law, was Mary Clark, from London, who came thither under a religious concern to warn those persecutors to desist from their iniquity. She delivered her message to merciless men, who rewarded her with twenty stripes of a \* three corded whip on her naked back, and detained her in prison about twelve weeks. <sup>h</sup> Christopher Holder and John Copeland, with others who had been banished, under a firm persuasion of duty and full assurance of faith in divine support, under whatsoever suffering they might be permitted to pass through, having returned, were whipped with thirty stripes each, the executioner measuring his ground, and inflicting the strokes with all his strength, which cut their flesh so severely, that a woman fainted away at the sight. After this they were kept three days without food or water, so close that none might speak with them, lodging on the bare boards, without bed or straw.

Mary Clark,  
Christopher  
Holder and  
John Cope-  
land sever-  
ly whipped.

New Eng-  
land judg-  
ed.

<sup>s</sup> Besse, v. ii. p. 181.

\* The cords of these whips were usually as thick as a man's little finger, and the stick sometimes so long that the executioner made use of both his hands to strike with it.

<sup>h</sup> Sewel.

**C H A P.** straw. In this miserable confinement, they remained nine weeks, without fire, in the cold winter season. Richard Dowdney was taken up at Dedham, and brought to Boston, and though he had not been there before, was also punished with thirty cruel stripes, and sent away with the former two, with threats of *cutting off their ears* in case they returned, which threats they afterwards made good.

At the general court held in Boston the 14th of October, this year, they made the following addition to the former law : “ That if any per-

**Addition to the law.** “ son should entertain any Quaker or Quakers  
 “ or other blasphemous hereticks, knowing them  
 “ so to be, every such person should forfeit to  
 “ the country 40s. for every hour’s entertaining  
 “ or concealment, and be committed to prison  
 “ till the forfeiture be fully paid and satisfied.  
 “ If any Quakers should presume, after they had  
 “ once suffered the law, to return into their  
 “ jurisdiction, if a male, he should have one of  
 “ his ears cut off for the first offence ; the other  
 “ ear for the second offence ; if a female to be  
 “ severely whipped for the first offence ; the  
 “ like punishment to be repeated for the second.  
 “ Both male and female moreover to be sent to  
 “ the house of correction, and kept to hard la-  
 “ bour till they can be sent away at their own  
 “ charge. For the third offence their tongues  
 “ were to be bored through with an hot iron.  
 “ That every Quaker arising from among them-  
 “ selves should be dealt with, and suffer the  
 “ like punishments as the law provides against  
 “ foreign Quakers.”

**1658.** These several persecuting laws were not suffered to lie as a dead letter, but the same wrathful

wrathful and vindictive spirit, which had dictated them, was manifested in the unmerciful execution thereof: No age, no sex, no circumstance could move these unmerciful persecutors to compassion; but the objects of their spoiling, imprisoning or whipping furnished them almost daily employ. To recite at full length all the instances of their cruelty would be tedious and disgusting; a summary review will evidence the truth of this description.

C H A P.  
XV.  
1657.

<sup>i</sup> The severities already inflicted on the members of this society, had so affected many of the inhabitants of this colony, that they withdrew from their public assemblies, and met on the first day of the week to worship quietly by themselves, for which they were fined 5s. per week, and imprisoned. Particularly Laurence and Cassandra Southick, an aged couple (who in the last year had been imprisoned and fined for entertaining Christopher Holder and John Cope-land) with their son Josiah, were sent to the house of correction, whipped in like manner as those before mentioned, and had their goods taken to the value of 4l. 15s. for not coming to church. For the same cause Edward Harnet, aged sixty-nine, and his wife, seventy-three years of age, had 37s. taken from them, without regard to their circumstances, which were but mean, or their age, which would naturally excite tenderness.

William Shattock a shoe-maker, <sup>k</sup> being found on a first day of the week, quietly fitting alone in his own house, in the time of their worship, and being too poor to pay the 5s. a week, was

Laurence  
and Caf-  
sandra  
Southick  
and their  
son Josiah  
whipped  
and fined.

Edward  
Harnet.

William  
Shattock  
sent to the  
house of  
correction,  
whipped  
and banish-  
ed.

VOL. I.

Z

sent

<sup>i</sup> Besse, vol. ii. p. 184.

<sup>k</sup> J. Whiting.

**C H A P.** sent to the house of correction, cruelly whipped,  
**XV.** and then kept to hard labour, the profits whereof  
**1657.** the jailer detained to his own use, leaving his  
family, a wife and four small children, who  
had nothing but their labour to subsist on, in  
want. At last he had only three days time as-  
signed him, to depart out of their jurisdiction,  
to which hard condition he was necessitated, in  
order to be in a capacity to support himself  
and family, to submit. Sarah Gibbons and  
Dorothy Waugh, for speaking a few words at  
the conclusion of one of their lectures in Bos-  
ton, were also sent to the house of correction,  
kept three days without any food; they were then  
cruelly whipped, and kept three days longer with-  
out victuals, although they offered to purchase  
them. Sarah, when brought before Endicott and  
the court, at the end of the first three days, re-  
monstrating against the jailer's cruelty, received  
no redrefs from this tyrannical governor, but an  
ill-natured reply, that *he mattered not.*

**1658.**  
Thomas  
Harris im-  
prisoned  
and cruelly  
whipped.

\* Thomas Harris, of Barbadoes, in the public  
meeting place at Boston, after the priest had  
done, having warned the people of *the dreadful,*  
*terrible day of the Lord, which was coming upon*  
*that town and country,* was presently hauled out  
by the hair of the head, and sent to prison,  
where he was shut up in a close room, excluded  
like the rest from all company. Next day he  
was cruelly whipped, and then shut up eleven  
days more, five of which he was kept without  
bread, because he refused to work for the jailer,  
and probably had been starved, had not some  
humane people privately conveyed him some  
food through the window by night. Reduced

to

to great weakness by long fasting and the torture of whipping, the jailer inured to cruelty and unfeeling barbarity, insisted on his working (although disabled by his abusive treatment) and upon his refusal, gave him, weak as he was, twenty-two blows with a pitched rope, and some days after fifteen stripes with a three corded whip\*. CHAP. XV.  
1658.

On

\* I think Neal's relation of this poor man's case demands some animadversions. " Harris (says he) like the rest of his brethren, would not strike a stroke in prison, *he would suffer any thing, but do nothing*; nay so stubborn were he and his friends that they would neither pay the fines that were laid upon them, nor be at the charge of transporting themselves out of the country." This author professes to give an \* IMPARTIAL account of the affairs of New England, to treat the † MISTAKES which the government fell into with regard to the Quakers and Anabaptists with freedom. But I think this and many other passages of his work, nay the general turn of expression through the whole narration of their treatment of the Quakers, and Anabaptists also, betrays a partial bias. Small blemishes (for argument's sake admitting them such) on one side exaggerated with severe acrimoniousness of expression, and the greatest enormities which human nature can be capable of, barbarous cruelty and inhumanity, on the other, softened in palliative terms, are no instances of impartiality; but manifest the writer to be under the influence of an undue prepossession in favour of a party. The forecited reflections appear to me evidently partial and unfair. These original Quakers moved in a sphere superior to the walk, or even the conception of, the persecuting professors of religion, however ostentatious, or that of the wise men of this world, however puffed up by their knowledge, without charity: It was their solicitous and unremitting endeavour to trace out the plain way to heaven through all attendant afflictions and tribulations on earth, even that way which the vulture's eye hath not seen nor any ravenous beast, nor persecuting spirit trodden in; but wherein the way-faring man though a fool shall not err. Careful and circumspect to do no evil, and sincerely disposed to

Z 2

obey

\* Title page.

† Preface.

CHAP. On the 20th of 3d month this year, another  
 XV. law was made, which as a specimen of the tem-  
 per,  
 1658.

obey the will of God, as the means of finding peace and acceptance with him; in obedience to his requirings, as they in the sincerity of their hearts believed, they were engaged to go to and fro, to propagate righteousness, and to convince the professors of christianity of the insecurity of trusting in any profession of *religion without holiness*. Conscious of the purity and disinterestedness of their motive, and in the discharge of duty, endeavouring to keep a conscience void of offence toward God and toward man, they justly thought these New-England laws founded in injustice, and the penalties inflicted with inhumanity, a palpable infringement of the universal laws of God and nature: They knew themselves to be innocent of just offence to God or man; in this view to be active in their own punishment, they thought a tacit acquiescence and confession of guilt, which their consciences witnessed they were free from: As faithful martyrs they patiently suffered any thing, that unreasonable men invested with arbitrary power might be permitted to lay upon them, for their open testimony to the truth, or against error; but they would do nothing that might imply an acknowledgement of guiltiness of any crime, which they believed themselves in no degree guilty of; And what in this conduct is justly blameable? It was the only way left them under the administration of unequal rule to assert their innocence, to keep the reputation of that truth they maintained, their conversation and their consciences unspotted, which was a concern nearer to their hearts, than to rescue their bodies from torture.

This author should have first demonstrated the laws to be reasonable and just, before he censured these men for declining a voluntary submission thereto; whereas the unreasonableness thereof was so palpable, that he cannot help owning it in different places: Yet from his manner of expression, it seems as if i admitted of no dispute, that it was both reasonable and equitable that they should pay the fines imposed upon them for no other crime than their religious dissent from the establishment, and absenting from their public worship, which to have voluntarily done, would be a tacit acknowledgement of error in their dissent. He should have proved this a crime, before he condemned their non-compliance with the punishment; but he

per, the measure of charity and urbanity actu- C H A P.  
ating this legislature, take at length as fol- XV.  
lows.

1658.

" At a Court at Boston the 20th of May, 1658.

" That *Quakers* and such ACCURSED HERE- Second law  
" TICKS, arising among ourselves, may be dealt against  
" with according to their deserts, and their \* pesti- Quakers.  
" lent errors and practices may be speedily pre-  
" vented,

he could not do this without condemning their persecutors also, whom he justifies under the same circumstance. To tax them with stubbornness in refusing so unjust a requisition as to pay the charges of their own transportation out of the country, is so absurd, so contrary to reason and every natural and humane rule that it needs no refutation; and yet he censures them for this, as if it were their indispensable moral duty. He goes on, " They were as perverse and obstinate in pri-  
" son, as out of it, insomuch that the jailer was forced to  
" lay the case before the magistrates, who ordered him to  
" whip them twice a week, &c. But Harris and his friends  
" were not to be tamed by these methods, but resolved to die  
" rather than submit, and one of them was almost whipped to  
" death upon this order; but when Harris had suffered a se-  
" cond whipping, some of his friends paid his charges, and  
" so he was dismissed. And this became afterwards the  
" usual practice of the Quakers not to pay their own fees,  
" but to suffer others to do it for them."

\* Pestilent errors and practices, diabolical doctrines.] These are no more than hard names, without application or other meaning, than that the framers had imbibed an intemperate and undeserved bitterness of spirit against this people, without due examination into their principles or practices. If they were so pestilent, pernicious and diabolical, they were the more easily exposed and refuted. And their pastors (so termed) had manifested a more becoming zeal, in exercising christian endeavours to preserve their flocks from infection, by pious exhortations, by exposing the ill consequence of their *pernicious ways*, and refuting their diabolical doctrines, than by applying to the secular power to repress by violence, doctrines which they were unable or too idle to refute by argument.

CHAP. " vented, it is hereby ordered, as an addition to  
 XV. " the former laws against Quakers, That every  
 ~~~~~ 1658. " such person or persons professing their *pernici-*  
           " *ous ways*, by speaking, writing, or meeting on  
           " the Lord's day, or at any other time, to  
           " strengthen themselves, or seduce others to their  
           " *diabolical do&ctrines*, shall after due means of  
           " conviction incur the penalty ensuing, that is,  
           " every person so meeting shall pay to the coun-  
           " try for every time 10s.; and every one speak-  
           " ing in such meeting shall pay 5l. a-piece; and  
           " in case any such persons had been punished by  
           " scourging or whipping the first time, accord-  
           " ing to the former laws, they shall still be kept at  
           " work in the house of correction till they put  
           " in security, by two sufficient men, that they  
           " shall not vent their hateful errors, nor use their  
           " sinful practices; or else shall depart the juris-  
           " diction at their own charges: And if any of  
           " them return again, then each such person shall  
           " incur the penalties of the laws formerly made  
           " for strangers."

Barbarous  
treatment  
of William  
Brend.

But of all the instances of barbarous cruelty that in the records of this furious government disgust the tender feelings of humanity, the treatment of William Brend is scarcely exceeded, if not unparalleled, in the history of civilized government.

In the latter part of the 5th month this year, William Brend and William Leddra at the house of Robert Adams in Newbury, by desire of the inhabitants, had a conference with a priest, in the presence of one captain Gerish, who had promised them protection from suffering for that conference; yet because they did not comply with his orders to depart the town immediate-  
 ly,

ly †, he violated his engagement in sending them by a constable to Salem, where being interrogated by the magistrates, *Whether they were Quakers?* they answered, *We are in scorn called so.* Then it was objected to them, that they held dangerous errors, as denying Christ, who suffered death at Jerusalem, and the scriptures. Boldly contradicting this charge, they asserted that, *They owned Jesus Christ, who suffered death at Jerusalem, and owned the scriptures also.* Notwithstanding their denial of this false accusation, and the confession of the magistrates, that they found no evil in them, they were committed to prison there, and thence transmitted to the house of correction in Boston, where they were required to work; but they being not free to submit to this requisition, as being convicted of no crime, the jailer, who sought his gains from their labour, would allow them no victuals, though they offered to pay for them, telling them, *it was not their money, but their work which he wanted.* Five days they were kept from food, and then received twenty stripes with the three-corded whip. Some time after he let them know, *they were at liberty to depart, upon paying their fees, and hiring the marshal to conduct them out of the country.* This unreasonable condition they were not free to comply with, but signified their willingness to accept their liberty, if it were freely granted.

Next day this most cruel and inhuman jailer put William Brend, a man in years, in irons, neck and heels so close together, that there was only room for the lock that fastened them, and kept

† Quere, How far was this different from the tenet, held in abhorrence by all Protestants, That no faith is to be kept with hereticks?

CHAP.  
XV.  
1658.

**C H A P.** kept him in this painful posture from five in the  
 XV. morning till after nine at night, above sixteen  
 1658. hours. Next morning he insisted on William's  
 falling to work for him, disabled by the preceding  
 cruel treatment, which he refused to do,  
 whereupon this \* brutal jailer took a pitched  
 rope, about an inch thick, and gave him twenty  
 blows over his back and arms with all his strength  
 till the rope untwisted : Then he fetched another  
 rope thicker and stronger, and with the utmost  
 violence, foaming at the mouth with passion to  
 distraction, laid on his bruised body fourscore  
 and seventeen blows more, by the report of other  
 prisoners, who with grief and compassion beheld  
 this cruel abuse of an honest man, who had done  
 nothing worthy of bonds, till his strength and his  
 rope failed him, and the poor man's back and  
 arms were so reduced to one gore of blood, that  
 the sign of a particular blow could not be dis-  
 tinguished, he desisted not ; and even then desist-  
 ed with passionate menaces of repeating equal  
 cruelty the next day. But he had already gone  
 too far ; an higher power, who limits the raging  
 sea,

\* What is most amazing, this jailer, so destitute of every symptom of humanity, was a pretender to religion, and was careful that very morning, after satiating his vengeance on this poor man, to address himself to his *morning prayer* ; but to what purpose, the prophet *Isaiah*, in the name of the Almighty, in the following strong reproof, hath plainly declared, “ *When you make many prayers, I will not bear : your hands are full of blood.* ” Such a religion afforded just grounds for the following reproof of Humphrey Norton, delivered at the close of one of their lectures : “ *Verily, this is the sacrifice which the Lord accepts not ; for while with the same spirit that ye sin, ye preach, and pray and sing, that sacrifice is an abomination to the Lord ;* ” for which he received his fifteen lashes instead of ten.

sea, saying, " Hitherto shalt thou go, and no far- C H A P.  
 " ther," here set bounds to the raging fury of this XV.  
 barbarous executor of vengeance, by raising help ~~~  
 from an unexpected quarter. 1658.

I have already apprised my readers, that in my remarks on the present ruling powers, I mean not to throw reflections on any body of people; but only persecutors and fomenters of persecution. I am persuaded that, amidst too much insincerity in the profession of religion, while the grasping at undue exercise of temporal authority was the end in view, there were multitudes among the independents, who were more sincerely religious, and secretly regretted the extremities, to which these rulers stretched their authority. In the present case, the persevering inhumanity of this jailer towards this inoffensive sufferer had so far exhausted his natural strength, that he fell down under his hands so extremely weakened, that for some time he lost his sight, hearing and feeling, turned quite cold, and had about him all the symptoms of a dying man.

The noise of this cruelty getting abroad, the murmurs of the people broke out into a general outcry against it, which caused the governor to send his surgeon to the prison to examine his condition, who, despairing of his recovery, reported, that *the flesh would rot off his bones, ere the bruised parts could be brought to digest.* This report exasperated the people to that degree, that the magistrates, to appease them and prevent a tumult, set up a paper at the meeting-house doors and other public places, signifying their dislike of this abominable cruelty; and that *the jailer should be dealt with at the next court day.* But this paper was soon after taken down at the instigation of their chief priest, John Norton, a principal

Priest Norton takes the jailer's part.

The people discontented at this cruelty.

The magistrates endeavour to appease them.

CHAP. principal promoter of the persecution from the  
 XV. beginning, who on this occasion manifested himself as destitute of common humanity, as of  
 1658. christian charity, in the following cruel, unjust and unmeaning parallel between the sufferer and the pretended cause of his suffering, *William Brend* (said he) *endeavoured to beat our gospel ordinances black and blue ; if then he be beaten black and blue, it is but just upon him, and I will appear in his behalf that did it.* The ridiculous absurdity of this nonsensical reflection would only merit contempt, if the inveterate bitterness thereof, exciting to cruelty upon cruelty, did not extort abhorrence. It is therefore no cause of admiration, that under such teachers the magistrates, priest-ridden, and stimulated to rage by their inflammatory discourses, were so prompt to persecution ; that blind zealots, led by blind guides, should with their leaders fall into the ditch of error, in treating with avenging wrath the promulgators of truth.

In the mean time *William Brend* miraculously recovering, the dissatisfaction of the people dying away, and the magistrates recovering from the panick into which the apprehension of his dying by the jailer's cruelty had thrown them, persisted in the same line of cruelty ; instead of calling the jailer to account as they had promised, they strengthened his hands by the following order :  
 " That the jailer, if the Quakers refused to work,  
 " should whip them twice a week, the first time  
 " with *ten* lashes, the next time with *fifteen*, and  
 " so each time with *three* more till they would  
 " work ;" but to preserve some appearance of disposition to moderate the jailer's fury, they ordered that he should wain two constables to oversee

oversee the execution. This order was executed C H A P.  
XV.  
1658.  
and exceeded upon William Leddra \*, Thomas  
Harris, Humphrey Norton and John Rouse<sup>1</sup>,  
who

<sup>1</sup> Sewel.

\* Neale goes on, (see note on T. Harris) "They were as  
" perverse and obstinate in prison as out of it, insomuch that  
" the jailer was forced to lay the case before the magistrates,  
" &c &c." as in the note referred to.

" One of them was almost whipped to death."] This was William Brend, above mentioned, whose particular grievous suffering he could hardly be ignorant of, as he quotes *Bishop's New Eng. judged*, frequently, and consequently had read it, whose account corresponds with the preceding recital: Yet he briefly passes it over thus: "William Brend and William Leddra were sent to the house of correction at Boston; and having received ten lashes, were told they might have their liberty, paying their fees, and hiring the marshal to convey them out of the country; but they refused to depart, and were therefore whipped more severely, till some of their friends laid down the money, and so they were discharged."

After reviewing my foregoing relation of the case of W. Brend, as I find it related by W. Sewel, Jos. Besse, and in *New Eng. judged*, which all in the general correspond, and which last was published near the time of these transactions, and the veracity thereof never called in question, that I have heard of: On comparing this narration of Neale's therewith, we plainly discover the partiality of his pen, passing over in silence, or slightly noticing in softened general terms, all the instances of their barbarity which shock humanity, to avoid exposing the memory of the perpetrators thereof to the infamy naturally attendant on such actions, or even to screen them from every imputation of guilt or blame, his relation bearing a complexion as if the unhappy sufferers were alone blameable. If his state of the case is not evidently very partial and unfair throughout, let the reader judge upon the comparison thereof with the account in the treatise, entitled *New England judged*, which he quotes in marginal references almost from page to page as his authority. Neale says, "after having received ten lashes they were told they might have their liberty, &c." which leads us naturally to imagine this offer was made them immediately after the whipping, which was not

the

CHAP. who each of them received the first time fifteen stripes instead of ten; but we have no account of either jailer or constable being called to

1658.

the case as represented in that treatise: \* "Having whipped them, the jailer locked them up in a close room, dark and without air, in the hot summer season, from food and friend, till the fourth day following, (two days) then he told them they were *clear*, paying their fees (who owed him none) and hiring the marshal to convey them out of the country," (which they were not free to do, as having done nothing worthy of bonds or banishment.) But if they were *clear*, having suffered the penalty of their unauthorised inhospitable law, what right had this hypocritical jailer to inflict further punishment upon them? They were now in the most favourable light on his side, simply his debtors for a trifle, and what right could he, or the most strenuous apologist for him, claim beyond that of detaining them in prison for their debt unpunished, unrestrained from food, which they were willing to purchase but were not suffered. But after this, his declaring them *clear*, it was that William Brend *was whipped almost to death*, as before described. Neale's mutilated account of this transaction is to me a plain evidence of his partiality: He says, "one of them was almost whipped to death:" He had read Bishop's account, Why not tell who it was and how? Why pass over the sufferings of William Brend, when he undertakes to relate it in so cursory a manner, but to cover the cruelty of his persecutors and endeavour to fix a stigma on the poor man as the author of his own sufferings? "They refused to depart, and were therefore whipped more severely." This, by our account, is a false state of the case: They did not refuse, but signified their willingness to depart, if they might freely; but this was refused *them*, except on unreasonable terms, they could not in conscience comply with; neither can I discover upon what authority (for he cites none) he asserts "that their friends laid down the money, and so they were discharged." The authority he generally quotes says no such thing as to William Brend, and it is so contrary to the practice of these, I understand by his friends, that I shall believe it a misrepresentation, till I have stronger evidence of its truth than D. Neale's bare assertion.

The

\* New-England judged, p. 64, 65.

to account for transgressing the limitation of their C H A P. XV.

About this time there was a meeting at the house of Nicholas Phelps, in the woods, about five miles from Salem, and upon the information of one Butter, the six following residents were taken up and committed to prison, Samuel Shattock, Laurence Southick, and Cassandra his wife, Josiah their son, Samuel Gaskin and Joshua Buffum, who being kept close in the house

1658.

Samuel  
Shattock,  
Laurence  
Southick,  
&c. com-  
mitted to  
prison.

The like account we have in Harris's case ; " Some of his friends paid his charges, and so he was dismissed. And this became afterwards the usual practise of the Quakers, not to pay their own fees, but to suffer others to do it for them." And he quotes *New-England judged* for his authority ; but how justly will best appear from the transcript of the passage in that treatise referred to, which is as follows : " Which bloody cruelty, (viz. of repeated whipping) so affected the inhabitants of Boston, to see new stripes on old sores, and some of the old sores upon them, when they came to be whipped the second time ; that they paid the charge required for them, as they usually did, as to all that were in prison, that they might be set free." Now by the term, HIS FRIENDS, is generally understood, and I suppose he would have us understand, that others of the Quakers paid their charges to redeem them from prison ; whereas it is plain, that George Bishop means some compassionate inhabitants of Boston (not Quakers) of whom many were discontented, and ashamed of the cruelty of their rulers, and out of commiseration to the unhappy and innocent sufferers, paid their fees, which they were not free to pay themselves, to rescue them from under the hands of men insatiate in cruelty : But the Quakers looking upon the payment thereof, as giving away the cause of innocence, neither paid them for themselves, nor one for another, although they sympathised in each others sufferings ; but indeed they shewed their sympathy but badly, if they could pay at all, that they let them be whipped almost to death before they interceded in their favour. Further, this representation of Neale's insinuates an appearance of insincerity, the very reverse of their real character.

CHAP. house of correction, during the heat of the sum-  
 XV. mer, from their husbandry, after three weeks  
 1658. confinement, reprefented their case to the court  
 in the following letter :

“ This to the Magistrates at the Court in Salem.

“ Friends,

“ Whereas it was your pleasure to commit  
 Letter from the pris- us, whose names are under-written, to the  
 ers to the magistrates. house of correction in Boston, although the  
 “ Lord, the righteous Judge of Heaven and  
 “ Earth, is our witness that we have done  
 “ nothing worthy of stripes or of bonds ; and  
 “ we being committed by your court to be  
 “ dealt withal as the law provides for foreign  
 “ Quakers, as ye please to term us ; and having  
 “ some of us suffered your law and pleasures,  
 “ now that which we do expect is, That whereas  
 “ we have suffered your law, so now to be set  
 “ free by the same law, as your manner is with  
 “ strangers, and not to put us in upon the  
 “ account of one law, and execute another law  
 “ upon us, of which according to your own  
 “ manner we were never convicted, as the law  
 “ expresses : If you had sent us upon the ac-  
 “ count of your new law, we should have  
 “ expected the jailer’s order to have been on  
 “ that account, which that it was not appears  
 “ by the warrant which we have, and the pu-  
 “ nishment which we bare, as four of us were  
 “ whipped, among whom was one that had  
 “ formerly been whipped ; so now, according  
 “ to your former law, friends, let it not be a  
 “ small thing in your eyes, the exposing as  
 “ much as in you lies, our families to ruin.

Its

“ It’s not unknown to you, the season and the time of the year, for those that live of husbandry, and what their cattle and families may be expos’d unto; and also such as live on trade: We know, if the spirit of Christ did dwell and rule in you these things would take impression on your spirits. What our lives and conversations have been in that place is well known; and what we now suffer for, is much for false reports, and ungrounded jealousies of heresy and sedition. These things lie upon us to lay before you: As for our parts, we have true peace and rest in the Lord in all our sufferings, and are made willing in the power and strength of God, freely to offer up our lives in this cause of God, for which we suffer: Yea, and we do find (through grace) the enlargements of God in our imprisoned state, to whom alone we commit ourselves and families, for the disposing of us according to his infinite wisdom and pleasure, in whose love is our rest and life.

“ From the house of bondage  
“ in Boston, wherein we are  
“ made captives by the wills  
“ of men, although made  
“ free by the Son. John 8.  
“ 36. In which we quietly  
“ rest, this 16th of the 5<sup>mo</sup>  
“ 1658.

“ Laurence Southick,  
“ Cassandra Southick,  
“ Josiah Southick,  
“ Samuel Shattock,  
“ Joshua Buffum.”

Upon

XV.  
1658.

C H A P.  
XV.  
1658.

Again com-  
mitted to  
prison and  
punished  
various  
ways.

Upon this representation Samuel Shattock and Joshua Buffum were released, but the other three arbitrarily detained in prison. It was not long till those who had been released were sent back to rejoin their former companions in prison, for absenting from their public meetings, and meeting by themselves contrary to law; for which they were each fined by the court at Ipswich 5s. for absenting from their worship by the law of 1646, and 10s. each for meeting by themselves. After this they proceeded to condemn them to punishment upon their last law against Quakers, as being such. Upon which they demanded a fair trial by a jury, and evidence to prove them such as that law described, viz. *cursed hereticks, who hold blasphemous opinions, and promulgate diabolical doctrines*; but this just demand would not be granted: Broadstreet intimating the court would find out an easier way to discover a Quaker than by *blasphemy*, (a confession which it was easier to charge than to prove) so concluding them Quakers from appearing with their hats on, the court, without any further proof or enquiry, sentenced them to be whipped with ten stripes a piece. About three weeks after they were brought before the general court at Boston. From which they repeated their demand of a fair trial, and received a second refusal; they remonstrated against the unjust punishments, which had been inflicted upon them; they refuted their charges; they maintained, beyond contradiction, that they had already suffered the punishments prescribed by their laws, and therefore had a just claim to their liberty: Although the court was in no wise inclined

inclined to admit their just claim, they were reduced to a nonplus, to find a pretext of any plausible complexion for adding punishments beyond law to the various penalties of their unrighteous laws. Wherefore they continued them in prison, to consider what further measures to take with them.

The next day was their lecture day at Boston, at which Charles Chauncey, the president of their college or university, preached an occasional lecture for the purpose of furnishing a palliative for inflicting additional punishments upon them, by the following savage and uncharitable comparison: " Suppose ye shou'd " catch \* six wolves in a trap, and ye cannot " prove that they killed either sheep or lambs ; " and now you have them they will neither " bark nor bite ; yet they have the plain mark " of wolves. Now I leave it to your considera- " tion (said he) whether you will let them go " alive, yea or nay ?" Which strange reasoning applied, as intended, to the case of the prisoners, amounts to this: " You have six Quakers in " your custody, and you have already punished " them as far as the law authorizes you ; you " can prove nothing really criminal in their " conduct, and their demeanour in your hands " is inculpable : Yet they have the plain marks " of Quakers, and therefore you are to con- " sider, whether it be expedient to let them go " after suffering the punishment of former laws,

C H A P.  
XV.  
1658.

Lecture,  
at which  
Charles  
Chauncey  
preaches an  
occasional  
sermon.

VOL. I.

A a

" or

\* Alluding to the six prisoners, against whom they could prove no offence of any consequence, much less any crime worthy of stripes or bonds.

¶ Sewel, p. 196.

C H A P. " or hold them fast till some severer laws be  
XV. " enacted to inflict heavier punishments upon  
1658. " them." How inconsistent are the inferences  
naturally arising from this strange parallel with  
the duty of his station, as a tutor of youth or  
minister of the gospel. And whatever his cha-  
racter might be as a scholar, little credit can  
accrue to him as a lawyer or a minister: To  
propose the punishing of men, not for what they  
had done, but what they might do, is so evident-  
ly preposterous, so opposite to the spirit of law  
and gospel, morality and religion, that one  
might wonder how it could enter into any  
man's heart to conceive, or how his tongue  
could be brought to utter it upon so solemn  
an occasion, as that of a religious exercise. But  
we have herein one instance among many of the  
spirit of these New-England priests, ever ready  
to add fewel to the strange fire of persecution in  
the magistrates, and not only to foment their  
sanguinary measures, but often to be the first  
proposers and promoters of them. This lecture,  
with other efforts of the priests, prompted the  
magistrates soon after to go one step farther,  
and enact a law *to banish the Quakers on pain of*  
*death*: And these six persons will appear to be  
first upon whom it was enforced.

## C H A P. XVI.

Christopher Holder, John Copeland and John Rouse have their right Ears cut off.—Their Appeal to England rejected.—Katharine Scot whipped.—Many join in Society with the People called Quakers.—The Priests petition for a Law to banish them on pain of Death.—Opposed by the Court of Deputies.—By the Instigation of the Priests carried by one Vote.—Two Deputies enter their Protest against it.—Laurence Southick, Samuel Shattock, &c. banished upon the Act.—Recapitulation of the Treatment of Laurence and Cassandra Southick.—Their Son and Daughter fined for absence from the Public Worship, and ordered to be sold for bond Slaves to satisfy the Fine.—William Robinson, Marmaduke Stevenson, Mary Dyer and N. Davis banished on pain of Death.—The three former continue or return, and are all condemned to Death.—Mary Dyer's Letter to the General Court.—They are led to execution with Drums beating.—Reflections on their Usage.—Mary Dyer reprieved.—Inhumanity to the dead Bodies.—People disgusted at these Executions.

WE come now to the execution of their law C H A P. XVI. against such as should presume to return after they had suffered before. Christopher Holder and John Copeland coming to Dedham, and

CHA P. lodging there one night, were next day taken  
 XVI. by a constable and carried to Boston, where  
 1658. being brought before the governor, he in a  
 rage addressed them with this rough salutation,  
*You shall be sure to have your ears cut off.* Soon  
 after John Rouse also coming to Boston was  
 clapt into prison. On the 10th of September  
 these three were brought before the court of  
 magistrates, where, after some reflections cast  
 upon them, Endicot, in fierce wrath, pro-  
 nounced the following sentence: *It is the sen-  
 tence of this court that you three have each his  
 right ear cut off by the hangman;* which sen-  
 tence was executed upon them the 16th. The  
 deputy marshal having admitted as many as he  
 thought proper, had the doors made fast, and  
 the prisoners being brought into another room,  
 John Rouse told the marshal, \* *We have ap-  
 pealed to the chief magistrate of England.* To  
 which he answered, *I have nothing to do with  
 that.* Holder said, *Such execution as this should  
 be done publickly, and not in private; for that  
 was contrary to the law of England.* Captain  
 Oliver replied, *We do it in private, to keep you  
 from tatling.* The executioner then proceeded  
 to the execution of his office upon Holder; the  
 marshal, who was ordered to see the execution,  
 turned his back, upon which Rouse called to  
 him *to turn about and see it,* according to  
 his order, and then he turned again. After  
 Holder suffered the amputation of his ear, Rouse  
 undauntedly

\* Humphry Norton, and the others whipped with him,  
 appealed also to England; but Endicot and Bellingham violent-  
 ly opposed it, crying out, "no appeal to England! no appeal  
 " to England!"

undauntedly suffered the like, and after him C H A P. XVI.  
Copeland, which being done, they said, " Those  
" who do it ignorantly, we desire from our  
" hearts the Lord to forgive them ; but for  
" them that do it maliciously, let our blood be  
" upon their heads ; and such shall know in  
" the day of account, that each drop of our  
" blood shall be heavier than a mill-stone."

1658.

Amongst others whom curiosity or compassionate sympathy had drawn to see this execution was Katharine Scot from Providence, who, upon observing it was to be done in private, remarked that it was evident they were doing the work of darkness, or else they would have brought them forth publickly, and have declared their offences, that others might hear and fear. <sup>b</sup> For this sensible observation, she, who was a woman of blameless conversation, good education and circumstances, was committed to prison, and severely whipped with a three-fold cord knotted whip. And, upon her examination, being threatened with hanging if she came thither again, she gravely replied, *If God calls us, woe be to us, if we come not ; and I question not but he whom we love will make us not to count our lives dear to ourselves, for his name's sake* ; to which Endicot, from the malignity of his heart, rejoined, *And we shall be as ready to take away your lives, as you shall be to lay them down*, which savage expression his actions afterwards cruelly made good.

For notwithstanding all the sanguinary laws hitherto enacted by these rigid rulers, and the more sanguinary punishment inflicted upon this people

<sup>b</sup> Besse, v. ii. p. 190.

CHAP. XVI.  
 1658. people in many cases without or beyond law, under the full persuasion of duty several of them were still concerned, notwithstanding all attending danger and difficulty, to continue their travels for the fulfilling that ministry they believed themselves called unto, although they were sensible bonds and afflictions abode them ; by the exercise whereof, as well as the beholding of their patience under their sufferings, many of the inhabitants of Boston, Salem and other places had been brought over to join with them in gospel fellowship, and many more to sentiments of compassion and good-will toward them. The arbitrary rulers of this colony, mortified to the last degree to find all the vindictive measures they had adopted to suppress this new sect, resulting in a general commiseration of the sufferers, and a general dissatisfaction at their rigorous and persecuting proceedings ; that the society gained ground under all the difficulties and disadvantages they were exposed to ; and the more barbarous severities they inflicted upon them, the more the disgraceful employment grew upon their hands, determined to resort to the last extremity, and enact a law to banish them on pain of death<sup>i</sup>.

Law to  
banish  
Quakers  
on pain of  
death.

This was not so easy a matter for them to get accomplished, the tender feelings of the people being awakened by the repeated instances of their former cruelty, and the patience of the sufferers. Many of the sober part of all ranks were very averse to this proposed measure, and not backward to declare their aversion ; but where the civil, ecclesiastical and military powers

<sup>i</sup> Besse, v. ii. p. 190.

powers are combined\*, be their measures CHAP. right or wrong, all opposition is ineffectual; and in the present case the chiefs of these three orders, *John Endicot* governor, *Richard Bellingham* deputy governor, *John Norton* and *John Wilson* chief priests of Boston, and the majors-general *Dennison* and *Adderton*, constantly appear amongst their determined foes, and most fanguine fomenters, or administrators of persecution against them. John Norton, in conjunction with others of the priesthood, (who had been all along at the bottom of these persecuting measures) pretended ministers of his gospel, who came not to destroy men's lives but to save them, forgot their duty so far, that they presented a petition to the magistrates, to make some law to banish the Quakers upon pain of death, thus prescribing to them the measures to pursue. In consequence whereof the magistrates, in their † general court held in Boston in October, at the instigation of the priests, and to gratify their own mortal hatred, made

Petitioned  
for by the  
priests.

no

\* These magistrates, conscious where their strength lay, viz. of the power being in their own hands, were not ashamed to exercise it without regard to equity or morality.

† The general court is composed of the magistrates and deputies elected by the freemen of the respective towns; this court hath the power of judicature, as well as the supreme legislative power: it is constituted of two houses, the court of magistrates and the court of deputies, each sitting and acting a part. The laws are to be transmitted from one house to the other, and not to be in force till passed by a majority of both houses; and if any disagreement or difference in judgment arise between the two houses, it is to be decided by a majority of both houses met together. Appendix to Neale's history of New-England, vol. ii. p. 336.

**C H A P.** no difficulty of passing an act to banish and  
**XVI.** put them to death without a trial by jury,  
~~1658.~~ agreeing it should be executed by a county  
 court, consisting of three magistrates, the ma-  
 jority of whom were to give judgment, and  
 condemn to death at their pleasure; but the

**Opposed by** court of deputies would by no means agree to  
 the court  
 of deputies. it, as being contrary to the laws of England  
 to put men to death without a trial by a jury<sup>k</sup>.

**Through** the in-  
 fluence of  
 the priests  
 carried by  
 one vote. However the magistrates and priests were so  
 determinedly bent to gain their point, that they  
 exerted all their influence with the deputies,  
 and at last prevailed upon two of them to  
 change sides, and even then their sanguinary  
 law was carried by a majority of one voice  
 only; the speaker and eleven more being  
 against, and thirteen for it. One *Wozel*, a dea-  
 con of their church and a deputy, was affected  
 so much on the occasion, that being confined  
 by indisposition, he desired to be sent for, when  
 the law should be put to the vote; but it was  
 carried in his absence, which when he heard, in  
 the anxiety of his heart he went to the court,  
 and desired his vote might be taken, with tears  
 expressing his sorrow that his absence should  
 occasion such a law to pass, saying, *That if he  
 had not been able to go, he would have crept on  
 his hands and knees to prevent it.* Thus was  
 the law carried to banish them on pain of death  
 by a majority of three magistrates, without the

**Two depu-**  
 ties enter  
 their protest  
 against it. interposition of a jury; yet two of the depu-  
 ties, Captain Edward Hutchinson, and Thomas  
 Clark of Boston, merchant, being still disatis-  
 fied, did enter their protest against the law;  
 because

<sup>k</sup> Sewel, p. 198.

because it was contrary to a standing law of the C H A P.  
country, which was, *that none be sentenced to* XVI.  
*death and banishment but by a special jury and*  
*court of assistants\**. And it seems that the law  
was amended, prescribing a legal trial, (if it  
can be called a trial at all) consonant to this  
standing law.

Thus on the 20th of October, 1658, they passed the following act:

" An act made at a general court held at Bos-  
ton the 20th of October, 1658.

“ Whereas there is a pernicious sect, commonly called *Quakers*, lately arisen, who by word and writing have published and maintained many † dangerous and horrid tenets, and do take upon them to change and alter the received † laudable customs of our nation, in giving civil respect to equals or reverence to superiors, § whose actions tend to undermine the civil government, and also to destroy the order of the churches, by || denying all established forms of worship, and by withdrawing

\* Court of Assistants consists of the governor, deputy governor and magistrates of Boston.

† *Dangerous and horrid tenets.*] What these dangerous and horrid tenets were, is neither specified in this nor any other of their laws.

<sup>‡</sup> *Laudable customs, viz.]* The pulling off the hat.

[§ *whose actions tend to undermine the civil government.*] If any of their conduct had this tendency, it is a wonder these rulers never specified these dangerous actions, because a specification thereof would have been a better apology for their severe laws than any they have published.

[*Denying all established forms of worship.*] Turpe est  
doctori, cum culpa redarguit ipsum. What was the cause of  
these

CHAP. " withdrawing from orderly church-fellowship,  
 XVI. " allowed and approved by all orthodox pro-  
 ~~~~~ fessors of truth, and instead thereof, and in  
 1658. " opposition thereunto, frequently meeting by  
 " themselves, insinuating themselves into the  
 " minds of the simple, or such as are least af-  
 " fected to the order and government of  
 " church and commonwealth, whereby divers  
 " of our inhabitants have been infected, not-  
 "withstanding all former laws made upon the  
 " experience of their arrogant and bold obtru-  
 "sions, to disseminate their principles amongst  
 " us, prohibiting their coming into this jurif-  
 "diction, they have not been deterred from  
 " their impetuous attempts to undermine our  
 " peace and hazard our ruin.

" For prevention thereof, this court doth  
 " order and enact, that every person or persons  
 " of the *cursed sect of Quakers*, who is not an  
 " inhabitant of, but is found within this jurif-  
 "diction, shall be apprehended without war-  
 " rant where no magistrate is at hand, by any  
 " constable, commissioner, or select man, and  
 " conveyed from constable to constable to the  
 " next magistrate, who shall commit the said  
 " person to close prison, there to remain (with-  
 " out bail) unto the next court of assistants,  
 " where

these legislators leaving their native land, but their dissent from the established forms of worship there. Is not this law an apology for Laud and his associates, in asserting a right to punish men for denying established forms, particularly as they kept short of the extremities to which these precise barbarians proceeded; they neither banished nor hanged any of their preachers, the hardships, they had chiefly to complain of, being a deprivation of their ecclesiastical emoluments, which the Quakers wanted not from them.

“ where they shall have a legal trial by a C H A P.  
“ special jury; and being \* convicted to be of XVI.  
“ the sect of the Quakers, shall be sentenced to  
“ be banished upon pain of death: And that  
“ every inhabitant of this jurisdiction, being  
“ convicted to be of the aforesaid sect, either  
“ by taking up, publishing or defending the  
“ horrid opinions of the *Quakers*, or the stirr-  
“ ing up mutiny, sedition or rebellion against  
“ the government, or by taking up their abu-  
“ sive and destructive practices, viz. denying  
“ civil respect to equals and superiors, and  
“ withdrawing from our church assemblies, and  
“ instead thereof frequenting meetings of their  
“ own in opposition to our church order, or  
“ by adhering to or approving of any known  
“ *Quaker*, and the tenets and practices of the  
“ *Quakers* that are opposite to the orthodox  
“ received opinions of the godly, and endea-  
“ vouring to disaffect others to civil govern-  
“ ment and church order, or condemning the  
“ proceedings and practices of this court  
“ against the *Quakers*, manifesting thereby their  
“ compliance with those whose design is to  
“ overthrow the order established in church  
“ and state, every such person, upon convic-  
“ tion before the said court of assistants in  
manner

\* This conviction doth not appear to be by evidence of any matter of fact, but their coming into the court covered, saying *thee* and *thou*; and such like marks of their being *Quakers* so called, were assumed by the court as sufficient evidence to convict them upon even in case of life and death, which proceeding drew from William Leddra this pertinent remark, “ you will put me to death for speaking English, and for not putting off my clothes.”

CHAP. " manner aforesaid, shall be committed to close  
 XVI. " prison for one month, and then, unless they  
 1658. " choose voluntarily to depart this jurisdiction,  
 " shall give bond for their good behaviour,  
 " and appear at the next court, where conti-  
 " nuing obstinate, and refusing to retract and  
 " reform the aforesaid opinions, they shall be  
 " sentenced to banishment upon pain of death ;  
 " and any one magistrate, upon information  
 " given him of any such person, shall cause  
 " him to be apprehended, and shall commit  
 " any such person to prison, according to his  
 " discretion, until he come to trial as afore-  
 " said."

Such a sample of legislation is a monument of lasting infamy to the legislators. To enact and inflict capital punishment from personal dislikes, for mere personal offences, or a conscientious dissent to established forms, even with a constitutional authority, is little short of murder ; but without it it is well nigh murder of malice prepense. For as to the undermining or inciting to disaffection to the civil government, to its ruin, these are no more than vague pretexts, unsupported by matter of fact. The usual subterfuge of persecution, to strip itself of the odium of its real character, is to clothe religious dissent with the robe of sedition in the state ; yet the preamble of this law points chiefly at religious scruple or inoffensive usages, which mark it at first view with the stamp of downright persecution to death.

1659.  
 Proceedings  
 against Lau-  
 rence and  
 Cassandra  
 Southick,  
 Samuel  
 Shattock,  
 &c.

The first victims to this severe law were Laurence and Cassandra Southick, their son Josiah, Samuel Shattock, Nicholas Phelps and Joshua Buffum. They were called before the court the 11th of 3d month, 1659, and on their

their trial (such as it was) the same arbitrary spirit of tyranny appeared in their manner of executing as in passing their laws. The prisoners making a rational objection to their proceeding against them by this law, as being in custody when it was made, and therefore as to them a post facto law.—To their quere, *whether it was for an offence against that law, which then had no existence, they were committed to prison and banished,* they received no reply; then one of them desired the governor, *that he would be pleased to declare before the people the real and true cause of their proceedings against them;* he answered, *it was for contemning authority in not coming to the \*ordinances of God.* He further charged them *with rebellion against the authority of the country, in not departing according to their order;* to which they answered, *They had no other place to go to, but had their wives, children, families and estates to look after;* nor had they done any thing worthy of death, *banishment or bonds,* or any of the hardships or ignominious punishments which *they had suffered in their persons,* besides the loss of one hundred pounds worth of their property taken from them for meeting together. This remonstrance of their recent accumulated injuries silencing the governor, Major-general Denison

CHAP.  
XVI.  
1659.

\* What he particularly meant by the ordinances of God I cannot determine; if it was their public worship, (for their absence from which they had before suffered by fines and by whipping) I think it is a bold appellation, and more blasphemous than any thing objected to the Quakers, as applied to that worship and that religion which produced no better fruits. Such bitter waters never issued from a divine fountain.

**C H A P.** nison made this unanswerable reply, that they  
 XVI. stood against the authority of the country in not  
 1659. submitting to their laws ; that he should not go  
 about to speak much of the error of their judg-  
 ments, but, added he, you and we are not able  
 well to live together : \*At present the power is  
 in our hand, and therefore the strongest must  
 fend off. <sup>m</sup> After this the prisoners were put forth  
 for a while, and being called in again, the sen-  
 tence of banishment was pronounced against  
 them, and no more than a fortnight's time al-  
 lowed for them to depart on pain of death ;  
 and although they desired a respite to settle  
 their affairs, and till an opportunity of a con-  
 venient passage to England might occur, the  
 unrelenting malice of their persecutors would  
 not grant them even this small and reasonable  
 request ; so Samuel Shattock, N. Phelps and  
 Josiah Southick † were obliged to take an op-  
 portunity

\* Have we, in the history of that reign, which these men and their partizans so freely represent under the epithets of despotic and tyrannical, so barefaced an assertion of arbitrary power as this?

<sup>m</sup> Besse, vol. ii. p. 197.

† Neale is guilty of an unaccountable mistake in asserting that none of these returned into the country any more, whereas Samuel Shattock was the man, who, as king's commissioner, carried over his mandamus to the governor of New England to put a stop to their illicit proceedings in putting Quakers to death. This mandamus he seems to have copied from New England judged, where § he must surely have seen it was carried over by said Shattock. Josiah Southick and N. Phelps also returned in 1661, before the arrival of S. Shattock, N. Phelps being ancient died soon after, and J. Southick was afterwards whipt through several towns.

§ New England judged, p. 354.

Sentenced  
to banish-  
ment on  
pain of  
death.

portunity that presented four days after, to pass for England by Barbadoes, in order to seek redress from the parliament and council of state there, but without success. Laurence and Cassandra Southick went to Shelter Island, where they soon after died within three days of each other ; and Joshua Buffum retired to Rhode Island.

The proceedings of these haughty rulers are strongly marked throughout with the features of self-importance, inhumanity and bitter malignity ; but I know of no instance of a more persevering malice and cruelty, than that wherewith they persecuted the aforesaid Laurence and Cassandra Southick and their family. First, while members of their church, they were both imprisoned for entertaining strangers, Christopher Holder and John Copeland, a christian duty, which the apostle to the Hebrews advises not to be unmindful of. And after seven weeks imprisonment, Cassandra was fined 40s. for owning a paper written by the aforesaid persons. Next for absenting from the public worship and owning the Quakers' doctrine, on the information of one captain Hawthorn, they with their son Josiah were sent to the house of correction, and whipped in the coldest season of the year, and at the same time Hawthorn issued his warrant to distrain their goods for absence from their public worship, whereby there were taken from them cattle to the value of 4l. 15s. Again they were imprisoned with others for being at a meeting, and Cassandra was again whipped, and upon their joint letter to the magistrates before recited the other appellants were released ; but this family, although they with the rest had suffered the penalty of their cruel law

CHAP.  
XVI.  
1659.

Recapitula-  
tion of the  
sufferings of  
Laurence  
and Cas-  
andra South-  
ick.

CHAP. law fully, were \* arbitrarily detained in prison  
 XVI. to their great loss and damage, being in the  
 ~~~~~ season of the year when their affairs most imme-  
 1659. diately demanded their attendance. And last of all were banished upon pain of death, as before recited, by a law made while they were imprisoned, and consequently against which they had not offended : Thus spoiled of their property, deprived of their liberty, driven into banishment, and in jeopardy of their lives, for no other crime than meeting apart, and dissenting from the established worship, the sufferings of this inoffensive aged couple ended only with their lives.

Daniel and  
Provided  
Southick  
fined 10l.  
for absence  
from the  
publick  
worship.

But the multiplied injuries of this harmless pair were not sufficient to gratify that thirst of vengeance which stimulated these persecutors, while any member of the family remained unmolested : During their detention in prison, they left at home a son and daughter named Daniel and Provided ; these children, not deterred by the unchristian treatment of their parents and brother, felt themselves rather encouraged to follow their steps, and relinquish the assemblies of a people whose religion was productive of such relentless persecution, for their absence from which they were fined 10l. though it was well known they had no estate, their parents having been reduced to poverty by repeated fines and extravagant distraints ; wherefore to satisfy the fine, they were ordered to be sold for bond-slaves by the following mandate :

“ Whereas

\* While they were in prison, William Maston coming through Salem in his way to Boston, brought them some provisions from home, for which he was committed to prison, and kept there fourteen days in the cold winter season, though about seventy years of age.

" " Whereas *Daniel Southick* and *Provided* C H A P. XVI.  
 " *Southick*, son and daughter of *Laurence*  
 " *Southick*, absenting themselves from the pub-  
 lic ordinances, having been fined by the courts  
 of *Salem* and *Ipswich*, pretending they have  
 no estates, and resolving not to work: The  
 court, upon perusal of a law, which was made  
 upon account of debts, in answer to what  
 should be done for the satisfaction of the fines  
 resolves, That the treasurers of the several  
 counties, are and shall be fully empowered to  
 sell the said persons to any of the *English* na-  
 tion at *Virginia* or *Barbadoes*, to answer the  
 said fines."

\* Pursuant to this order Edward Butter, one of the treasurers, sought out for a passage for them to Barbadoes for sale, but could find none willing to take them thither. One master of a ship to whom he applied, in order to evade a compliance, pretended *they would spoil the ship's company*, Butter replied, *No, you need not fear*

VOL. I.

B b

that,

Vain endeavours to put the order in execution.

<sup>n</sup> *Besse*, vol. ii. p. 197. *Sewel*, p. 223.

\* Neale, in the place of Butler's subsequent endeavours to execute the above-cited order, substitutes the following palliating conjecture: "I am apt to think this order was made rather to terrify the Quakers, than with a design to be put in execution; for when Southick and his wife had been thoroughly frightened, they were sent home without further punishment." On what authority he founds this conjecture doth not appear, nor do I see room for it; we find none of their orders which they could execute within themselves, which were not executed fully up to, or beyond the letter of the law, a bitter passionate spirit accompanying all their executions. And in the present case, the failure of execution doth not appear to be the result of any tenderness in them, but of a more humane disposition in others not under their jurisdiction, whose assistance was wanted, but who would have no concern in the business, as appearing to them unreasonably cruel and unjust.

CHAP. <sup>XVI.</sup>  
 1659. *that, for they are poor harmless creatures that will not hurt any body.* The master rejoined, *will you then offer to make slaves of such harmless creatures?* and declined the invidious office of transporting them, as well as the rest. Disappointed in his designs, and at a loss how to dispose of them, the winter approaching, he sent them home to shift for themselves, till he could find a convenient opportunity to send them away.

W. Robinson, Marmaduke Stevenson, Mary Dyer and Nicholas Davis, banished on pain of death.

W. Robinson whipt.

We are now advanced to the period wherein persecution proceeded to the last extremity, in prosecuting to death for religion<sup>o</sup>. William Robinson, a merchant of London, Marmaduke Stevenson of Yorkshire, husbandman, and Mary Dyer, a woman fearing the Lord, of good report, the mother of several children, and wife of a reputable inhabitant of Rhode-Island, with Nicholas Davis, were by the Court of Assistants at Boston in the beginning of September, 1659, sentenced to banishment on pain of death. William Robinson attempting to speak for himself, was first stopped by an handkerchief thrust into his mouth, and afterwards severely whipped with twenty stripes with a threefold corded whip, soon after which they were all released, and banished pursuant to their sentence, being allowed no more than two days \*, from the 12th of September, the day of their release, to the 14th of the same,

to

<sup>o</sup> Sewel, p. 227, &c. Besse, vol. ii.

\* We have again an instance of Neale's unfair and partial representation of fact: "These three coming from Rhode Island in the month of June, were apprehended and banished on pain of death, and were allowed till the 4th of September to depart the jurisdiction. The two men went to Piscataqua government, and the woman to Rhode Island, &c." One would naturally conclude from hence, that they were

to depart their jurisdiction, to answer it at the C H A P.   
peril of their lives, if found within their pre-   
cincts after the last mentioned day.

XVI.

1659.

Mary Dyer and Nicholas Davis left that jurisdiction at that time: William Robinson and Marmaduke Stevenson only went from Boston, but found themselves not at liberty to depart the jurisdiction, though staying at the hazard of their lives, apprehending their ministry there not finished; so they departed to Salem and the adjacent parts to visit their friends and confirm them in the faith, to stand steadfast in these perious

W. Robin-  
son and M.  
Stevenson  
continue  
about Sa-  
lem.

B b 2

times.

were banished in June, and allowed till the 4th of September to depart, and so conceive an idea of the lenity of this government, to which it hath no better claim in this, than in its preceding transactions, being marked with the same bitter spirit of unpitying animosity. From *New Eng.* judged we learn, "That they came from Rhode Island in the then 4th month (June) to Boston, where they were apprehended, and sent to prison, to remain there till the next Court of Assistants," which was held as above related: The order for their release bears date the 12th of September, and concludes thus: "They must answer it on their peril, if they or any of them after the 14th of this present month September, are found within this jurisdiction." So then they had no more than two days allowed them to escape their determined destruction. This was certainly a very hard measure, for no other crime than breathing the air of the country, and too evident a symptom of implacable malignity, rising to blood-thirstiness in their persecutors, hardly reconcileable to Endicot's declaration, that *he desired not their death.* But Neale in his relation conceals this aggravating circumstance, which is a very material part of an honest and impartial account, as it shews these governors in a proper light; and there appears too much reason to conclude it was done with design to glos over the cruelty of these proceedings, by giving them a complection of lenity which they possessed not, and to the conduct of the innocent sufferers, that of an unreasonable contumacy, and being guilty of their own blood; of which they were no otherwise guilty, than by continuing in the discharge of apprehended duty.

C H A P. times. It was not long before they were taken  
 XVI. up, imprisoned, and put in chains at Boston.  
 1659. In the next month Mary Dyer also returned, and  
 M. Dyer  
returns to  
Boston.

All three condemned to death.

w was taken into custody ; thus they had in their power three persons, who by their sanguinary law had forfeited their lives. On the 20th of October they were brought before the court, where John Endicot presided, and being set to the bar, Endicot commanded the keeper to pull off their hats, and without further process, without any other prefatory address, than the following recapitulation of their own severities and crimes, instead of those of the prisoners, proceeded to pass sentence of death as follows, " We have made many laws, " and endeavoured by several ways to keep you " from us, and neither whipping nor imprisonment, nor cutting off of ears, nor banishment " on pain of death, will keep you from among " us ; *I desire not your deaths.*" Then added, " Give ear and hearken to your sentence of " death." William Robinson, previous to passing the sentence, desiring liberty to read a paper, shewing the reason why he had not departed that jurisdiction, his request was refused, and the following sentence passed upon him : *You shall be had back to the place from whence you came, and from thence to the place of execution, to be hanged on the gallows till you are dead.* After which Marmaduke Stevenson and Mary Dyer received the like sentence ; these two, observing the treatment of William Robinson, made no defence. But the former, after the sentence, was incited to warn the magistrates and others guilty of their death, *That the same day they put the Lord's servants to death, the day of their visitation should pass over their heads,*

heads, and they be cursed for evermore : And therefore in love, desired them to take warning before it should be too late, and thereby remove the fatal consequences of shedding innocent blood. Mary Dyer, to her sentence, replied, *The will of the Lord be done.* Upon which Endicot ordering the marshal to take her away, she rejoined, *yea joyfully I go.* Being taken back to pris'on, she employed a part of the intermediate time in writing, to the general court in Boston, a letter of remonstrance against their last sanguinary law, being a strong dissuasion from putting it in execution. Of which, as a specimen of equanimity in the most trying circumstances, and the good sense and christian temper that dictated it, we lay before the reader the following abstract :

C H A P  
XVI.

1659.

**“ To the general court at Boston.**Mary Dy-  
er's letter  
to the gene-  
ral court.

“ Whereas I am charged by many with guiltiness of my own blood : If you mean in my coming to Boston, I am therein clear, and justified by the Lord, in whose will I came, who will require my blood of you, be sure, who have made a law to take away the lives of the innocent servants of God, if they come among you, who are called by you *cursed Quakers*; although I say, and am a living witness for them and the Lord, that he hath blessed them, and sent them unto you : Therefore be not found fighters against God, but let my counsel and request be accepted with you, to repeal all such laws, that the truth and servants of the Lord may have free passage amongst you, and you be kept from shedding innocent blood, which I know there are many among you would not do, if they knew it so

“ to

CHAP. " to be.—I have no self-ends, the Lord  
XVI. " knoweth, for if my life were freely granted  
1659. " by you it would not avail me, nor could I  
" expect it of you so long as I daily hear or see  
" the sufferings of these people, as I have done  
" these two years, and now it is like to encrease  
" even unto death, for no evil-doing but com-  
" ing among you. *Were ever the like laws heard*  
" *of among a people that profess Christ come in the*  
" *flesh?* And have you no other weapons but  
" such laws to fight with against spiritual wick-  
" edness, as you call it?—Search with the  
" light of Christ in you, and it will shew you of  
" whom you take counsel, as it hath done me  
" and many more, who have been disobedient  
" and deceived as now you are; which light as  
" you come into, and obey what is made mani-  
" fest to you therein, you will not repent that  
" you were kept from shedding blood, though  
" by a woman. It is not my own life I seek,  
" (*for I chuse rather to suffer with the people of*  
" *God, than to enjoy the pleasures of Egypt*) but  
" the life of the seed which I know the Lord  
" hath blessed;—And I know this,  
" that if you confirm your law, though it were  
" to the taking away the life of but one of us,  
" that the Lord will overthrow both your law  
" and you by his righteous judgments, and  
" plagues poured justly upon you; who now,  
" whilst you are warned thereof, and tenderly  
" fought unto, may avoid the one by removing  
" the other.—Oh! let none of you  
" put the evil day far from you, which verily,  
" in the light of the Lord, I see approaching  
" even to many in and about Boston, which is  
" the bitterest and darkest professing place that  
" ever I heard of; let the time past, therefore,  
" suffice

“ suffice for such a profession as brings forth C H A P.  
 “ such fruits as these laws are. In love, and in XVI.  
 “ the spirit of meekness, I again beseech you,  
 “ for I have no enmity to the persons of any ;  
 “ but you shall know that God will not be  
 “ mocked, but what you sow that shall ye reap  
 “ from him, that will render to every one accord-  
 “ ing to the deeds done in the body, whether  
 “ good or evil : Even so be it, faith

1659.

“ MARY DYER.”

The 27th of October, being the day appointed for their execution, in the afternoon they were led to the gallows by Michaelson the Marshal, and Captain Oliver, with a band of about two hundred armed men, besides many horsemen, as if apprehensive some of the people might rescue the prisoners. In the procession, the drummers were placed to march next before the condemned persons, and when any of them attempted to speak, the drums were beaten to prevent their being heard. An indecency unprecedented amongst civilized nations in the administration of legal justice, to the vilest criminals: This awful scene humanity directs to be attended with becoming solemnity, and sympathy with the unhappy objects, who are going to lose their lives, as a sacrifice to public justice; and every sentiment of common decency revolts against the idea of disturbing their recollection in their last moments. But the treatment of these prisoners throughout, marks the difference between justice reluctantly punishing dangerous criminals to secure the public safety; and despotism wantonly exercising unjust power over innocence for the gratification of private animosity.

Led to execution with a band of armed men, and drums beating.

Reflections upon their usage.

C H A P. sity. But if these prisoners were deprived of the  
 XVI. decent solemnity and usual sympathy, attendant  
 1659. on such occasions, they wanted them not ; collected in themselves, and supported by that which the power and inveteracy of their persecutors could not reach, the inward testimony of an approving conscience, they rose superior to all the indignities, to which they were exposed. With hands and hearts joined, as companions in an invincible testimony to the truth they were brought to suffer for, with countenances undismayed, and brightened with signs of heavenly joy and gladness, they directed their steps to the place of execution. Mary being in the middle, the Marshal said to her, are you not ashamed to walk thus hand in hand between two young men ? She replied, *No, this is to me an hour of the greatest joy I ever had in the world. No ear can hear, no tongue can utter, and no heart can understand, the sweet incomes and refreshings of the spirit of the Lord, which I now feel.* William Robinson said, *This is your hour and the power of darkness,* upon which the drums were immediately beaten. When they ceased Marmaduke Stevenson said, *This is the day of your visitation, wherein the Lord hath visited you;* but although he expressed more, the noise of the drums prevented his expressions being heard. They went forward with great chearfulness, as approaching everlasting felicity, and rejoicing that the Lord had counted them worthy to suffer death for his name's sake\*,

Amongst

\* I believe I should not have noticed Neale's cursory relation of these executions, if he had introduced no reflections on the sufferers ; but although in his preface he asserts that,  
 " Where

Amongst the rest who attended this execu- C H A P.  
tion, John Wilson, priest of Boston, and col- XVI.  
league

1659.

Wilson,

priest of

Boston, at-

“ Where facts have been differently related, or the justice of the government arraigned, as in the sufferings of the Quakers and Anabaptists, &c. I have consulted the writers on both sides, and by comparing them together have set them in the best light I could.” Yet in this case his assertion is not true, for he hath passed over in silence George Bishop’s account of the behaviour of these sufferers at their execution, (from whence our accounts are taken, as from an authentick relation, written by a contemporary author, and first published in 1661, while the facts were recent, and all the parties concerned in being, and not controverted that I know of) and hath adopted that of Cotton Mather, a New England preacher and apologist, written many years after, whose reflections on the Quakers have been fully answered by John Whiting, in a piece, entitled *Truth and Innocency defended against Falsehood and Envy*, printed in 1702. Which answer Neale also cites for his authority, page 325. vol. i. and consequently had read it, where he might have seen these aspersions refuted. Now to suppress the most genuine and best authenticated accounts of their behaviour, because written by their friends, and introduce the illiberal, invidious reflections of an adversary, founded on vague and prejudiced report, is not comparing the writers on both sides to set the facts in the best light he could. And as he hath chosen to revive Mather’s invidious and refuted insinuations, it seems proper after his respondent, John Whiting, to make some animadversions upon them, to supply Neale’s failure of his specious profession, in comparing the writers of both sides, and leaving the reader to make what reflections he pleases. Cotton Mather says, “ If any enquire with what spirit these men died, he must sincerely say, that as far as he can learn, they shewed little enough of the spirit of martyrdom, they died not like the true martyrs of Jesus Christ, with the glorious spirit of God resting upon them; but a fierce, a raging, a revengeful spirit, and a degree of madness rather inspired them.” Rank malice this. Mere unsupported partial opinion, founded in ill will, which speaks well of none. To which hear John Whiting’s reply. “ I would fain know wherein [they shewed little of the spirit of martyrdom] and beseech the reader to peruse, not only their

CHAP. XVI. league of John Norton aforesaid, accompanied them, but from motives very unbecoming of, and disgraceful to the sacerdotal character, not to sympathize with, convince or console the sufferers in their last moments, but to enjoy the full gratification of his virulent disposition, and disturb them with impotent insults, *shall such jacks as you come in before authority with their hats on?* was his contemptuous language: A wonderful reason indeed to take away their lives! which occasioned William Robinson to remark, *Mind you, mind you, it is for not putting off the hat we are put to death.* William Robinson was executed the first, who on the ladder addressed the people to the following purport: *We suffer not as evil doers, but as those who have testified and manifested the truth: This is the day of your visitation, and therefore I desire you to mind the light of Christ which is in you, to which I have*

“ their examinations, and speeches at their deaths; but also  
 “ their papers and epistles [recorded in the Appendix to  
 “ New England judged, in Sewel’s History, page 228, &c.  
 “ or Besse’s Sufferings, vol. ii, page 238.] and compare them  
 “ with the speeches and letters of the martyrs, in the book  
 “ of martyrs, and see whether they do not favour of the  
 “ spirit of martyrdom, and holy resignation in the case.—  
 “ What won’t envy misrepresent? *They died so like the martyrs of Jesus Christ, with the glorious spirit of God resting upon them;* yea, and supporting them to the last, as affected the hearts of many at the time, so that several were convinced of the truth at their deaths—*a fierce, a raging, a revengeful spirit,* &c. I return upon him, as malicious slanders and calumnies, and dare him to tell where in they were fierce, raging, or revengeful: Did they ever go about to revenge themselves, or offer violence to any? *No, they left vengeance to the Lord to whom it belongs, and who will repay it.*” John Whiting’s Answer to Cotton Mather, page 74, 77, 78.

I have born testimony, and am now going to seal C H A P. my testimony with my blood. Wilfon, as divested XVI. of all sensation of charity and tenderness, and unable to restrain the passion which inwardly agitated him, in beholding the patience and fortitude of the sufferer, bearing him up over all the terrors of death, vented his indignation, in the following presumptuous interruption, *hold thy tongue, be silent; thou art going to die with a lie in thy mouth.* William Robinson being now ready to be turned off, his last expressions were, *I suffer for Christ in whom I live, and for whom I die.* After he was turned off, Marmaduke Stevenson ascended the ladder, and said, *Be it known unto you all this day, that we suffer not as evil doers, but for conscience sake,* and when he was about to be turned off, added, *This day shall we be at rest with the Lord.* Mary Dyer, was reprieved at the gallows, for that time, at the intercession of her son.

The malice of their persecutors was not satisfied with taking away their lives, but their inhumanity extended even to their dead bodies, none holding them when they were cut down, they fell to the ground, by which William Robinson's skull was fractured; then they were stripped, their shirts were ripped off with a knife, and their naked bodies rolled into a hole and left there uncovered. And when some of their friends would have put their bodies in coffins, they were not suffered to do it. Neither when they brought pales to enclose the pit, would it be allowed: So that they were left exposed to the beasts of prey, had not the pit been quickly filled with water. To conclude the infamous scene, Priest Wilson aforesaid vented the last effort

Mary Dyer,  
reprieved.

Inhumanity  
to their  
dead bodies.

C H A P. effort of his spleen in a song upon the deceased.

XVI.  
1659.  
People dis-  
guised at  
these ex-  
ecutions.

Mary Dyer  
sent home.

The beha-  
viour of  
these men  
at their  
execution  
the means  
of convinc-  
ing several.

John Cham-  
berlain.

Edward  
Wharton.

Michael  
Shaflin.

But many of the people more generous and humane than their magistrates and teachers, beheld these executions with silent sorrow, and returned home with heavy hearts, under disgust and discontent at the persevering cruelty of their rulers in putting innocent men to death, which the magistrates perceiving, in order to allay the ferment, resolved to send Mary Dyer away. So they caused her to be set on horseback, and by four horsemen to be conveyed fifteen miles towards *Rhode Island*, who left her there with a horse and man, to be conveyed the rest of the way, which she soon sent back and went to her own home.

The pious speeches, christian demeanour, constancy and innocence of these two martyrs at their execution, did not only excite, in the spectators in general, compassion and sorrow, but in several of them a spirit of enquiry into the causes thereof, and in consequence an adoption of that religion, which, they saw, was able to support its professors under so heavy a weight of afflictions. John Chamberlain, an inhabitant of Boston, in particular, being present, was so affected, that being convinced of the truth they died for, he went to visit others of that persuasion then in prison, which the magistrates resented so far as to imprison him also, and cause him to be whipped several times most severely. Edward Wharton, an inhabitant of Salem, having said, *The guilt of Robinson's and Stevenson's blood was so great, that he could not bear it,* was, for his pretended insolence, whipped with twenty lashes and fined 20l. And Michael Shaflin, of Salem,

Salem, some years after, being interrogated by the court there, *How long he had absented from their worship?* answered, *Ever since you put the servants of the Lord to death.* But these severities failing of reconciling the people to their arbitrary and unmerciful proceedings, and finding them condemned by the generality of sober persons at home and abroad, they published the following apology, in justification of their conduct.

C H A P.  
XVI.  
1659.

“ Though \* the justice of our proceedings  
 “ against William Robinson, Marmaduke Steven-  
 “ son and Mary Dyer, supported by the autho-  
 “ rity of this court, and the laws of this  
 “ country, and † the laws of God, may rather  
 “ persuade us to expect encouragement and  
 “ commendation from all prudent and pious  
 “ men, than convince us of any necessity to  
 “ apologize for the same; yet for as much as  
 “ men of weaker parts out of pity and commi-  
 “ feration (a commendable and christian virtue,  
 “ yet easily abused, and susceptible of sinister  
 “ and dangerous impressions) for want of a full  
 “ information, may be less satisfied, and men  
 “ of perverser principles to calumniate us, and  
 “ render us as bloody persecutors, to satisfy  
 “ one, and stop the mouths of the other, we  
 “ have thought fit to declare, that about three  
 “ years

\* It requires more sagacity than I am master of, to discover any regard to justice in their proceedings against these persons; and I presume every dispassionate reader will be at a loss to discover it also.

† By what divine law could they support inhumanity, cruelty and bloodshed? It appears to me blasphemy to introduce the sacred name into such an apology, and still more so to place his just laws, as in confederacy with their assumed authority, and arbitrary and unjust decrees.

CHAP. XVI. " years since, divers persons professing them-selves *Quakers* (\* of whose pernicious opinions and practices we had received intelligence from good hands, both from *Barbadoes* and *England*) arrived at *Boston*, whose persons were only secured to be sent away by the first opportunity † without censure or punishment, although their professed principles, turbulent and impetuous behaviour to authority, would have justified a severer animadversion; yet the prudence of this court was exercised only in making provision to secure the peace and order here established against their attempts, whose design (we were well assured by our experience, as well as by the example of their predecessors in *Munster* ‡) was to undermine and

\* This is a plain confession, that their persecuting measures were grounded upon no conviction of matters of fact; but on bitter prejudice, on no better grounds, than the reports of men, nighly as much prejudiced against this people as themselves.

† This is not true, it being manifest even the first that came were both censured and punished in various ways: closely imprisoned; their books seized and burnt by the hangman, deprived of company and food several days; stripped naked to search for tokens of witchcraft; and their beds and bibles taken from them for the jailers fees. If all this usage was not punishment, what was it?

‡ Equally untrue is it that they were assured, by their own experience, that the design of these people was to undermine and ruin the peace and order established: they interfered not with their civil government; nor have these apologists advanced one matter of fact to support the allegation—because they could not. And their taking their estimate of them and their designs from the Anabaptists of *Munster*, whom they term their predecessors, is unfair, ill-grounded, and mere venom. Was there not as great a disparity between the *Quakers* and these *Anabaptists*, as between the *independents* and them? and might they not with equal or greater propriety be termed the predecessors of the *independents* of

“ and ruin the same; and accordingly a law was C H A P.  
 “ made and published, prohibiting all masters XVI.  
 “ of 1659.

of New England? “ By their fruits ye shall know “ them,” was the criterion pointed out by the author of the christian religion, to try pretences to religion by, and to discriminate the false prophet from the true. Wherefore it may be no improper digression to take a summary review of the conduct of these Anabaptists, in an abstract from a late author \*, and enquire wherein the Quakers resembled them. John Mathias, a baker of Harlem, and John Bocold, a taylor of Leyden, were at the head of the disorders and delusions of these visionary impostors ; they settled in Munster, a city of Westphalia, and gained many profelytes to their tenets, the principal of which, and from which they obtained their name, was this, that baptism ought to be administered only to adult persons, and should be performed, not by sprinkling but dipping ; condemning the baptizing of infants, and re-baptizing all whom they admitted into their society. This being a harmless speculative principle, and having some appearance of reason and authority from the practice of the primitive christians, could expose them to little or no censure, if they had stopped here. But to these, they are represented to have added other principles inconsistent with moral rectitude, and dangerous to the peace and order of society ; they pretended that magistracy was not only unnecessary among christians ; but an unlawful encroachment on their spiritual liberty : They were for levelling all ranks ; making all property common ; and reducing all men to a state of equality :

But these levelling principles operated with these men only while they were themselves necessarily among the lower orders of the people : For their success in making profelytes discovered the unsoundness of their hearts, and the extravagance of their ambition : having gained some citizens of eminence to the adoption of their opinions, they expanded their views, and made several unsuccessful attempts to get possession of the town, in order to gain an establishment there for their motley system of confused tenets ; and at last having secretly called in their associates from the neighbouring country, they suddenly took possession of the arsenal and the senate house in the night

\* Robertson's History of Charles V. vol. i.

CHAP. " of ships to bring any *Quakers* into this jurisdiction,  
 XVI. " " diiction, and themselves from coming in, on  
 ~~~~~ 1659. " penalty

night time, and running about the streets with drawn swords and horrible howlings, cried out alternately, " Repent and " be baptized," and " Depart, ye ungodly." The citizens of all ranks and classes, terrified at their threats and outcries, fled in confusion, and left the city under the dominion of a frantick multitude. At first they kept up the form of the antient constitution ; but all their proceedings were directed by Mathias, who was absolute in command, whom it was instant death to disobey : Having thus got the city into his possession, he commenced his plan of reformation by confiscating the estates of those that had fled, ordering those that remained to bring in their gold, silver and precious effects, and lay at his feet; these he deposited in a public treasury, and appointed deacons to dispense them for the common use of all. At last being besieged in the town by the bishop of Munster, taking it into his head to smite the host of the enemy with a handful of men, in imitation of Gideon, he fallied out with a chosen band of thirty men to the slaughter, for they were all cut off to a man. He was succeeded in his command by his associate Bocold, who far out-stripped him in the wildness of his ambition, excess of cruelty, and gross immorality. Nothing would satisfy his ambitious soul short of the power and title of king, which being conferred upon him, he immediately assumed all the state and pomp of royalty. He indulged his cruelty in almost daily executions, and his lust by disseminating among his deluded followers the notion of the lawfulness of polygamy : By his example as well as doctrine his disciples were led into excesses of riot in violation of every rule of decency, and into delusions no less pernicious to religion, than the peace and security of civil society.

Now if this description be just, where lies the parallel between them and the Quakers ? These latter never perverted religion to serve the purposes of self-interest, ambition or lust: They constantly maintained that it led to self-denial and the daily cross to the indulgence of these passions, and these doctrines were exemplified in the strictnes and circumspection of their lives : They introduced no levelling principles, they acknowledged magistracy necessary to the order of civil society, and paid due submission to its authority in civil concerns ; they covet no man's silver or gold or apparel ; but wrought, labouring with their own hands to supply their necessities.

They

" penalty of the house of correction, until they C H A P.  
 " cou'd be sent away. Notwithstanding which,  
 " by a back door, they found entrance, and the  
 " penalty inflicted on them proving insufficient  
 " to restrain their impudent and insolent obtru-  
 " sions, was encreased by the loss of the ears  
 " of those who offended a second time; which  
 " also being too weak a defence against their  
 " impetuous and fanatick fury, necessitated us to  
 " endeavour our security; and upon serious  
 " consideration a law was made, that such per-  
 " sons should be banished on pain of death, ac-  
 " cording to the example of England, in their  
 " provision against *Jesuits*, which sentence be-  
 " ing regularly pronounced at the last court of  
 " assistants against these parties, and they either  
 " returning, or continuing presumptuously in  
 " this jurisdiction after the time limited, were  
 " apprehended, and owning themselves to be  
 " the persons banished, were sentenced by the  
 " court to death, according to the law afore-  
 " said, which hath been executed on two of  
 " them. Mary Dyer, upon petition of her son,  
 " and the mercy and clemency of this court,  
 " had liberty to depart within two days, which  
 " she hath accepted of. The consideration of  
 " our gradual proceedings will vindicate us

XVI.  
1659.

They never made use of their influence over their adherents to stir up sedition in the state, or to overturn government, in order to fix themselves therein; but ever asserted the use of arms to be inconsistent with christianity, and that universal peace and charity were the genuine productions of the gospel of Christ. Wherein then lies the parallel between these Anabaptists and them? Were I inclined to draw parallels, I certainly might point out a nearer resemblance between the proceedings of some other sects of that age, and these disturbers of the public peace, than those of this harmless body of men.

CHAP. " from the clamorous accusations of severity ;  
 XVI. " our own just and necessary defence calling  
 ~~~ " upon us (other means failing) to offer the  
 1659. " point which these persons have violently and  
 " wilfully rushed upon, and thereby become  
 " *Felones de se*, which, might it have been pre-  
 " vented, and the sovereign law *salus populi* been  
 " preserved, our former proceedings, as well  
 " as the sparing *Mary Dyer*, upon an inconsi-  
 " derable intercession, will evidently evince, we  
 " desire their lives absent, rather than their  
 " deaths present."

To conclude, this apology throughout proves a bad cause, the reasons advanced, when stripped of falsehood and exaggeration, are too futile to be admitted by reasonable and unprejudiced persons as a plea for moderate punishment, much less for putting men to death.

1660.  
Mary Dyer  
returns to  
Boston.

Mary Dyer finding herself under a necessity, laid on her from the requirings of the spirit of the Lord, to go back again to *Boston*, returned accordingly thither on the 21st of 3d month this year ; and on the 31st of the same was sent for by the general court; \* being come, Endicott, the governor, said, *Are you the same Mary Dyer, that was here before ?* And it seems he was preparing an evasion for her, there having been another of that name lately come from England. But she, far from any disguise, undauntedly answered, *I am the same Mary Dyer that was here the last general court.* Then Endicot said, *You will own yourself a Quaker, will you not ?* To which she answered, *I own myself to be reproachfully called so :* Endicot said, *The sentence was passed upon her the last general court, and now likewise :*

Sentenced  
to death  
a second  
time.

*You*

\* *Besse.*

You must return to the prison, and there remain until to-morrow at nine o'clock; then from thence you must go to the gallows, and there be hanged until you are dead. To which she answered, This is no more than what thou saidst before. Endicot replied; but now it is to be executed, therefore prepare yourself to-morrow at nine o'clock. She then spoke thus: I came in obedience to the will of God, the last general court, desiring you to repeal your unrighteous laws for banishment on pain of death; and that same is my work now, and earnest request; although I told you, that if you refused to repeal them, the Lord would send others of his servants to witness against them. Hereupon Endicot asked her, Whether she was a prophetess? She answered, She spoke the words that the Lord spoke to her, and now the thing was come to pass. And beginning to speak of her call, Endicot cried, Away with her, away with her. So she was brought to prison, and kept close till next day.

About the time appointed, the marshal Michaelson came, and called for her to come hastily, and coming into the room where she was, she desired him to stay a little, and, speaking mildly, said, she would be ready presently: But he, being of a rough temper, said, He could not wait upon her, but she should now wait upon him. One Margaret Smith, her companion, being grieved to see such hard-heartedness, spoke something against their unjust laws and proceedings: To which he said, You shall have your share of the same. Then Mary Dyer was brought forth, and with a band of soldiers led through the town, the drums being beaten before and behind her, and so continued, that none might hear her speak by whom she is taken out to execution with a band of soldiers and drums beating. all

C H A P. all the way to the place of execution, which was  
 XVI. about a mile. Thus guarded, she came to the  
 1660. gallows, and being gone up the ladder, some  
 said to her, that if she would return she might  
 come down, and save her life. To which she re-  
 plied, Nay, I cannot, for in obedience to the will  
 of the Lord I came, and in his will I abide faith-  
 ful to death. Then Captain James Webb said, that  
 she had been there before, and had the sentence of  
 banishment upon pain of death, and had broken the  
 law in coming again now; and therefore was guilty  
 of her own blood. To which she returned, Nay,  
*I came to keep blood-guiltiness from you, desiring you*  
*to repeal the unrighteous and unjust law of banish-.*  
*ment upon pain of death, made against the innocent*  
*servants of the Lord, therefore my blood will be re-*  
*quired at your hands who wilfully do it; but for*  
*those that do it in the simplicity of their hearts, I*  
*desire the Lord to forgive them. I came to do the*  
*will of my Father, and in obedience to his will, I stand*  
*even to death.* Then Priest Wilson said, Mary  
 Dyer, O repent, O repent, and be not so deluded, and  
 carried away by the deceit of the devil. To this  
 she answered, Nay, man, I am not now to repent.  
 And being asked by some, Whether she would  
 have the elders pray for her? She said, I know  
 never an elder here. Being farther asked, Whe-  
 ther she would have any of the people pray for  
 her? She said, I desire the prayers of all the peo-  
 ple of God. Thereupon some scoffingly said,  
 It may be she thinks there are none here. To  
 which she replied, I know but few here. Then  
 they spoke to her again, that one of the elders  
 might pray for her. To which she replied, Nay,  
 first a child, then a young man, then a strong man,  
 before an elder in Christ Jesus. After this she  
 was charged with something, which was not  
 understood

Her beha-  
viour and  
discourse at  
the place of  
execution.

understood what it was ; but she seemed to hear c H A P. it ; for she said, *It is false, it is false, I never spoke those words.* Then one mentioned that she should have said, *she had been in paradise.* To which she answered, *Yea, I have been in paradise these several days.* And more she spoke of the eternal happiness, into which she was now to enter. Thus Mary Dyer departed this life, a constant and faithful martyr to Christ, having been twice led to death, which the first time she expected with an entire resignation of mind to the will of God, and now suffered with christian fortitude, being raised above the fear of death, through a blessed hope, and glorious assurance of eternal life and immortality.

There were at this time \* eleven others prisone- Eleven  
others in  
prison. rs in Boston, of whom Christopher Holder was sentenced to banishment upon pain of death, six were sentenced to be whipped, and four ordered to depart the colony.

Having now brought up the transactions of the government of Massachusetts Bay, in relation to the Quakers, to the present period of this history, it is time to take a view of the proceedings against this people in other colonies. The colony of New Plymouth copied after that of the Massachusetts, as appears by a letter of James Cudworth, who had borne the offices of a magistrate and a captain or commission officer there, till he resigned the one, and was discharged from the other, for discovering some humanity to the persecuted Quakers, of which letter to a friend in London, as from an impartial hand, I copy an abstract,

\* Christopher Holder, Daniel Gould, Robert Harper, William King, Margaret Smith, Mary Trask, Provided Southick, Hannah Phelps, Mary Scott and Hope Clifton.

C H A P. abstract, as an authentic relation of the measures  
 XVI. pursued by this government in their treatment  
 1660. of this people.

Abstract of James Cudworth's letter.

" As for the state and condition of things  
 " amongst us it is sad and like so to continue ;  
 " the antichristian, persecuting spirit is very  
 " active. He that will not whip, persecute and  
 " punish men that differ in matters of religion,  
 " must not sit on the bench, nor sustain any  
 " office in the commonwealth. Last election  
 " Mr. Hatherly and myself left off the bench,  
 " and I was discharged of my captainship because  
 " I had entertained some of the Quakers at my  
 " house, that I might be the better acquainted with  
 " their principles : I thought it better to do so,  
 " than with the blind world to censure, condemn,  
 " rail at, and revile them, when they neither  
 " saw their persons nor knew any of their prin-  
 " ciples ; but the Quakers and myself cannot  
 " close in divers things ; and so I signified to  
 " the court I was no Quaker — but withal told  
 " them, that as I was no Quaker, so I would be  
 " no persecutor : This spirit did work the two  
 " years that I was in the magistracy, during  
 " which time I was on sundry occasions forced  
 " to declare my dissent in sundry actings of that  
 " nature, which though done with all modera-  
 " tion and due respect, yet wrought great dis-  
 " affecton and prejudice in them against me,  
 " and produced a petition to the court against  
 " me, signed with nineteen hands, which was  
 " followed by another in my favour signed with  
 " fifty-four hands — The court returned in an-  
 " swer to the last petition, that they acknow-  
     ledged

“ ledged my parts and gifts, and professed they C H A P.  
“ had nothing against me, only in the thing of XVI.  
“ my giving entertainment to the Quakers,  
“ though I broke no law in so doing, for our law  
“ then was, *If any entertain a Quaker, and keep*  
“ *him after he is warned by a magistrate to depart,*  
“ *he shall pay 20s. a week for entertaining him.*  
“ But since that a law hath been made, *That if*  
“ *any entertain a Quaker, though but a quarter*  
“ *of an hour, he shall forfeit 5l.* Another, *That*  
“ *if any see a Quaker, he is bound, though he live*  
“ *six miles or more from a constable, to give imme-*  
“ *diate notice to him, or else be subject to the cen-*  
“ *sure of the court.* Another—*That if the con-*  
“ *stable know or hear of any Quaker in his pre-*  
“ *cincts, he is presently to apprehend him, and if*  
“ *he will not presently depart the town, to whip*  
“ *and send him away.* Divers have been whipped  
“ within our patent; and truly to tell you plain-  
“ ly, the whipping of them with that cruelty, as  
“ some of them have been whipped, and their  
“ patience under it, hath sometimes been the  
“ occasion of gaining more adherents to them,  
“ than if they had suffered them openly to have  
“ preached a sermon.

“ Another law made against the *Quakers* is,  
“ That if there be a *Quakers-meeting* any where  
“ in this colony, the party in whose house or on  
“ whose ground it is, shall pay 40s. the preacher  
“ 40s. and every hearer 40s. Our last law is—  
“ That the *Quakers* are to be apprehended, and  
“ carried before a magistrate, and by him com-  
“ mitted to close prison till they will promise to  
“ depart, and never come again, and will also  
“ pay their fees (neither of which they will ever  
“ do) and they must be kept only with the coun-  
“ try allowance (which is coarse bread and water.)

“ No

CHAP. " No friend may bring them any thing, nor be  
 ~~~~~ XVI. " permitted to speak to them ; nay, if they have  
 " money of their own, they may not make use  
 " of it to relieve themselves.

" All these carnal and antichristian ways being  
 " not of God's appointment, effect nothing as  
 " to the obstructing or hindering them in their  
 " way or course. It is only the word and spirit  
 " of the Lord that is able to convince gainfay-  
 " ers ; these are the mighty weapons of a chris-  
 " tian's warfare, by which mighty things are  
 " done and accomplished.

" The Quakers have many meetings and many  
 " adherents, almost the whole town of Sandwich  
 " is adhering to them. Their sufferings are  
 " grievous to, and fadden the hearts of most of  
 " the pious and virtuous part of this common-  
 " wealth, it lies down and rises up with them, and  
 " they cannot put it out of their minds—The  
 " Massachusets have banished six on pain of death,  
 " and I wish that blood may not be shed : Our  
 " poor people are pillaged and plundered of their  
 " goods, and haply when they have no more to  
 " satisfy the insatiable desire of their persecutors,  
 " may be forced to fly, and glad to have their  
 " lives for a prey.

" The means whereby they are impoverished,  
 " are their scrupling an oath, and for their  
 " meetings: It being found that they had a con-  
 " scientious scruple against swearing, all were  
 " called upon to take the oath of fidelity, which  
 " they refusing, a clause was added, That if any  
 " man refused or neglected to take it by such a  
 " time, he should pay 5l. or depart the colony ;  
 " They are required to take the oath again at  
 " every successive court, and as they cannot, they  
 " are distrained over and over again. On this

" account

“ account thirty-five head of cattle, as I have CHAP  
“ been credibly informed, have been by the XVI.  
“ authority of our court taken from them the  
“ latter part of this summer.

1660.

“ The last court of assistants—the court was  
“ pleased to determine fines on Sandwich men  
“ for meetings 150l. whereof William Newland  
“ is charged 24l. for himself and wife; William  
“ Allen 46l. and a poor weaver 20l. Brother  
“ Cook told me, one of the brethren was in the  
“ house, when the marshal came to demand the  
“ money, when all that he was worth did not  
“ amount to 10l. What will be the end of such  
“ courses or practices the Lord only knows!

“ Our civil powers are so exercised in mat-  
“ ters of religion and conscience, that we have  
“ no time to do any thing that tends to promote  
“ the civil prosperity of the place. We must  
“ now have a state religion, such as the powers  
“ of this world will allow, and no other; a state  
“ ministry and a state way of maintenance, and  
“ we must worship and serve the Lord Jesus  
“ as the world shall appoint us; we must all  
“ go to the publick place of meeting in the pa-  
“ rish where we dwell, or be presented. I am  
“ informed of three or fourscore last court pre-  
“ sented for not coming to public meetings, at  
“ ten shillings a time.

“ We are wrapped up in a labyrinth of con-  
“ fused laws, that the freemen’s power is quite  
“ gone. Sandwich men may not go to the bay,  
“ lest they be taken up for Quakers. William  
“ Newland was there about his occasions ten  
“ days ago, and they put him in prison twenty-  
“ four hours, and sent for divers to witness  
“ against him, but had not proof enough to  
“ make him a Quaker, which if they had, he

“ should

CHAP. " should have been whipped ; nay, they may  
 XVI. " not go about their occasions in other towns in  
 ~~~~~ " our colony ; but warrants lie in ambush to  
 " apprehend and bring them before a magistrate,  
 " to give an account of their busines.

" JAMES CUDWORTH."

Robert Hodgson.

J. Bound.

I do not find that during this period, any of those called Quakers had as yet visited any other of the American settlements on the continent, except the Dutch colony of New Amsterdam, (now New York) where some of them, particularly Robert Hodgson, underwent grievous sufferings from the Dutch governor, by the instigation and example of the New England persecutors. But the Dutch governor after some time relented, excused their imprisoning and banishing, as being short of the cruelty of the Quakers own countrymen in New England : And John Bound having been treated very hardly by him, imprisoned in a cold dungeon, almost famished there, and banished to Holland, where the states giving him his liberty he returned home again ; and some time after the governor meeting him in the street, seemed ashamed of what he had done, and told him *He was glad to see him safe home again* ; adding, *he hoped he should never do so any more to any of his friends* : A token of repentance, and of an ingenuous disposition, such as few, if any, of the New England persecutors ever discovered.

Except also the province of *Maryland*, where in or about the year 1658 several of the inhabitants, being convinced of the principles of the people called Quakers, were brought under suffering, but in little degree of comparison with the

the sufferings in New England, being mostly in fines for non-compliance with the military laws, and their conscientious refusal to take an oath.

---

## C H A P. XVII.

### E U R O P E and A S I A.

*William Caton goes to Calais.—Afterwards to Holland with John Stubbs.—To Holland a second Time.—William Caton at Rotterdam and Amsterdam meets with little satisfaction.—Is imprisoned at Middleburgh, and sent back to England.—Christopher Birkhead goes to France.—Thence to Middleburgh in Zeeland.—Accusation against him.—His Defence.—He is condemned to the Rasphouse for two Years.—George Bailey dies in Prison in France.—George Robinson, in a Journey to Jerusalem, meets with a Variety of Dangers.—Through which he was preserved to return home in safety.—Mary Fisher travels to Adrianople to visit Sultan Mahomet 4th.—By whom her visit is favourably received.*

**T**H E divine light which the people called Quakers believed in and testified of, they believed to be universal. “ That true light, which “ lighteth every man that cometh into the “ world.” So was their good-will to mankind, and desire to bring them to the acknowledgment of the truth, and to turn the attention of their minds

C H A P.

XVII.

1655.

to

CHAP. to this light, also universal. They did not confine their labours and travels, in this early day, to the British dominions solely ; but from a convincing evidence of a divine impulse upon their spirits, and a necessity of obedience thereunto, they were animated to travel, even as with their lives in their hands, into different states of the continent of Europe, and even into Asia, to bear testimony to the truth, in the face of its greatest opposers ; for being supported by the inward consciousness of being engaged in a good cause, they were borne up above the fear of man ; and feeling the divine presence accompanying them through the greatest difficulties, some of them were enabled chearfully to lay down their lives in his service, who, they believed, had called them thereto ; and others were preserved by signal deliverances from imminent dangers, to which they were expos'd.

W. Caton  
goes to  
Calais.

William Caton being at Dover, as before related, went over to Calais, where his spirit was burdened in beholding the idolatry of their worship, but he could not ease his spirit by pointing out to them a better way, as he was not master of the French language ; and therefore was on the point of returning home without finding any opportunity of service there; yet afterwards it was ordered, that several of the principal inhabitants sought him out, and gave him a favourable hearing at a large house in the town, where a Scotch Lord interpreting for him, he cleared his conscience in declaring the doctrines of truth, and then departed without molestation.

To Holland  
with John  
Stubbs.

Upon his return to Dover he found his companion John Stubbs there, with whom he passed over to Holland, but they found little favourable

able reception for their ministry there at that time.

XVII.

In the next year, 1656, William Ames, John Stubbs and William Caton went over to Holland again. At Amsterdam they met with some English people. who received the doctrine they preached, but the impression it made upon them was not lasting. William Caton travelled to Rotterdam, where for want of an interpreter that understood English, he was obliged to deliver himself in Latin. Here he was much troubled in meeting with some wild and unruly persons, who having been partly convinced by William Ames, went under the denomination of Quakers, but ran out in such whimsical imaginations and unmeaning extravagancies in their expressions, writings and conduct, that the magistrates thought them not unfit objects for imprisonment in Bedlam. The ringleader of these people was one Isaac Furnier, a passionate, capricious man, placing holiness in absurd conduct, and incident incivility of language, with whom the genuine Quakers could have no unity, although he had translated several of their writings into the Dutch language, and thereby might seem to lay claim to the name. At last he turned Papist, and fell into a dissolute, debauched life.

From Rotterdam William Caton returned to Amsterdam, but met with little more satisfaction there. For there were several professors, who were ready to approve the doctrine of the Quakers, but being airy notionists, were more intent in comprehending it in theory, than reducing it to practice, too wise for instruction, and too full of their own wisdom and speculations to receive the truth in the love of it. Amongst such opinionated

W. Caton  
at Amster-  
dam meets  
with little  
satisfaction.

**C H A P.** nionated professors seeing little probability of much service, he left them, and returned by Rotterdam to Zealand ; arriving at Middleburgh in **xvii.** company with a young man, who went to some of their meeting places in that city, he was apprehended. William Caton hearing of his imprisonment, and going to visit him in prison, was himself detained there some days ; but being at that time indisposed, the magistrates ordered them both to be sent to England. In consequence whereof they were conducted by a guard of soldiers on board a ship of war, where William Caton in his infirm state suffered great hardship, the seamen being so ill natured, that they would not allow him so much as a piece of sail cloth, but he was obliged to lie upon the bare boards in very cold and stormy weather ; yet through the merciful support of divine providence under this hard usage, he recovered strength till he arrived in London, where he was received with much cordiality by his friends.

**1657.**  
Chr. Birkhead goes to France,

thence to Middleburgh in Zealand.

Christopher Birkhead went over to France, and was imprisoned at Rochelle for advancing some objections against the Romish religion, where he was first examined by the bishop ; and some bigotted zealots wanted to have him condemned to the flames, but the criminal judge absolved him. After which in the beginning of this year he travelled into Holland, and arriving at Middleburgh, he went to the English congregation there, and after their preacher William Spank had preached about three quarters of an hour, he thus spake, “ Friends, the Apostles “ faith, That we may prophesy one by one, “ that two or three prophets may speak, and “ the others judge, and if any thing be revealed “ to

“ to him that sits by, let the first hold his peace.” C H A P. This caused a great stir in the congregation, XVII. whereupon Birkhead, instead of being further heard, was apprehended and detained in custody. <sup>1657.</sup> On the 19th <sup>1<sup>mo</sup>.</sup> 1657, the following charge was exhibited against him.

“ The bailiff of the city of Middleburgh <sup>Accusation</sup>  
 “ demandeth, according to his office, against <sup>against him.</sup>  
 “ Christopher Birkhead.  
 “ WHEREAS the said Christopher Birkhead  
 “ is a maker of uproars, seditions, and a blas-  
 “ phemer against the servants, ministers or  
 “ preachers of the reformed churches,  
 “ Therefore it is demanded, that the ensuing  
 “ punishments be inflicted on him; first, that he  
 “ be brought before the Stadthouse, and there  
 “ be put upon a scaffold and whipped with rods,  
 “ and burned with the mark of this city of  
 “ Middleburgh, and for some years to be put  
 “ in the Rasp-house, and there to rasp and  
 “ work, the time left to the discretion of the  
 “ Lords, and afterwards to be banished out of  
 “ the jurisdiction of these lands.”

I regret that occasions occur so frequently in <sup>Remark.</sup> the progress of this work, to remark the unchristian temper and vindictive spirit which actuated those high professors of religion, who assumed to themselves the title of *reformed churches*, in different quarters of the world; as the repetition of reflections naturally arising from my subject, may be misconstrued to arise from a personal dislike to this body of men: But as I trust I am disposed and desirous to pay a proper regard to the reformed religion in its purity, viz. sincerity of heart toward God, in my own conduct, so I highly respect it in all men, and every society

CHAP. society of men under whatever denomination  
 XVII. they may be distinguished. My reflections are  
 ~~ not pointed so much at any body of men, as at  
 1657. things disgraceful to every body of men. Not  
 at any profession of religion, but at things in-  
 consistent with religion and morality ; *cruelty, ma-*  
*lice, injustice and revenge*, being properties as  
 opposite to christianity, as darkness to light.

It is evident that the punishments demanded  
 against this man are quite disproportionate to any  
 just offence he had given, by simply reminding  
 an auditory of the apostolical order established  
 in the worship of the primitive church, as an  
 introduction to what he thought it his duty to  
 declare unto them. The charge and the requisition  
 of punishment bear the plain marks of passion,  
 injustice and virulence, putting an offender, in  
 so small an instance, on a level with the basest  
 criminals, and incensing the magistrates to in-  
 flict on an honest man, for an action simply reli-  
 gious, the severest and most disgraceful punish-  
 ments the malice of his persecutors could con-  
 trive.

Chr. Birk-  
head puts in  
his defence. The prisoner put in his defence, in reply to  
 the charges exhibited against him ; wherein he  
 denies and confutes them all : that he made no  
 uproar or sedition, such a thing being the far-  
 thest from his disposition, thoughts or intention.  
 That he was no more a maker of uproars than  
 Paul and Silas at Thyatira (Acts xvi, 19.) Or  
 than Paul was at Ephesus, when no small stir  
 arose about that way (Acts ix, 23, &c.) That  
 if any uproar was made, justice pointed out for  
 punishment those who made it, who were the  
 rude multitude, that gave him much personal  
 abuse, and cast him into prison, when he neither  
 did or thought evil against them. As to the  
 charge

charge of his being a \* blasphemer against the C H A P. servants, ministers or preachers of the reformed XVII. churches, he answered, " The servants of the church reformed by Christ are my brethren, " and the ministers and preachers thereof I honour in the Lord, but if any profess to be re-formed and live in iniquity, such I disown." 1657.

Next, in regard to the required punishments of whipping and branding, he asserted himself no beggar nor infamous person, having asked for nothing but what he paid for ; and had brought a sufficiency from home to bear his charges thither again, if not restrained by them too long in a foreign land.

And as to the third punishment, of being committed to the Raspe-house, he signified, he was not an idle person who had need to be forced to work, but was a man diligent in his outward employments to maintain his family, of which he could produce many witnesses, if he might have permission to write home : and in this punishment that his suffering would not be single, but that of his wife and children would be involved in it.

His defence prevented the inflicting of the more ignominious parts of the demanded punishments ; but the magistrates gratified his adversaries so far as to sentence him to be put in the Raspe-house for two years, and then be banished, and pay all the charge. Accordingly he was put into the Raspe-house, and continued there two years, suffering much hardship. And after the expiration of the time, he was still detained under pretence of fees and other claims made by

He is condemned to the Raspe-house for two years.

VOL. I.

D d

the

\* This word is used here in a very uncommon and unscriptural sense.

**C H A P.** the keeper, till at length he was set at liberty  
**XVII.** by the interposition of Heer Newport, ambassa-  
 dor of the States-General in England. A very  
 1657. severe punishment for uttering a portion of scrip-  
 ture.

G. Bailey  
goes to  
France and  
dies in pri-  
son.

About the same time George Bailey coming into France, and zealously testifying against popery and worshipping of images, was apprehended and cast into prison, and there ended his days.

G. Robinson  
goes to Je-  
rusalem and  
meets with  
a variety of  
occurrences.

<sup>c</sup> In this year also George Robinson, a young man of London, found himself constrained, from an internal conviction of duty, to travel to Jerusalem, to bear testimony against the idolatry of pilgrimages. Accordingly he embarked for Leghorn, and from thence took shipping for St. John D'acra, so called, formerly Ptolemais in Asia, and from thence continued his course to Joppa, and thence to Ramoth; but the friars at Jerusalem having received intelligence of his approach, and that his testimony struck at the superstition, whereby they were supported, procured him here to be intercepted and confined. After about twenty-four hours imprisonment, an ancient Turk of reputation took him to his house, and entertained him with much civility several days; at length an Irish friar came from Jerusalem, and informed him that he was sent by his fraternity there to propose to him three questions, viz.

1. Whether he would promise, when he came to Jerusalem, to visit the holy places, as other pilgrims did?

2. Whether he would pay such sums of money as it was customary with pilgrims to pay?

3. Whether

<sup>c</sup> Besse, v. ii.

3. Whether he would wear such a habit as C H A P.  
pilgrims usually wear?

XVII.

To which questions the following injunctions  
were added :

1657.

1. Not to speak any thing against the *Turkish*  
laws.

2. When he should come to Jerusalem not  
to speak any thing about religion.

But steadfastly refusing to answer their questions, or to submit to their injunctions, he was, by the said friar, who had brought with him a guard of horse and foot for that purpose, taken forcibly away, carried back to Joppa, and there embarked in a vessel, which landed him again at St. John D'acra; here he was hospitably entertained by a French merchant, and by his assistance, being still under an apprehension of duty to prosecute his journey, he got an opportunity to return to Joppa, and from thence travelled on foot to Ramoth. On the road he fell into the hands of three robbers, who plundered him, but either by reason of his innocent behaviour moving them to compassion, or the ordering of Divine Providence, they returned him what they had taken from him, and conducted him a little on his way in a friendly manner. Upon his arrival at Ramoth he was seized by the contrivance of the friars, and forcibly carried into one of the Turkish mosques, it being said to be a custom amongst the Turks, that whosoever enters one of their mosques must either turn mahometan or suffer death. He was accordingly interrogated, "Whether he " would turn to the Mahometan religion?" And upon his refusing, they pressed him with much

D d 2 solicitation;

CHAP. solicitation ; but he persisting in his refusal, and  
XVII. letting them know he could not turn to their  
~~~~ religion for all the world, some of them at  
1657. length grew angry, and declared if he did not turn to their religion he should die ; to which, replying, “ He would rather chuse the hard “ alternative of suffering death than violate his “ conscience by turning to them,” he was delivered to the executioner, who dragged him away to the place, where it was expected, he should be burned to death. Here they caused him to sit down on the ground, as a sheep amongst wolves. As he sat, resigned in his mind, with inward supplication, and trust in divine protection, the divine Providence interposed for his deliverance, for some of the Turks having observed that his entrance into the mosque was not voluntary, but by a crafty contrivance of the friars to ensnare him, they began to differ in their opinions about him, when a grave ancient Turk came to him, and told him, *Whether he would turn to their religion or not, he should not die.* Then being brought before the priests again, and the query put to him, *Will you turn ?* and he answering, *No,* they recorded in a book, that *he was no Roman Catholick, but of another religion;* for though he owned himself a Christian, yet his declarations against their superstitions, and the enmity of the friars against him, plainly discovered he was not of their communion. Next, the friars having exerted themselves to incense the Basha of Gaza against him, and hoping that by their insinuations they had made him Robinson’s enemy, they hired a guard of horsemen to conduct him to Gaza, where being arrived,

rived, he found things had taken an unexpected C H A P. turn in his favour; for some of the Turks XVII. having informed the Basha of the malice of the friars against the man, he made them pay a considerable fine, and obliged them to convey him safely to Jerusalem. Being come thither, he was, by the appointment of the friars, brought into their convent. 1657.

Here the friars used every artifice to prevail with him to conform to the superstitious customs of the pilgrims of their communion, in visiting the holy places, (as they termed them) offering, in that case, to relinquish their usual demands, and that *whereas others paid great sums of money to see them, he should see them for nothing*; but believing his mission as to them was to bear testimony against the superstitious veneration for those places, propagated and upheld by them for filthy lucre, he steadfastly resisted all their solicitations and flattering persuasions, alledged, *that in visiting those places in their manner he should sin against God*: That *they under a pretence of doing service to God, in visiting those places where the holy men of God dwelt, did oppose that way, and resist that life, which the holy men of God walked and lived in*; upon which one of the friars said, “What do you preach to us for?” To which he answered, *That he would have them turn from those evil practices, else the wrath of the Almighty would be kindled against them*. This doctrine being highly ungrateful they insisted upon his paying five and twenty dollars, under pretence that the Turks must be paid, whether he would visit the usual places or not, but if he would visit them they would pay for him; but he signified,

**C H A P** signified, *He could not comply with any such unreasonable demands.*

**XVII.** Then they brought him before a Turk in authority in that place, who asked him divers questions, to which he returned solid answers. And entering into conversation about the worship of Christians, the Turk asked Robinson, *What was the cause of his coming to Jerusalem?* To which he answered, *It was by the command of the Lord God of heaven and earth he came thither; and that the great and tender love of God was manifest in visiting them, his compassionate mercies being such as that he would gather them in this the day of his gathering.*

Returns in  
facty. Having borne his testimony against the superstition of the friars, and discharged himself of the message he believed himself sent to deliver, he found, as he declared, great peace with the Lord, magnifying his glorious name, who had favoured him with his supporting power, and signally preserved him through many trials and dangers; for the friars, who had intended him a mischief, and meditated his destruction, were restrained by the authority of the Turks, and by them obliged to conduct him back again to Ramoth. Thus delivered from the hands of his enemies he returned to his native country.

Mary Fisher  
hath a con-  
cern to visit  
Sult. Ma-  
homet IV.  
<sup>f</sup> But the concern of Mary Fisher, a religious maiden, whose sufferings in New England have been already related, is still more remarkable, both for the extraordinary nature thereof, and the reception she met with. Being returned to London, she felt a religious concern upon her mind, to pay a visit to Sultan Mahomet IV. then encamped

<sup>f</sup> *BeTe*, vol. ii. p. 394.

encamped with his army near Adrianople. Accordingly she proceeded on her way as far as Smyrna, where she was stopped by the English consul and sent back to Venice, from whence she made her way by land to Adrianople, being preserved from any manner of abuse through a long journey of five or six hundred miles. Being come thither, she communicated her business to some of the citizens, and requested them to accompany her to the camp, but fearing the Sultan's displeasure they declined compliance, wherefore she went to the camp alone, and procured intelligence to be given to the Grand Vizier, that *there was an English woman who had something to declare from the great God to the Sultan*, who sent her word that *she should speak to him the next morning*. She returned to the city that night, and back to the camp at the time appointed, when the Sultan, attended by his great officers of state, sent for her in, and asked her, *Whether what had been reported to him was fact, that she had a message from the Lord?* She answered in the affirmative; upon which he bid her *speak on*; and as she stood silent a little, with her mind retired in inward supplication, and waiting for the proper motion and power to give weight and energy to what she had to deliver, the Sultan supposing she might be oppressed with awe, to utter herself before them all, asked her whether *she desired* <sup>Is favourably receiv-</sup> *that any of the company might retire?* She answered, *Nay;* then he desired her to speak the word of the Lord to them, and not to fear, for they had good hearts, and could hear it; strictly charging her to *speak the word she had to say from the Lord, neither more nor less,* for they

CHAP. they were willing to hear it, be it what it  
 XVII. would. Upon her speaking they all gave at-  
 tention with much seriousness and gravity 'till  
 1657. she had concluded, and then the Sultan en-  
 quired if *she had any more to say.* She asked,  
 if he understood what she had said? He replied,  
*Yes, every word,* adding that *it was truth,* and  
 desired her to stay in the country, for they  
 could not but respect one who had taken so  
 much pains as to come so far with such a mes-  
 sage, and offered her a guard to escort her to  
 Constantinople, whither she intended to go;  
 which kind offer she modestly declined, con-  
 fiding in that divine arm which had brought  
 her thither for her safe conduct home again.  
 He reminded her it was dangerous travelling  
 alone, especially for such a one as her, and  
 seemed to admire she had passed safe so far,  
 adding, *it was out of respectful concern for her*  
*safety he offered her a guard, as he would not*  
*for any consideration she should suffer the least*  
*injury in his dominions.* Then they asked, *What*  
*she thought of their prophet Mahomet?* She  
 made a cautious reply, that *she knew him not;*  
*but she knew Christ, the true prophet, the son of*  
*God; who was the light of the world, and en-*  
*lighteneth every man that cometh into the world,*  
 adding, *If the word that the prophet speaketh*  
*cometh to pass, then shall ye know that the Lord*  
*bath sent that prophet; but if it come not to*  
*pass, then shall ye know the Lord never sent*  
*him;* to which they assented, and acknowledged  
 it to be truth; and so she departed to Constan-  
 tinople without a guard, and arrived there in  
 safety without the least injury or insult, and  
 afterwards in England. When we contrast this

candid

candid reception which she met with from those we account infidels, with that which she found amongst the self-opinionated professors of christianity in New England, we cannot but regret, that the best religion the world was ever blessed with, and in its own purity so far surpassing in excellence, should, on the comparison with human infidelity, be so tarnished, through the degeneracy of its professors, who under the name of Christian, in morality, generosity and humanity, fall short of those who name not the name of Christ. Is not her remarkable preservation in this long and tedious journey an argument of the truth of her mission, and of divine Providence protecting her in the performance of her duty, and in yielding obedience to divine requirings.

C H A P.  
XVII.  
1657.



---

---

H I S T O R Y  
O F T H E  
PEOPLE CALLED QUAKERS.

---

B O O K III.

From the Restoration of King Charles II.  
to his Declaration of Indulgence.

---

C H A P. I.

*The Members of the Presbyterian Party restored to their Seats in Parliament.—A new Parliament elected.—The King restored.—Seven Hundred of the People called Quakers released from Prison.—The Mayor of Lancaster imprisons George Fox.—Margaret Fell's Narrative of his Apprehension.—She lays his Case before the King.—Habeas Corpus obtained to remove him to the King's Bench.—Referred to the King and Council.—He is set at liberty.—Richard Hubberthorn hath a Conference with the King.*

THE convulsed state of the nation at this pe- C H A P.  
riod inciting most men of moderation and con- L.  
sequence to an earnest wish for some settled  
stable form of government, paved the way for  
the

1660.

**C H A P.** the exiled prince's restoration to the throne of his ancestors. The members of the Presbyterian party, who were secluded in 1648, being by Monk restored to their seats in parliament, upon their entrance, the independent members finding themselves the minority, withdrew, and left the management of affairs to their antagonists, who soon after dissolved their assembly, and issued writs for the election of a free parliament, which meeting on the 25th of the month called April, the house of lords received a letter from the king from Breda, expressing his hopes, that as they were now restored to their privileges, they would use their endeavours to appease the troubles of the kingdom, re-establish himself in possession of his just prerogatives, the parliament in that of their privileges, and the people of their liberties. At the same time his declaration was delivered, wherein, amongst other benefits to the subject, he promised to indulge tender and scrupulous consciences in matters of religion \*. And a like letter and declaration being also delivered to the commons, King Charles the second was in consequence restored to the sovereignty of these kingdoms by the united consent

**The king restored.**

\* “ Because the passion and uncharitableness of the times  
 “ have produced several opinions in religion, by which men  
 “ are engaged in parties and animosities against each other,  
 “ which when they shall hereafter unite in a freedom of  
 “ conversation, will be composed or better understood, We  
 “ do declare a liberty to tender consciences; and that no man  
 “ shall be disquieted or called in question for differences of  
 “ opinion in matters of religion, which do not disturb the  
 “ peace of the kingdom, and that we shall be ready to con-  
 “ sent to such an *act of parliament*, as upon mature delibera-  
 “ tion shall be offered to us for the full granting that indul-  
 “ gence.” King Charles's declaration from Breda.

**I**  
 1660.  
 The members of the  
 Presbyterian party  
 restored to  
 their seats  
 in parlia-  
 ment.

A free par-  
 liament e-  
 lected.

consent of the other two estates of the nation, C H A P.  
and after an exile of twelve years, in which he  
had suffered many flights and distresses; after  
sundry ineffectual efforts of his partisans to  
restore him by the sword, through the ordering  
hand of Divine Providence, he was at last peace-  
ably restored without bloodshed. I.  
1660.

The society of those called Quakers, at least, (as appears by their writings) in general, looked upon the restoration of the king as a signal instance of the interposition of Divine Providence in restoring peace and order to the distract-  
ed nation, of which they were not wanting repeatedly to remind both the king and people: And if these had looked upon it in the same light with becoming gratitude and thankfulness, they might have been preserved in a greater propriety of conduct; but this revolution in the government was productive of a scandalous alter-  
ation in the manners of the age. This king, and many of his courtiers, having in their exile, through a season of successive indolence, and from their aversion to the precise formality of the authors of their humiliation, contracted habits of voluptuousness, sensuality and libertinism in sentiment and morals; by their example, and the propensity of human nature, more fa-  
gacious to descry error than to investigate truth, to transgress the limits of rectitude and to run from one extreme to another; the nation, in too general a way, became very corrupt and licentious in their way of thinking and conduct. Because the late rulers appeared to have disguised pernicious designs under a mask of religion, it became fashionable to ridicule every appearance of religion and of sobriety as mere hypocrisy;

and

**C H A P.** and in this aversion to the appearance, the reality  
 I. was lost. The temper of the age was truly  
 ~~~~~ irreligious, and debauchery, riot and intempe-  
 1660. rance, to a great degree, took place of the ap-  
 parent decorum and regard to sobriety in the  
 manners of the preceding age\*.

In

\* Neale gives the following description of the temper of the people under this and the preceding governments :

" The dress and conversation of the people was sober and  
 " virtuous, and their manner of living remarkably frugal :  
 " There was hardly a single bankruptcy to be heard of in a  
 " year, and in such a case the bankrupt had a mark of  
 " infamy upon him, that he could never wipe off. Drunken-  
 " ness, fornication, profane swearing, and every kind of  
 " debauchery were justly deemed infamous, and universally  
 " discountenanced. The clergy were laborious to excess in  
 " preaching and praying, in catechising youth, and visiting  
 " their parishes. The magistrates did their duty in sup-  
 " pressing all kinds of games, stage plays and abuses in public  
 " houses. There was not a play acted on any theatre in  
 " England for almost twenty years.

" But when the legal constitution was restored, there  
 " returned with it a torrent of debauchery and wickedness.  
 " The times which followed the restoration were the reverse  
 " of those that preceded it ; for the laws which had been  
 " enacted against vice for the last twenty years being declared  
 " null, and the magistrates changed, men set no bounds to  
 " their licentiousness. There were two play-houses erected  
 " in the neighbourhood of the court. *Women actresses* were  
 " introduced into the theatres, which had not been known  
 " till that time ; the most lewd and obscene plays were  
 " brought on the stage, and the more obscene the better was  
 " the king pleased, who graced every new play with his royal  
 " presence. Nothing was to be seen at court but feasting, hard  
 " drinking, revelling and amorous intrigues, which engen-  
 " dered the most enormous vices. From court the contagion  
 " spread like wild fire among the people, insomuch that men  
 " threw off the very profession of virtue and piety." Neale's  
 history of the Puritans, vol. ii. p. 564, 565.

In this interval of general joy and festivity CHAP. I. the Quakers (so called) enjoyed a good degree of quiet and respite from the grievous sufferings to which they had been for many years exposed under the preceding governments; their meetings in London and most other parts were large, and held without molestation during the first six months after the King's restoration. Cruelty was not reckoned amongst the vices to which this monarch was addicted, the easiness of his temper inclining to lenity, he appeared at this time well disposed to act up to his professions in his declaration from Breda. At the intercession of Margaret Fell and others he released about seven hundred of this people, who had been imprisoned under the government of Oliver and Richard Cromwell, and an order was drawn up for permitting them the free exercise of their worship; but by some in authority, of less placable dispositions, who disapproved of any toleration, as being retentive of the injuries they conceived themselves to have suffered from the dissenters during their rule, and desirous of an opportunity to retaliate: the ratification and issuing of this order was obstructed, till the insurrection of the fifth-monarchy-men furnished them the opportunity they wanted, and gave them a pretext to commence the oppressive measures which they had in contemplation.

Yet in some parts they were greatly molested and abused in their religious meetings during this interval. Some of the inferior magistrates of the former class, who still retained their places, and their inimical dispositions towards this body of people, continued to be vexatious to

Friends re-  
leaved from  
prison.

CHAP. to them ; in particular, Henry Porter, mayor  
I. of Lancaster, a weak temporizing man, who  
1660. had been a zealous partisan of the republicans,  
Henry Porter, mayor of Lancaster, commits G. Fox to prison.  
and very active against the King's interest, in order, it is like, to make an atonement for his past misdemeanours, and to ingratiate himself with the present powers, from a pretended zeal for the King, committed George Fox to prison, very unjustly and illegally. In the course of his travels he came to Skipton to a general meeting, which had been several years established there, (before the general establishment of meetings of discipline) for the charitable purpose of assisting and making provision for the poor amongst them ; for many, as we have seen, were reduced to poverty by exorbitant fines, severe distresses and imprisonments, so that numbers were spoiled of the whole of their property through the malice of unreasonable men. It had frequently happened that justices and military officers coming to break up this meeting, when they saw their books, and accounts of their collections and disbursements, and the care that was taken that one county should help another, as circumstances might require, instead of executing their purpose, have been obliged to commend their care, and leave them undisturbed in the exercise of the laudable object of their meeting. The poor of other societies frequently gathering in crowds upon these occasions partook of their liberality, it being their custom, after the meeting was over, to send to the bakers for bread, and distribute a loaf to each, how many soever they were ; yet these are the men on whom the contemptuous epithet of fanatick was so freely bestowed,

bestowed, by those who had no right to apply C H A P. the appellation, for their religion instructed I. them to do good to all, but especially to the household of faith; and never to introduce dis- 1660. order in the state, or do injury to any man.

From this meeting he went over by Lancaster to Swarthmore to the house of Margaret Fell, who was now a widow, her husband having been deceased about two years before: This was about the time of the King's restoration, being in the month called June, when four constables came to the said house with a warrant from the aforesaid Porter, apprehended him, and took him that night to Ulverston, where they kept him under a guard of fifteen or sixteen men, some of whom kept sentry at the chimney, for fear he should escape by that passage, so darkened were they by superstitious imaginations. Next morning they escorted him to Lancaster, exposing him to much abusive and contumelious treatment; causing him to ride on an horse behind the saddle, and otherwise manifesting their malicious temper in their ill usage of him; and brought him before the said Porter, to whom he complained of the unworthy treatment; he had received from the constables after he was their prisoner, but without redrefs. George then enquired by *what authority he had issued out his warrant to take him?* To which Porter would give no further satisfaction, than that *he had an order, but would not let him see it, for he would not reveal the King's secrets,* adding, *a prisoner was not to see for what he was committed;* a palpable instance of his want of qualification for his office: George Fox signified that was not

CHAP. reasonable, for how should he make his defence  
 then? After some more discourse his mittimus  
 was made out, the jailer sent for, and com-  
 manded to put him in the dark house; and  
 though bail was offered for his appearance, it  
 was refused, and he committed close prisoner to  
 Lancaster castle, where he was treated with  
 great incivility and rudeness, being often de-  
 barred of provisions, but as he could get them  
 under the door. He then desired two of his  
 friends to apply to the jailer for a copy of the

A copy of his mittimus applied for and refused, but his friends are permitted to view it.

*He could not give a copy of it, for another had been fined for a similar offence; but he gave them liberty to read it over, and according to the best of their recollection, the charges advanced against him were, that he was a person generally suspected to be a common disturber of the peace of the nation, an enemy to the King, and a chief upholder of the Quakers sect: That he, together with others of his fanatick opinion, have of late endeavoured to raise insurrections in these parts of the country, and to embroil the whole kingdom in blood. Wherefore the jailer was commanded to keep him in safe custody till he should be released by order of the king and parliament.*

G. Fox an-  
swers it.

Having thus got the substance of the charges contained in his mittimus, he thought himself called upon, in vindication of his innocence, to publish an immediate reply to every particular charge, clearly proving them to be downright falsehoods. That he was not generally suspected to be a common disturber of the nation's peace, having given no cause for such suspicion, his conduct having always been inoffensive and remote from disorder. That he was not an enemy to

to the king, but loved him and all men, neither C H A P. had he any reason to be his enemy, who had treated him with no rigour or offered him no injury, whereas he had been imprisoned and persecuted for eleven or twelve years by those men, who were in open hostility both against the king and his father, for whom Porter carried arms, and by whom he was advanced to the rank of a major, but had suffered no injurious treatment from the king's friends. And in reply to the charge, ' that he, together with others of his fanatick opinion, have of late endeavoured to raise insurrections, and to embroil the whole kingdom in blood,' he says, this is altogether false, he being, as to these things, as innocent as a child, and clear of any concern therein. As for the term *fanatick*, Porter was not the man to apply it to him and his friends, but might have considered himself, and learned humility at this season, in applying nearer home the fanatick opinions, which raise insurrections and embroil the whole kingdom in blood.

Margaret Fell also, considering the forcible entry and searching of her house, and arresting her guest there, as a violation of the liberty of the subject, and an injury offered to her, published the following brief narrative of his apprehension :

C H A P  
1  
1660.

To all Magistrates, concerning the wrong taking up and imprisoning of George Fox at Lancaster.

“ I do inform the governors of this nation,  
“ that Henry Porter, mayor of Lancaster, sent  
“ a warrant with four constables to my house,  
“ for which he had no authority nor order.  
“ They searched my house, and apprehended  
“ George Fox in it, who was not guilty of the  
“ breach of any law, or of any offence against  
“ any in the nation. After they had taken him,  
“ and brought him before the said Henry Porter,  
“ there was bail offered, what he would demand  
“ for his appearance, to answer what could be  
“ laid to his charge: but he (contrary to law,  
“ if he had taken him lawfully) denied to ac-  
“ cept of any bail, and clapt him up in close  
“ prison. After he was in prisone, a copy of his  
“ mittimus was demanded, which ought not to  
“ be denied to any prisoner, that so he may see  
“ what is laid to his charge: but it was denied  
“ him, a copy he could not have, only they were  
“ suffered to read it over. And every thing  
“ there charged against him was utterly false;  
“ he was not guilty of any one charge in it, as  
“ will be proved, and manifested to the nation.  
“ So let the governors consider of it. I am  
“ concerned in this thing, inasmuch as he was  
“ apprehended in my house, and if he be guilty  
“ I am so too. So I desire to have this searched  
“ out.

MARGARET FELL.”

Margaret

Margaret Fell further determined to take a c h a p. journey to London, to solicit the King's protection, and lay the circumstances of George Fox's imprisonment before him; which when Porter understood he went also, with a view to frustrate her endeavours: but when he made his appearance at court, having been a zealous partisan for the parliament, and being charged by some of the courtiers with plundering their houses, he thought it safest to make a speedy retreat, and return home. So Margaret Fell being joined by Anne Curtis (whose father had been sheriff of Bristol, and had suffered death for endeavouring to bring in the King) on whose account they were favourably received, laid the case of George Fox before the King, requesting his favourable interposition, *to cause him to be removed to London, and hear his cause himself;* which request he readily complied with, and gave command to his secretary to send down an order for his removal accordingly; upon their application to the secretary, he informed them that according to law he must be brought up by habeas corpus before the judges; and writ to the judge of the King's-bench, that it was the King's pleasure, that George Fox should be removed to London by habeas corpus, which was accordingly procured and sent to the sheriff of Lancashire. But as his persecutors were sensible, that there were no grounds for the high insinuations of danger contained in his mittimus, and that they could bring no shadow of proof against him, being conscious, that their proceedings in his committal and detention could not bear the test, they sought many evasions, objecting first to the informality of the writ, next insisting on his bearing the charge of sending him up under a guard; this unjust requisition

1660.  
Margaret  
Fell lays his  
case before  
the King.

A habeas  
corpus ob-  
tained to  
remove him  
to London,

**C H A P.** quisition he persisted, in regard of his innocence, to refuse compliance with: at last, after two months hesitation, they permitted him to go up in company with some of his friends without any guard, on his verbal promise to appear before the judges at Westminster upon a certain day of the term, if the Lord permitted. A clear demonstration that his imprisonment was the mere effect of malice, and wanton despotism in the republican mayor, and that his persecutors themselves did not really believe him to be the man, they endeavoured to represent him.

**1660.** **Appears in  
the court of  
King's-  
bench.** George Fox, whose promise was acknowledg-ed to be a sufficient bond for his appcarance, presented himself in the court of King's-bench ac-cordingly, being accompanied by two of his friends, Richard Hubberthorn and Robert Wi-thers, together with esquire Marsh of the King's bedchamber. The charge against him was read, the people were moderate, and the judges disfa-sionate and favourable; no accuser appearing to prove the charges against him, esquire Marsh signified to the judges, that it was the King's plea-sure that George Fox should be set at liberty; upon which the judges enquiring of him, whe-ther he would be willing to refer the matter to

**Referred to  
the King  
and council.** Wherefore the judges caused the sherriff's return of the habeas corpus to be laid before the King, who upon consideration of the whole matter, and the futility of unsupported crimination, gave direc-tions to the secretary of state to send an order to Sir Thomas Mallet, one of the justices of the King's-bench, for his release, who in con-sequence issued his warrant to the marshal of that court to set him at liberty, after an unjust and severe imprisonment for more than 20 weeks.

**Ordered to  
be set at  
liberty.**

His

His liberty, thus honourably obtained, filled C H A P.  
his antagonists with vexation and fear: Porter I.  
in particular was greatly terrified, under the apprehension that George would avail himself by law of the advantage, which the temerity and illegality of his injurious treatment had given, to the utter ruin of himself and family: and George Fox did not want incitement, even from some in authority, to make him and the rest examples: but he, esteeming it his duty as a christian to forgive injuries, meekly replied, “ *I shall leave them to the Lord; if he forgive them, I shall trouble myself no farther about them.*”

1660.

It was just at this time that several of the late King’s judges were brought to their trials, condemned and executed in an ignominious manner: when George Fox came to London, he passed a multitude of people gathered at Charing-cross, to see the burning of the bowels of some of them, who had been hanged, drawn and quartered pursuant to their sentence; and when he went next morning to surrender himself to Sir Thomas Mallet, he found him preparing to go to the court, to sit upon the trial of others of them.

Amongst the rest that suffered on this occasion, was Col. Francis Hacker, who six years before had George Fox taken prisoner, and sent up in custody to Oliver Cromwell, as hath been related in its course. In this reverse of his fortune, he had cause to reflect upon George’s parting expressions, “ When the day of his misery and trial should come upon him, then to remember what he had said to him.” Margaret Fell, visiting him in prison a day or two before his execution, reminded him of his maltreatment of the innocent in the day of his power: he acknowledged

**C H A P.** I. acknowledged that he perceived whom she meant, and felt trouble for it.

**1660.** Hugh Peters also, a furious independent preacher, and chaplain to Oliver Cromwell, suffered with the Regicides, and with equal justice, as having by his inflammatory harangues incited the army to demand the death of the late King. When men assuming the character of ministers of the gospel depart so far from their proper province, as to excite tumult and bloodshed in the state, they forfeit all just pretensions to the character they assume. The fomenters of sedition, ill-will and party animosity clearly manifest themselves not to be messengers of the Prince of peace.

**Rich. Hubberthorn hath a conference with the King.** About this time Richard Hubberthorn obtained access to the King, and upon laying before him the excessive sufferings of his friends under the late rulers, and that the like were even now continued in some part of the nation under his rule ; the King was pleased to enter into a free conversation with him concerning the principles of this people, and was so well satisfied with his account thereof, that he expressed his disposition to protect them, in the following terms ; " Of this you may be assured, that you shall none of you suffer for your opinions or religion, so long as you live peaceably, and you have the word of a King for it ; and I have also given forth a declaration to the same purpose, that none shall wrong you, or abuse you." But this promise, ratified by *the word of a King*, was very unfaithfully kept.

## C H A P. II.

*Insurrection of the Fifth-monarchy Men.—Occasion taken from thence to bring Dissenters under suspicion of disloyalty.—Proclamation issued against Anabaptists, Quakers and Fifth-monarchy Men.—Great Sufferings, in consequence thereof, attend the People called Quakers.—The Prisons in many Places crowded with them.—George Fox and Richard Hubberthorn publish a Declaration of their Abhorrence of Plots.—Margaret Fell solicits the King on behalf of her imprisoned Friends.—Proclamation for their discharge.—Afterwards persecuted on obsolete Laws against Popish Recusants.*

THUS encouraged, they seemed to have a CHAP.  
prospect of better times than they had experienced since they were distinguished as a separate society; their meetings were very large and quiet, multitudes flocked to them from curiosity or better motives, many were convinced, and their numbers greatly increased; but this calm was of no long duration. For in the 11<sup>mo</sup> (called January) this year an insurrection was made by the Fifth-monarchy men (of whom mention hath been made before) under the conduct of one Venner a wine-cooper, who having animated his followers to the desperate attempt by a passionate harangue, that the time was now come to establish the kingdom of Jesus upon earth, before the new government should be fixed and established under the dominion of the restored monarch,

1660.

In surrection  
on of the  
Fifth mo-  
narchy  
men.

CHAP. monarch, issued forth from their meeting place,  
 II. with fifty or sixty followers completely armed,  
 1660. with a resolution to subvert the present government, and to establish their imaginary kingdom in the place thereof. At first every one fled before them ; they went triumphantly from street to street, every where proclaiming King Jesus. At length the magistrates having assembled the trained bands, made an attack upon them ; after defending themselves, and slaying several of the assailants, they made a regular retreat to Cane-wood near Hampstead ; from which being dislodged the next morning by a detachment of the guards, they returned again to the city, and took possession of an house, in which they defended themselves against a body of troops till the major part were killed. The few survivors being taken prisoners, were tried, condemned and executed<sup>s</sup> ; Venner and one of his officers, before their meeting-house door in Coleman-street, and nine others in different parts of the city.

Occasion  
taken from  
thence to  
bring the  
Dissenters  
under sus-  
picion of  
disloyalty.

This wild attempt of a very few deluded individuals furnished the courtiers and bishops, now returned into power, the pretext they wanted, to gratify their thirst of vengeance, and let their former oppressors, with other dissenters, feel in their turn, the rigours of persecution, and to evade the force of the probable charge of violating the King's declaration of indulgence to tender consciences, but a few months old ; this insurrection was made a handle of, to throw a suspicion of disloyalty upon all sectaries, so called ; and this suspicion was by every effort kept alive by the ruling powers and their abettors during most part of this reign ; wherein justice, mercy, and

<sup>s</sup> Neale.

and truth were frequently violated, to promote C H A P.  
the sinister purposes of prejudiced or ill-designing II.  
men. The colour, therefore, under which  
they palliated their sudden and open vi-  
olation of the royal promise, was, as not pro-  
secuting nonconformists for their religious scruples,  
but as persons dangerous to the state; but the  
cover was too flimsy not to be seen through,  
they only waited for the firmer establishment of  
themselves till they threw off the mask.

<sup>b</sup> During the time of the tumult, on the second  
of the 11<sup>mo</sup> an order of council was issued against  
the meetings of sectaries in great numbers, and  
at unusual times: and on the 10th of the same  
month a proclamation was published, whereby  
the King forbade the Anabaptists, Quakers, and  
Fifth-monarchy men to assemble or meet toge-  
ther under pretence of worshipping God, except  
in some parochial church or chapel, or in private  
houses by persons therein inhabiting. All meet-  
ings in any other places were declared to be  
unlawful and riotous. And all mayors, and  
other peace officers were commanded to search for  
such conventicles, and cause the persons therein  
to be bound over to the next sessions.

This proclamation appears to be drawn up with  
more art and fallacy than sound judgment or <sup>Reflection.</sup>  
equity: while it reaches all the different sects of  
dissenters, all who do not assemble for worship  
in some parochial church or chapel, as rioters, it  
distinguishes only those looked upon as the most  
insignificant, and least formidable for their num-  
bers or abilities. The Presbyterians are passed  
over in silence, because they could not, as yet,  
with any colour of decency, be pointed out speci-  
fically as foes to that government which, through  
their

<sup>b</sup> Neale.

**C H A P.** their resentment to the independents, and the  
 II. cajolments of the royalists, they had but just  
 ~~~~~ before been conducive to establishing: The in-  
 1660. dependents also are unnoticed, probably for fear,  
 till they were humbled into a greater degree of  
 imbecility of awakening the exertion of that  
 vigour, and those abilities, the effects whereof  
 were yet sufficiently recent in the memory of the  
 present administration, to produce a cautiousness  
 in rousing them into action again. The Ana-  
 baptists and Quakers, as new or weaker sects,  
 are treated with less ceremony, and without any  
 occasion administered by them, are ranked in  
 one class with these wild disturbers of the publick  
 peace, wherein Justice, the characteristic virtue  
 of good government, was designedly violated by  
 involving the innocent with the guilty in one  
 confused mass. We have too many instances in  
 history to excite a persuasion that men in power  
 esteem the rules of morality, and regard to a  
 good conscience, obligatory only upon the infe-  
 rior classes of mankind; but to be no tie upon  
 them, when they stand in the way of gratifying  
 the impulse of their ambition, revenge, or poli-  
 tical projects. Through the various revolutions  
 marked in the course of this history, how few of  
 the rulers appear to have borne the sword uni-  
 formly, "for a terror to evil-doers, and the praise  
 " of them that do well."

The people  
 called Qua-  
 kers, expos-  
 ed to great  
 persecution.

In consequence of this proclamation \*, the  
 Quakers were again exposed to a fresh and severe  
 persecution,

\* "The most irreligious and profane sort of people were animated, and took occasion against our religious and peaceable meetings, eagerly to endeavour to suppress them, being encouraged by the new justices and magistrates then got into commission. The most vile and profane, as *drunkards, swearers,*

persecution, although by the dying testimony of C H A P. the sufferers at their execution, declared to have no part in, or knowledge of their plot ; abused by the populace, dragged from their employments ; their houses ransacked, and their meetings broken up by soldiers ; sick men dragged out of their beds to prison, one of which †, Thomas Patchen, being in a fever, died there.

II.

1660.

George Fox was still in London, and gives account that all was uproar and tumult : The city and suburbs up in arms ; the populace and military exceeding rude and abusive : Henry Fell, going quietly to a friend's house, was knocked down by the soldiers, and had been killed if the Duke of York's passing by had not prevented. George was taken prisoner, but soon after, by the interposition

*ers, cursers, and most wicked of all sorts, being lifted up, and exalted in their spirits upon the restoration of the King, and his accession to the throne, then were triumphant and insulting against all religious dissenters, and especially threatening the Quakers and their meetings with ruin, &c. And seeing what a great flood of wickedness and debauchery was broken forth, and religion and virtue despised, we then expected no other than severe and hard treatment from our persecutors, whose hearts were set in them to endeavour our ruin, or to root us out of the land".—George Whitehead's Journal, part ii. p. 242.*

† " Among many others Thomas Patchen, a man of a considerable estate, was taken when sick, and hurried away twenty-five miles to prison, where he was, with the rest, put among the felons, who abused him sorely, and would have stripped him of his clothes, to the endangering of his life, had he not consented to let them have 3l. 5s. in money, which the jailer awarded them ; notwithstanding which they afterward took from him two coats worth 2l. 10s. The fatigue of his journey, and the cruel usage he met with in the jail, so encreased his distemper, that he died there a few days after his confinement. The felons also rifled the other prisoners, taking from some their money, from others their clothes and necessaries."—Besse, v. i. p. 690.

C H A P. interposition of his friend esquire Marsh, set at  
II. liberty.

1660. Richard Brown, one of the numerous temporizers of this age, who under the former powers had distinguished himself as a fierce adversary to the royalists, particularly at Abingdon, being mayor of the city this year, to compensate for his former misconduct, turned, with the temper of the times, a no less distinguished persecutor of dissenters; discovering himself to be a forward, intemperate zealot in executing all the rigorous measures of this reign. He pursued the Quakers with peculiar acrimony and violence, and committed them to Newgate in such numbers, that they had not room to sit or lie down, nor scarce to stand one by another. There were at one time in that jail of the mayor's own committing three hundred and forty-six persons, of whom about an hundred were crowded together in one room, and divers fell sick, through the smell and closeness of the place; besides these, were several others whom the officers and soldiers had carried, as above, without any legal or regular warrant for that purpose.

This persecution was not confined to the city, but, with the proclamation, spread with similar violence over all, or most parts of, the nation; from their meetings, from their habitations and employments; out of their beds in the dead of the night, they were, without conviction, without crimination, without any legal cause, violently haled to prison, till in many places the prisons were crowded with them, almost to the danger of suffocation, by the number stowed together in close, damp, or unwholesome rooms. To recount the particular circumstances of their hard and unmerited treatment on this account would

f well

fwell the work too much; but those who desire a C H A P  
fuller information than the cases presented in the II.  
notes \*, are referred to Besse's collection of the  
sufferings of this people, where they may fully  
satisfy themselves of the truth of this repre-  
sentation.

1660.

## Persecution

\* On the 31st of the 11th month (January) <sup>a</sup> Roger Mil- Berkshire.  
ton was called out of his bed by officers with a warrant, and  
kept, together with John Dudge and William Wyatt, under a  
guard all night, and conducted next day to Twyford, whence  
for refusing to take the oath of allegiance tendered by three jus-  
tices, they were committed to prison; where the cruel treatment  
they received strongly marks the virulent temper of the perse-  
cutors at this time. They were thrust into a dungeon among  
felons to the number of twenty-two, a place so close, that the  
jailer acknowledged he thought it would breed an infection  
among them: They would not be suffered to walk in the yard  
for air, nor their friends to visit them, nor bring them food  
and other necessaries: Their ink, paper and working tools  
were taken from them; they were made the subject of the  
keeper's derision, who bringing some of his companions to see  
them, scoffingly said, *There was not such another bed in Berk-  
shire.*

Few or no counties escaped this general persecution; but  
in consequence of the proclamation the Quakers (so called)  
were everywhere taken up in crouds, violently haled by sol-  
diers or peace officers before the justices, who generally ten-  
dered them the oath of allegiance, [which they knew they  
had a religious scruple against taking] and upon their consci-  
entious refusal, committed them to prison by fifty or sixty at a  
time. In Bristol near one hundred and ninety were im-  
prisoned: Soldiers kept guard at the several prisons night and  
day, with orders to admit nobody to them: Their servants  
were denied access, what they brought was narrowly searched,  
and themselves rudely treated: In Lancaster were two hun-  
dred and seventy prisoners, in Westmoreland one hundred and  
sixteen, in West Riding of Yorkshire the number committed  
to prison was no less than two hundred and twenty-nine, for  
refusing to swear, being taken, many of them, from their reli-  
gious meetings; some on the high-ways, others from their  
houses,

<sup>a</sup> Besse.

**C H A P.** Persecution being thus carried on throughout  
 II. the nation against a people who had administered  
 ~~~~~ 1660. no

houses and lawful employments, and some out of their beds. One hundred and twenty-six in the North-Riding, in like manner and for the same cause; mostly for refusing to take the oaths, and proportionably in other counties.

Whence it is apparent, that this insurrection was made a handle to effect a preconcerted design; for their fidelity appears not to have been called in question, but most or all to be committed for their scrupling to take an oath. And their treatment in prison was generally as inhuman as their commitment was unjust, as appears by the following copy of a letter from Leicester jail; dated the 20th of the 12th month (February), 1660.

A copy of  
a letter from  
Leicester.

" A copy of a letter from Leicester jail, dated the 20th of  
 " the twelfth month, 1660.

" Friends,

" It lieth upon us to give an account of our sufferings, we  
 " being in number twenty-five, which are imprisoned because  
 " we cannot swear, we expecting that more will be brought  
 " to prison. We be under the oppression of a cruel jailer,  
 " who refuseth to let us have necessary provision brought to  
 " us, and one who is a friend, which we have employed for  
 " that purpose, when she hath made provision ready for us,  
 " and brought it to the door, the jailer hath several times  
 " turned it back with cruel threatening words, saying, *He  
 " would break her neck if he took her coming in at the door.*  
 " And many of us, being very poor men in the outward,  
 " scarce able to provide for our families when at liberty, and  
 " some of us being fifteen or sixteen miles from our outward  
 " beings, and so unable to buy ourselves provisions at the  
 " jailer's excessive rates. Some of us have been imprisoned  
 " five weeks: One, his wife being near the time of her deli-  
 " very of a child, his friends desiring but a short time for him  
 " to go and speak to his wife, his brother offering to stay in  
 " his room the time, was denied: Another was brought to  
 " prison from his wife, she being delivered of a child but two  
 " days before. And some of our friends, being brought to  
 " prison, had their coats taken off their backs by the soldiers,  
 " and not restored again: Another friend's wife being very  
 " weak,

no just occasion, who were not in any degree C H A P.  
chargeable with the insurrection or sedition; but <sup>II.</sup>  
artfully <sup>1660.</sup>

" weak, and not likely to continue long, she desiring much to  
 " see her husband, who desired, upon security, so much liberty  
 " of the jailer to go and see her, but he denied it; it lying  
 " much upon the friend to go and see his wife in that condi-  
 " tion, he acquainted one of the commissioners with it,  
 " who sent his warrant to the jailer to set the friend at liberty,  
 " and that should be his discharge; but the jailer kept the  
 " warrant, and refused to let him go, except he would pay  
 " him a mark fees. We are forced to hire rooms at excessive  
 " rates, by reason that we cannot have a free prison to hold us,  
 " so as that we might lie down, there being so many debtors  
 " and felons in it. Three of the friends imprisoned are *North-*  
*amptonshire* men: One, whose name is *William Vincent*, who  
 " had been imprisoned at *Northampton* near fourteen months,  
 " it being but two weeks after he was put out, but he was  
 " brought to prison here, he being a man in much bodily  
 " weakness, with many running sores upon him, and by  
 " outward appearance is not likely to continue long; his wife  
 " also being in the town, and bringing him some warm food,  
 " which she had provided for him, was turned back, and not  
 " suffered to bring it to him. Likewise the jailer denies to let  
 " him have a candle at his own charge, whereby he might  
 " dress his sores, it being a dark place, where he is lockt  
 " up by day-light; likewise not suffering a few boards, which  
 " were their own, to hold the straw up, but did take them  
 " from them.

|                  |                  |
|------------------|------------------|
| " Subscribed by  |                  |
| Edward Muggleton | Robert Cliffe    |
| John Evatt       | John Swann       |
| John Elliott     | William Vincent  |
| Richard Read     | William Line     |
| George Power     | George Almon     |
| Thomas Orton     | Robert Day       |
| William Smith    | Richard Farmer   |
| Thomas Marshall  | Roger Sturgis    |
| Robert Pimm      | Thomas Falkner   |
| Robert Bakewell  | William Gregory  |
| William Perkins  | William Horton   |
| Peter Hinks      | William Tomson." |
| Samuel Ward      |                  |

Many

CHAP. artfully brought under suspicion to palliate the  
 II. faithless measures and rigorous designs which  
 1660. were previously determined upon ; the Quakers,  
 as well as other dissenters, thought it necessary  
 to clear themselves of these groundless surmises,  
 by a publick disavowal of all plots and insurrec-  
 tions whatever, in order to prepare the way for  
 application for redress of the various injuries they  
 were unjustly exposed to in their persons, reputa-  
 tions and properties. George Fox and Richard  
 Hubberthorn drew up a declaration of their ab-  
 horrence of plots and warring, in order to pre-  
 sent it to the King and Council, but when finish-  
 ed and sent to the pres, it was there seized,  
 which

Many people were now likewise in Ilchester jail ; the cause and manner of whose commitment is expressed in the following letter, written by one of them, viz.

A letter  
from one of  
the prison-  
ers at Il-  
chester.

*" Dear Friend,*

" By reason of some rash, unadvised enterprize of the Mo-  
 " narchy-men in London, which we hear of late hath hap-  
 " pened, which we are altogether unacquainted with, and  
 " clear in our consciences and practices toward God and  
 " men, from the least knowledge of, or hand in, yet we are  
 " made as equally guilty with transgressors, amongst whom  
 " we are numbered and confined in prison, where we pati-  
 " ently wait until the Lord clear our innocency, and plead  
 " our cause. We are in number already one hundred and  
 " forty, and expect more to be daily added, and the cry of  
 " the innocent babes, who are left as it were fatherless, and  
 " of the mournful women, that are deprived of the help of their  
 " husbands, by such a sudden surprisal, cannot but reach into  
 " the most secret corner of the King's palace, and pierce the  
 " hardest heart that hath any affection to nature : The Lord  
 " plead our cause, and clear our innocency, and reward them  
 " according to their works, that have brought this distress  
 " upon the nation. I hope the King knows, or will know,  
 " that the persecuted people called Quakers, had no hand in  
 " the trespass which occasioned such a proclamation, whereby  
 " our

which looks like an arbitrary depriving them C H A P.  
of the opportunity of vindicating themselves. II.  
Upon which they quickly drew up another, got  
it printed, sent some copies to the King and Coun-  
cil, and published the rest in their justification  
to the nation at large. ~~~~~ 1660.

Abstract of a declaration from the people called  
Quakers, against all sedition, plotters, fight-  
ers, &c. presented to the king the 21st of 11th  
month, 1660.

“ Our principle is, and our practice hath al-  
“ ways been, to seek peace and to follow after  
“ righteousness, and the knowledge of God ;  
“ seeking the good and welfare, and doing  
“ that which tends to the peace of all. We

F f 2 “ know

“ our meetings are all broken up, and in many places both men  
“ and women much abused, beaten, blooded, dragged out of  
“ their houses, and some out of their beds, and others from  
“ their ordinary employments, and haled before magistrates,  
“ and so sent to prison, for not going to parish churches, as  
“ they are called ; and the oath tendered to them, and for re-  
“ fusing to swear, committed ; and on this account there are  
“ sent to the jail, some days thirty, some more, and some  
“ less, and daily we are in expectation to have friends brought  
“ so long as there can be one found to go under the denomina-  
“ nation of a Quaker, unless there be a stop put to that spirit,  
“ that takes this opportunity to strike at every appearance of  
“ truth. The very worst of men in the prison, that suffer for  
“ felony and murder, rejoicing to see us so persecuted, and  
“ supposing themselves in better condition than men of tender  
“ consciences ; and the rude, wild and ranting people in the  
“ country, take occasion to rejoice that they have now the  
“ countenance and authority to apprehend, persecute and im-  
“ prison the Quakers, and some not satisfied that we are confined  
“ in prison, for blood is thirsted after, without which some may  
“ hardly escape out of this place, except the Lord restrain  
“ the wrath of man.—

“ Ilchester, the 22d of the  
“ eleventh month, 1660.”

CHAP. II.  
1660.

“ know that wars and fightings proceed from  
 “ the lusts of men, Jam. iv. 1, 2, 3. out of  
 “ which lusts the Lord hath redeemed us, and  
 “ therefore the ground and cause being taken  
 “ away the effect ceaseth. And all bloody prin-  
 “ ciples and practices we (as to our own par-  
 “ ticular) do utterly deny; with all outward  
 “ wars and strife, and fightings with outward  
 “ weapons, for any end, or under any pretence  
 “ whatsoever: And this is our testimony to the  
 “ whole world.

“ And whereas it is objected:

“ Although you now say, *That you cannot fight,*  
 “ *nor take up arms at all; yet if the spirit do move*  
 “ *you, then you will change your principle, and*  
 “ *then you will sell your coat and buy a sword,*  
 “ *and fight for the kingdom of Christ.*

“ Answ. We say Christ’s command to Peter,  
 “ *Put up thy sword, for he that taketh the sword*  
 “ *shall perish by the sword,* was posterior to that,  
 “ when for the fulfilling of the law, he said, *He that*  
 “ *had no sword might sell his coat and buy one.*  
 “ And further, the Spirit of Christ, by which we  
 “ are guided, is not changeable, so as once to  
 “ command us from a thing as evil, and again  
 “ to move unto it; and we do certainly know,  
 “ and so testify to the world, that the Spirit of  
 “ Christ, which leads us into all truth, will ne-  
 “ ver move us to fight and war against any man  
 “ with outward weapons, neither for the king-  
 “ dom of Christ, nor for the kingdoms of this  
 “ world.

“ First, Because the kingdom of Christ, God  
 “ will exalt, according to his promise, and cause  
 “ it to grow and flourish in righteousness; *Not*  
 “ *by might nor by power* (of outward sword) *but*  
 “ *by my spirit, saith the Lord, Zech. iv. 6.* So  
 “ those

“ those that use any weapon to fight for Christ, C H A P.  
 “ or for the establishing of his kingdom or go- II.  
 “ vernment, both the spirit, principle and prac-  
 “ tice in that, we deny. 1660.

“ Secondly, We do earnestly desire and wait,  
 “ that (by the word of God's power, and its  
 “ effectual operation in the hearts of men) the  
 “ kingdoms of this world may become the king-  
 “ doms of the Lord, and of his Christ, that he  
 “ might rule and reign in men by his Spirit and  
 “ Truth; that thereby all people out of all dif-  
 “ ferent judgments and professions, might be  
 “ brought into love and unity with God, and  
 “ one with another; and that they might all  
 “ come to witness the prophet's words, who said,  
 “ *Nation shall not lift up sword against nation,*  
 “ *neither shall they learn war any more.* Isa. ii.  
 “ 4. Micah iv. 3.

“ And whereas all manner of evil hath  
 “ been falsely spoken of us, we hereby speak  
 “ forth the plain truth of our hearts, to take  
 “ away the occasion of that offence; that so  
 “ we being innocent, may not suffer for other  
 “ men's offences, nor be made a prey upon by  
 “ the wills of men for that of which we were  
 “ never guilty; but in the uprightness of our  
 “ hearts we may, under the power ordained of  
 “ God for the punishment of evil-doers, and for  
 “ the praise of them that do well, live a peaceable  
 “ and godly life, in all godliness and honesty.  
 “ For although we have always suffered, and do  
 “ now more abundantly suffer, yet we know  
 “ that it is for righteousness sake: *For our re-*  
*joicing is this, the testimony of our consciences,*  
*that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with*  
*fleshy wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have*  
*had our conversation in the world.* 2 Cor. i.

“ 12.

C H A P. " 12. which for us is a witness, for the con-  
 II. " vincing of our enemies. For this we can say  
 1660. " to all the world, we have wronged no man's  
 " person or possessions ; we have used no force  
 " nor violence against any man ; we have been  
 " found in no plots, nor guilty of sedition ; when  
 " we have been wronged, we have not sought  
 " to revenge ourselves ; we have not made re-  
 " sistance against authority ; but wherein we  
 " could not obey for conscience-sake, we have  
 " suffered even the most of any people in the  
 " nation.  
 " Our weapons are spiritual, and not carnal, yet  
 " Mighty through God, to the pulling down of the  
 " strong holds of sin and Satan, who is author of  
 " wars, fighting, murder, and plots ; and our  
 " swords are broken into plow-shares, and spears  
 " into pruning-hooks, as prophesied of in *Micah*  
 " iv. Therefore we cannot learn war any more,  
 " neither rise up against nation or kingdom with  
 " outward weapons, though you have numbered  
 " us amongst the transgressors and plotters : the  
 " Lord knows our innocence herein, and will  
 " plead our cause with all men and people upon  
 " earth, at the day of their judgment, when all  
 " men shall have a reward according to their  
 " works.  
 " This is given forth from the people called  
 " Quakers, to satisfy the King and his coun-  
 " cil, and all those that have any jealousy  
 " concerning us ; that all occasion of sus-  
 " picion may be taken away, and our inno-  
 " cency cleared."

Every measure seems to have been pursued to  
 fill the nation with alarm, and consequently the  
 ill-

ill-judging multitude with rage against dissenters, C H A P.  
the objects pointed out as dangerous to the state; II.  
the press was narrowly watched \* ; orders were  
given to stop and search all letters in the post-  
office ; soldiers let loose to drag to prison whom  
they pleased, so that it was dangerous for them  
to walk the streets ; they were insulted and abused  
by the mobs ; disturbed in their religious exer-  
cises ; taken from their trades and families, and  
thereby exposed to great hardships, loss and da-  
mages, and their families, many of them, to  
want.

1660.

From the impulse of affection and sympathy,  
at that time so remarkable amongst this people,  
in addition to the endeavours used for their re-  
lief by the aforesaid declaration, Margaret Fell Margt. Fell  
several times waited personally upon the King to solicit the  
solicit his indulgence and protection for them : King on be-  
at her first admission she signified to him, half of the  
“ they were an innocent, peaceable people, who number of  
“ did no injury, and administered no occasion friends im-  
“ of

\* Of this we have a remarkable instance in Thomas Ellwood's narrative of his own life. Meeting with Thomas Loe at I. Penington's, he proposed to him to appoint a meeting in the town where he dwelt. To this proposal Thomas Loe signified, “ He was not at his own disposal, but desired Thomas Ellwood, if the thing lay with weight on his mind, and he could get a convenient place for a meeting, to advise him thereof by letter to Oxford, and then he might let him know how his freedom stood.” Thomas Ellwood accordingly having procured a suitable place, writ account thereof to Thomas Loe, his letter was intercepted, and brought to Lord Falkland, Lord Lieutenant of the county, who ordered the two deputy lieutenants nearest him to send a party of soldiers to fetch him in and examine him thereupon. Upon examination, their endeavours to wrest his letter to a criminal design, affording no sufficient ground of punishment, they tendered him the oath of allegiance, and on his refusal committed him prisoner to Oxford.

C H A P. II.  
 1660.

" of offence, except in keeping up their religious meetings, for no other purpose but worshipping God, in that way, they were persuaded was most acceptable to him, and edifying one another in his fear ; which being to them a conscientious matter of duty to God, they could not violate it, in compliance with the ordinances or laws of man, whatever they suffered."

She waited upon him again, to inform him how severely her friends, who were not in the least concerned in insurrection or riot, were treated ; several thousands of them through the nation being cast into prison illegally, in consequence of other men's crimes. The King and council wondered how they gained the intelligence, after the strict orders they had issued to intercept all letters, so that none might pass unsearched. However, in consequence of her application, and the declaration above-mentioned, the King sent out a proclamation, *forbidding soldiers to search any house without a constable.* Afterward, when some of the unhappy insurgents were brought to suffer, they were so just to this injured people, as by their dying testimony to clear them of all guilt, publickly declaring "they had no hand in, or knowledge of their plot."

This with other evidences, and their continued intercessions, prevailed upon the King to issue out a declaration, ordering *the Quakers to be set at liberty without paying fees.*

Proclamation issued for their discharge.

But yet that spirit of riot and furious hatred, which had been, it is feared, designedly stirred up in the populace towards this people, continued to be very vexatious to them, especially in their religious assemblies ; for besides the interruption they suffered from the officers and soldiers, they were exposed to the abuse and disturbance

turbance of many rude people, who made it their business to come to their meetings on purpose to molest and insult them ; and although for the present, the fierce current of persecution was in some measure stopped by the King's proclamation, and the prisoners confined in consequence of the insurrection of the Millenarians set at liberty ; although cruelty was not reckoned amongst the King's vices, yet being surrounded by counsellors, churchmen and courtiers, averse to toleration, he too easily gave into their views ; and in violation of his solemn promise in his declaration from Breda, suffered great numbers of his subjects to be continually harrassed with spoil of their property, even to reducing them from opulent or easy circumstances to indigence, and the repeated deprivation of their personal liberty, and all the comforts of life.

After the Quakers were fully cleared of the plot of the Fifth-monarchy men, and all pretences of punishing them on that account were removed, it was not long till they were again grievously persecuted by the revival of old laws made in the reigns of Henry VIII. and Elizabeth, chiefly against popish recusants, but now perverted to the punishment of this inoffensive body of people, who had not in any thing disturbed the peace of the kingdom, while the Papists themselves were not only suffered to remain unmolested, but through covert favour of the court, are generally reported to have promoted, by all their interest, which was not inconsiderable, the severe measures pursued against other dissenters in this reign. The principal laws

Afterwards  
persecuted  
on obsolete  
laws against  
popish recu-  
sants.

which

CHAP. which were thus revived, and distorted to the unreasonable and unjust punishment of this society at this period, and during this reign, rigorous in themselves, and made more so by the extreme severity exercised in the execution of them, were these which follow.

<sup>II.</sup>  
1660.  
First, The act passed in the thirty-second year of Henry VIII. against the subtraction of tithes [as of divine right due to God and holy church] whereby justices of peace were obliged to commit the contumacious defendant to prison, till he should find sufficient surety to give due obedience to the process, decrees or sentence of the ecclesiastical court.

Although this act be a general one, pointed at no particular society, and through the attachment of the clerical order to their secular interests and power, through all revolutions of government prevented from growing obsolete: yet how grievously great numbers of this society have suffered thereby, hath been shewn in numerous instances, and may in more hereafter.

For believing this law, in its ground and tendency to be in direct contradiction to a superior law, the command of Christ Jefus himself, “ Freely ye have received, freely give;” that the practice of the Apostles and the primitive church for three successive centuries was a proof that tithes were no gospel maintenance, but abolished with the Jewish law to which they belonged; that in the dark ages of priestly dominion, laick superstition and implicit faith, they were gradually introduced, and established in the manner they are now applied, by the avarice, fraud and influence of selfish and popish ecclesiasticks; on these considerations, as christians, as protestants and reformers, they believed themselves under an obligation of conscience neither to pay them, nor actively comply with the law; but to bear open testimony against the imposition

position as antichristian; but the priests having C H A P. by this law the power to imprison them, and II. detain them in prison 'till the pretended debt, and exorbitant cost of the ecclesiastical courts were fully paid and satisfied; and they being restrained from paying such demands in violation of their consciences and peace of mind, points more tender with them than the security of their property, liberty or natural lives; many of them were imprisoned several years, and many laid down their lives in prison, in support of this their christian testimony.

**Second,** The laws made in the reign of Queen Elizabeth for uniformity of common prayer and publick worship, viz,

First, that enacting a forfeiture of one shilling to the use of the poor, to be levied off every person who did not resort to their parish church, or some other, every Sunday or Holyday.

The second establishing a forfeiture of twenty pounds a month for the like default \*.

### A Third

\* Neale remarks that upon the conventicle act being passed in 1664, "At every quarter sessions several were fined for not " coming to church; some excommunicated, and some fined " in a sum much larger than all they were worth in the world." Of this we have a remarkable instance in the case of John Shipman and Thomas Virtue, both of the county of Suffolk, (who were prosecuted on this act of Elizabeth) as presented to the King and council on the 5th of November 1663.

### For the King and Council.

A short relation of the cruel usage of two of the King's peaceable subjects, JOHN SHIPMAN, of Cretingham in the county of Suffolk, and THOMAS VIRTUE of Clopton in the same county, &c.

The said persons being informed against by the sheriff's bailiffs, and by the bailiffs of the liberty where the said persons

\* History of the Puritans.

CHAP. A Third enabling the Queen to seize all the  
 II. goods, and two-thirds of the lands of every such  
 ~~~~~ offender, for the sum then due for 20l. a month;  
 1660. and yearly after that to do the same, for so long  
 time as they shall forbear to come to church.

By the first of these acts some few were prosecuted by magistrates of moderation and lenity to obviate greater severities, and by others to expedite severer punishment; but many more upon the latter; and though the King, at the intercession of George Whitehead, Gilbert Latey and others, ordered stay of process in divers counties; yet afterwards the prosecutions were continued until after his death, both to imprisonment and seizing of goods.

#### Fourth,

sons dwelt, upon a statute made against popish recusants; and for their not being at the publick worship for eleven months past, at a quarter sessions holden at Woodbridge in the said county, John Sicklemore judge, judgment was passed against them by the justices there, for each of them to pay 20l. a month for eleven months, eleven score pounds a piece; and since, the bailiffs aforesaid have taken away goods worth 68l. 15s. from John Shipman, and 35l. worth from Thomas Virtue, and do threaten to take more from them, until they be satisfied for the fines of twice eleven score pounds, although the whole estate of the said Thomas Virtue is not judged to be worth half so much, so that if the King shew not some kindness to these poor men, the said Thomas Virtue, his wife and six children, are like to be left destitute: and farther, the said persons were for the same cause both kept in prison; the one of them a year and a half, the other a year and a quarter before their goods and cattle were taken away.

Therefore our request to the King is, that he would relieve the said sufferers; and that they may not thus deeply suffer for conscience sake, who wish well to King and government.

Fourth, And as if these laws were not severe C H A P.  
enough, in the 35th year of the said reign, an <sup>II.</sup>  
act was made to oblige offenders in the like <sup>1660.</sup>  
case to abjure the realm on pain of death.

This law, made it may be supposed, chiefly against papists, was endeavoured in some instances to be enforced against the Quakers; but as it was well known they could not swear at all, and therefore that they would not abjure the realm; and of consequence prosecutions by this law must terminate in their death, which might occasion an alarm in the nation, and a detestation of such severity, prosecutions under this law were discouraged, even by judges otherwise severe enough against the Quakers: yet we shall find, on more occasions than the one following, endeavours were used by some inveterate spirits to bring them under the lash of this law.

William Alexander of Needham in Suffolk, being with several others indicted upon this act, was called upon to plead, guilty or not guilty; but not being hasty to answer, the judge said, why don't you plead? Alexander said, what wouldest thou advise us to plead? If you ask my advice, said the judge, you shall have it, and I'll advise you to plead not guilty. The prisoners pleading accordingly, the judge turning to the prosecutors, informed them, that now they must prove these men, neither to have been at their own parish church, nor any other church or chapel, else they were not within this act, which is a sanguinary law. Alexander and the rest were accordingly discharged.

Fifth, The act made in the beginning of Queen Elizabeth's reign for administering the oath of supremacy, and that of the third of James (after the discovery of the gun-powder plot) enjoining the taking the oath of allegiance, afterwards distinguished by the name of the *Test*.

Now

C H A P.  
II.  
1660.

Now albeit this last was enacted particularly as a security against the dangerous machinations of the papists, yet in this reign these met with shelter and protection, and the edge of this law was turned against the Quakers very deceitfully and unjustly; for as it was now generally known, that they had a conscientious scruple against taking any oath, apprehending the precept of Christ, *swear not at all*, a positive obligatory command, which they ought not in any case to transgres, and that no law or power upon earth could justify them in the breach of a divine law: although they were willing to acknowledge their allegiance by any plain declaration, short of an oath; yet on account of this conscientious scruple, a preconcerted and unreasonable advantage was taken of this act. But through divine support in all their afflictions, they were actuated by an invincible constancy, and preserved steadfast in their obedience and their faith, through bonds, premunires, banishments, and even death itself.

In the late general imprisonment in pursuance of the proclamation published on the rising of the fifth monarchy men, when the innocence of this society appeared so clearly, that there remained no shadow of reason to detain them on that account, it was the usual method with the magistrates to tender them the oath of allegiance, which they knew they would not take, that by their refusal they might get a more plausible pretext to commit and detain them in prison. On this account many hundreds were imprisoned, from the time of the insurrection till they were liberated by the king's declaration aforementioned; but it was not on this occasion only, they suffered by this act, but it continued, when other means failed to

to supply the malevolence of their adversaries C H A P.  
a handle to ensnare and be vexatious to them,  
through the greatest part of this reign, as may  
more fully appear in the process of this work:  
But to recite all the hardships and sufferings they  
were exposed to in this single scruple were to  
write a large volume, and therefore I can only  
cursorily take notice of the most remarkable  
cases as they arise: for the present, as it may be  
apprehended, that in troublesome times it is  
but reasonable for the government to require  
this security from the subject, the following case  
will shew that they were not backward to de-  
monstrate their allegiance, as far as they could  
go, without disobeying the command of Christ,  
as they understood it, which joined to their  
peaceable and unresisting demeanour, charge-  
able with no disaffection, might safely have been  
accepted, were the rulers of that time as in-  
dulgent to tenderness of conscience, as they were  
bent upon singling out the members of this so-  
ciety to tender the oath to, for the pure purpose  
of involving them in distress by subjecting them  
to the penalties enacted by this law.

At the assizes of Bedford on the 13th of the  
month called March, 1660-1, \* two and fifty per-  
sons, then in prison for refusing the oath of  
allegiance, were brought before judge Wind-  
ham, who ordered the statutes of 35 Elizabeth  
and 7 James, to be read; telling the prisoners,  
that many of them being but young, might proba-  
bly be ignorant of the penalties they were liable to  
for refusing the oath. One of them, in the name  
of the rest, answered, *That the penalties had been  
fully considered by them: That they thought it  
their*

1661.

\* Besse, vol. i. p. 4, 5.

CHAP. their duty actively to obey the laws of the land,  
 II. when consistent with the law of God, and when  
 1661. otherwise patiently to submit. That the laws read  
 appeared to them contrary to the precept of Christ,  
 Matth. v. which they durst not break. They  
 presented at the same time to the Judge, a pa-  
 per in writing as follows, viz.

“ Though it be generally known through  
 “ Christendom so called, that the people called  
 “ Quakers cannot swear at all, because it is ac-  
 “ cording to the command of Christ, our law-  
 “ giver, Judge and Saviour, yet for taking  
 “ away all jealousies and fears out of the mind  
 “ of the king, his council, and other his offi-  
 “ cers and subjects in this realm, and other do-  
 “ minions belonging thereunto, that so under  
 “ him we may live in a godly, holy, honest,  
 “ peaceable and quiet life, to serve God and  
 “ the creation in our generation, we give forth  
 “ these lines, concerning the oath of allegiance  
 “ (obligatory to us) to the king, and all the  
 “ nation, whom it may concern, that we may  
 “ not be made transgressors, without a cause,  
 “ and expos'd to suffer for keeping our con-  
 “ sciencies clear before the Lord.

“ First of all we do believe and declare, that  
 “ the immediate hand of the Lord hath brought  
 “ in *Charles Stuart*, now proclaimed king of  
 “ *England, Scotland, &c.* according to the laws  
 “ and statutes of the nation; and that the  
 “ Pope, neither of himself, nor by any autho-  
 “ rity of the church or see of *Rome*, or by any  
 “ other means with others, hath any power to  
 “ depose the king, or to dispossess him of any  
 “ of his dominions, or to authorize any fo-  
 “ reign prince to invade or annoy him, neither  
 “ to discharge any of his subjects from their  
 “ obedience

“ obedience to him, or to give license or leave C H A P.  
“ to any to take up arms, or to offer any vio- II.  
“ lence or hurt to the person of the king, state  
“ or government, or to any of his subjects  
“ within his dominions : And likewise we de-  
“clare, and shall keep our words, notwithstanding  
“ any declaration or sentence of excommu-  
“nication or deprivation, made or granted, or  
“ to be made or granted by the pope or his  
“ successors, or by any authority derived, or  
“ pretended to be derived from him, against  
“ the king, his lawful heirs and successors, or  
“ by any absolution of the said subjects to the  
“ king : That we will not conspire, neither at-  
“ tempt any conspiracy against his person, nor  
“ plot nor contrive any thing against him,  
“ nor any of his subjects, neither would we have  
“ any others to do it, notwithstanding any sen-  
“tence or declaration from the Pope ; and far-  
“ther we do abhor and detest that position, as  
“ impious and heretical, and a damnable doc-  
“trine, that princes which be excommunicated  
“ by the Pope, may be deposed or murthered  
“ by their subjects, or otherwise. And further  
“ we do believe in our hearts, that neither the  
“ Pope nor any other whatsoever, have power to  
“ absolve us of this our acknowledgement and  
“ testimony, or any part thereof, and do re-  
“nounce all pardons and dispensations to the  
“ contrary. And these things we do plainly  
“ and sincerely acknowledge and confess, ac-  
“cording to the plain common sense and under-  
“standing of the words herein expressed, with-  
“out any equivocation, mental reservation, or  
“ secret evasion whatsoever, and these things  
“ shall attest by words, and shall, if thereunto  
“ lawfully required, set our hands.

CHAP. II.  
 1661. " So let us not be made a prey upon, seeing what we do is in a good conscience to God, and in it these things we write, and shall keep in truth and righteousness, which may satisfy you and all reasonable men."

On the next day the oath was tendered to six of the prisoners, who insisted on the illegality of their commitment, having been taken by violence out of their beds, though innocent of the breach of any law. The judge answered, *if they had suffered any wrong, they might take their remedy at law, but being now before him, he required them to take the oath*, adding, *that an oath was a part of God's worship, and that the scriptures had always been interpreted that men might swear.*

The prisoners speaking in their own defence were interrupted and hurried away. The grand jury found the bills of indictment, and returning into the court one of them was read to the prisoners, who were told, *the rest were like it*: And they not forward to plead, were sent back to prison.

1661. \*The convention parliament, after having fixed Parliament dissolved. the king on the throne, and been pretty liberal in their grants, were dissolved, probably because the number of Presbyterians therein were expected to be a bar in the way of executing the projected measures: And writs were issued for a new parliament to meet on the 8th of the month called May: The tide of popular favour, by the artful rumour of fictitious plots and conspiracies, carried on by the non-conformists, had

\* had been turned against them, and ran violently on the side of the hierarchy and prerogative; this temper in the people, under the influence of the court, prevailed in carrying the elections in favour of a great majority of the royalists and zealous churchmen, the number of Presbyterians returned, being too inconsiderable to oppose or retard their measures, monarchy and episcopacy were restored to their former splendour and power, which church (so called) and state jointly exercised with that avengement, and want of moderation and justice, which are generally the concomitants of a violent party spirit.

CHAP.  
II.  
1661.

New Par-  
liament ini-  
mical to  
don-con-  
formists.

<sup>d</sup> At the opening of this parliament, the king, in his speech, declared, “ That he valued himself upon keeping his word, and upon making good whatsoever he had promised to his subjects.” At the same time that the Chancellor [Clarendon] by his succeeding comment, in a virulent speech against seditious (which meant no more than dissenting) preachers, was paving the way, by inflaming the parliament, to an open violation of his solemn promise of liberty to tender consciences. Oliver Cromwell hath been grievously censured by the reigning party of this time, on account of his double dealing; but I recollect no instance of his management, of a more bare-faced duplicity than this, with this difference, that much of his artifice was exerted in self-defence, against those, he knew were plotting against him, to wrest

G g 2 his

\* The denomination of Puritans was now changed into that of non-conformists, as a term that would comprehend every class of dissenters from the established religion.

<sup>d</sup> Neale.

CHAP. his power out of his hands ; whereas in the  
1661. projects carrying on at this time, the plainest  
rules of morality were broken through without  
any necessity, by the present rulers, for the mere  
purpose of exerting power over antagonists, who  
had, as themselves now thought, with imprudent  
precipitation, been principally instrumental to  
put the power into their hands, to gratify a  
vindictive spirit, and display a wanton triumph  
in their fall, by comprehending them and other  
dissenters, even those, who having been always of  
inoffensive and pacifick principles and demeanour,  
whom they feared not, and knew they  
had no reason to fear, under one common de-  
scription of non-conformists, and then point-  
ing out these non-conformists as objects of sus-  
picion, detestation and abuse. \* It is alledged the  
king did not voluntarily concur with these vio-  
lent measures ; but that the zeal of Clarendon  
and the church party among the commons, se-  
conded by the intrigues of the catholicks \* ex-  
torted his consent. But by whomsoever these  
arbitrary measures were originally concerted,  
Clarendon, or the bishops ; papists, or prote-  
stants ; the breach of faith, in the manifest vio-  
lation of the royal promise, was too flagrant for  
palliatives to excuse or vindicate ; so that even  
the writers on the side of the prerogative and  
episcopacy

## \* Hume.

\* The Catholicks, though they had little interest in the nation, were a considerable party at court. These religi-  
onists dreaded an entire union among the protestants. Were  
they the sole non-conformists in the nation, the severe ex-  
ecution of the penal laws upon their *se&t*, seemed an infal-  
lible consequence ; and they used all their influence against  
the Presbyterians. The Earl of Bristol who had changed  
his religion in his exile, was regarded as the head of this  
party. Hume.

episcopacy are obliged to acknowledge them to C H A P. II.  
be an evasion, and breach of the king's declaration from Breda.

In order to promote their designs, to animate the people and parliament against these devoted non-conformists, the ministry filled the city with rumours of plots and conspiracies against the king and government, contriving by them. Clarendon in a conference between the two houses, positively asserted that a conspiracy had been formed to interrupt the peace of the nation, and though it had been disconcerted in the city, it was still carrying on in the counties. Writers generally agree that there was little or no foundation for these reports; but that they were the mere invention of the reporters, to facilitate the passing of the severe laws that were coming upon the carpet.

After this prelude, the parliament proceeded to pass that called the corporation-act, whereby all non-conformists were excluded from offices of trust and magistracies; and some time after the act of uniformity, which deprived all the Presbyterian and other non-conforming ministers of their benefices, and re-instated the episcopalians in the full possession of the power, and the emoluments of the priesthood. These acts did not in themselves materially affect the Quakers, who aspired to no places of honour or profit, who testified against preaching for hire, and sought for no more than a toleration and protection in their religious and civil rights, to lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty; yet the corporation act in its consequences did affect them, by filling the city and country with persecuting magistrates.

And

1661.

Rumours of  
plots to  
make way  
for perse-  
cuting laws.

Corporation  
act, and act  
for unifor-  
mity.

CHAP. And it was not long until they were singled out, as victims to fresh penal laws in addition to the old ones revived against them. This parliament being most of them inclined to persecution, and devotedly resigned to the measures and influence of the ministry and episcopacy, who seemed determined to leave no class of non-conformists unmolested, brought in a bill directly levelled at this body, enacting new penalties for refusing to take oaths, and also to suppress their religious meetings.

1661.  
Act against  
the people  
called Qua-  
kers, for  
not taking  
oaths, &c.

C H A P.

## C H A P. III.

*Continuation of the Sufferings of the People called Quakers in America.—Sufferings of William Leddra.—He is brought to his trial.—Appeals to England.—His Appeal over-ruled.—Condemned to death.—The Manner of his Execution.—A Letter relating to his Death.—Edward Wharton's Examination.—Sentence of Banishment.—His Address to the People.—Trial of Wenlock Christison.—The Court divided, yet the Governor passes sentence of death upon him.—An Order for releasing the Quakers out of Prison.—Edward Burrough solicits the King to put a stop to the Persecution in New-England.—The King in compliance with his Solicitation orders a Mandamus to stop it, and deputes Samuel Shattock to carry it over.—The Mandamus delivered, and Persecution in part stopped.—Second Order for the discharge of Prisoners.*

AS it was about this time that the people III. called Quakers in England received intelligence of the severities against their friends in New-England, having been carried so far, that the government had not only made a law to banish them on pain of death; but had actually put some of them to death upon that fanguinary and unauthorized law, as before related; Edward Burrough waited upon the king, to solicit the interposition of his authority to put a stop

1661.  
Account  
received in  
England of  
the execu-  
tion of the  
Quakers, so  
called, in  
New-Eng-  
land.

CHAP. stop to the further effusion of innocent blood,  
 III  
 ~~~~~  
 1661. and was successful in his application. This  
 seems therefore a proper place to resume our  
 narrative of the further sufferings under the  
 independent government there, which was even  
 surpassing in virulence and cruelty, all the ty-  
 rannical proceedings on this side, towards this  
 persecuted people; while their brethren here  
 were in some measure their companions in  
 affliction.

Sufferings  
of William  
Leddra.

William Leddra, of Barbadoes, was the fourth  
 and last, who sealed his testimony with his blood  
 under their hands. After much hardship, by  
 imprisonment and many cruel stripes, he had  
 been banished from Boston on pain of death. Re-  
 turning soon after to visit his friends in prison  
 there, he was apprehended, and kept night and  
 day in an open jail, chained to a log of wood,  
 during an extreme cold winter, exceeding in in-  
 clemency our severest seasons in England. This  
 poor man seems to have been persecuted with  
 peculiar inveteracy of malice. In his former  
 imprisonment, he was kept in a prison so close,  
 without sustenance, that it bore the appearance  
 of a design to suffocate or famish him, as the  
 latter did of starving him through the inclem-  
 ency of the weather: but surviving all these  
 hardships, he was brought before the court of  
 assistants the 9th of the first month of this year  
 with his chain and log at his heels: being set  
 to the bar he was told, that *having returned*  
*from banishment, he had incurred the penalty of*  
*death by the law.* Upon which he asked, *why*  
*what evil have I done?* To this the court answer-  
 ed, *he had owned those that were put to death,*  
*had refused to put off his hat in court, and said*

He is  
brought to  
his trial.

THEE

**THEE and THOU.** To which William aptly C H A P. replied, then you put me to death for speaking English, and for not putting off my clothes. Major general Dennison absurdly remarked, *a man might speak treason in English.* William asked, If it was treason to say THEE and THOU to a single person? Next Simon Broadstreet, a violent persecutor, asked him, if he would go to England? To whom William replied, I have no business there. Then said Broadstreet, you shall go that way, pointing to the gallows. The prisoner then appealed to England in the following terms, Will you put me to death for breathing the air in your jurisdiction? What have you against me? I appeal to the laws of England for my trial, if by them I am found guilty, I refuse not to die. The court, as usual, over-ruled his appeal, and attempted to persuade him to a recantation, and a conformity to the religion prescribed by their laws. But the concern of his mind being to testify against that religion, which without justice, mercy or proper authority (for they were not authorized by charter to make any laws inconsistent with those of England, and for their transgression of their power, lost their charter some time after) could produce laws to punish other men with rancour, and put them to death for theirs, he consistently and boldly replied, What! join with such murderers as you are; then let every man that meets me say, lo! this is the man that hath forsaken the God of his salvation.

The court then passed sentence of death upon him, and appointed the 14th of the same month for his execution.

That the spirit in which he died, was very different from the representation of C. Mather, before

**C H A P.** before recited, the following extract from a letter  
 written the day before his death is a convincing  
 proof.  
 1661.

To the SOCIETY of the *little flock* of CHRIST,  
 grace and peace be multiplied.

“ Most dear and inwardly beloved friends,  
 “ The sweet influences of the morning star,  
 “ like a flood distilling into my innocent habi-  
 “ tation, hath so filled me with the joy of the  
 “ Lord in the beauty of holiness, that my spirit  
 “ is as if it did not inhabit a tabernacle of clay ;  
 “ but is wholly swallowed up in the bosom of  
 “ eternity, from whence it had its being.  
 “ What can the wrath and spirit of man that  
 “ lusteth to envy, aggravated by the heat and  
 “ strength of the king of the locusts, which  
 “ came out of the pit, do to one, that is ga-  
 “ thered under the healing wings of the prince  
 “ of peace ? under whose armour of light they  
 “ shall be able to stand in the day of trial, hav-  
 “ ing on the breast-plate of righteousness, and  
 “ the sword of the fpirit, which is their weapon  
 “ of war against spiritual wickednes, and the  
 “ rulers of the darknes of this world, within  
 “ and without.—I have stood still in that watch,  
 “ which the master, without whom I could do  
 “ nothing, did at his coming reward with the  
 “ fulness of his love, wherein my heart did re-  
 “ joice, that I might in the love and life of God  
 “ speak a few words to you, which may be a  
 “ favour of life to your life, and a testimony in  
 “ you of my innocent death, &c.

W<sup>M</sup>. LEDDRA.”

The

<sup>2</sup> The next day after the writing of this letter, C H A P. III<sup>1661.</sup> the unrighteous sentence pronounced against him was put in execution in the following manner. First a morning lecture was appointed, in which the priest animated the magistrates to the execution of the intended tragedy. Although I pay a real regard to a sincere religious disposition under every profession, yet I feel something exceeding disgusting, and even shocking, at cloaking cruelty and injustice under the mask of sanctity, and bringing in a shew of religion in aid of a conduct which violates the plainest laws of humanity and morality. The people called Quakers were reputed and represented by these persecutors, as being under strong delusions; but what delusion could be more absurd or more mischievous, than to think we serve God, by injuring, persecuting and slaying our fellow-creatures.

Their pretended worship being over, the governor with a guard of soldiers came to the prison, the prisoner's irons were knocked off, and after taking a solemn leave of his fellow-prisoners for the same testimony, being called, he came forth undismayed, and was immediately surrounded by the guard to prevent any of his friends from coming near to speak to or accompany him. Being come to the place of execution, as he was ascending the ladder, he took his leave of his friend Edward Wharton, with this expression, *All that will be Christ's disciples, must take up the cross.* While he stood upon the ladder some person called out, *William, have you any thing to say to the people?* upon which he said, *for bearing my testimony for the Lord against the deceivers and deceived am I brought here to suffer.*

These

<sup>2</sup> Besse, vol. ii. p. 218.

**C H A P.** These expressions awakened the tender feelings  
 III.  
 ~~~~~  
 1661. and commiseration of many of the spectators,  
 which being observed by one Allen, a priest  
 then present, in order to prevent the effects of  
 such impressions, he cried out, "People, I would  
 " not have you think it strange to see a man so  
 " willing to die, for it is no new thing: and  
 " you may read how *the Apostle saith, that some*  
 " *shall be given up to strong delusions, and even*  
 " *dare to die for it;*" though the text saith no  
 such thing; but the blind zeal of the man hur-  
 ried him into a perversion of the scripture, that  
 he might harden the people's hearts against the  
 innocent; who standing as a man gathered up  
 to God, and in peace with him, as the execu-  
 tioner was putting the halter about his neck,  
 meekly said, *I commend my righteous cause to*  
*thee, O God!* and as the ladder was turning, he  
 cried out, *Lord Jesus, receive my spirit.* Being  
 dead, when the executioner cut him down, four  
 of his friends, Edward Wharton, Robert Har-  
 per, John Chamberlain, and Philip Verrin, caught  
 his body in their arms, and laid it on the ground,  
 'till the executioner had stript his clothes off,  
 who, when he had done it, said he was a comely  
 man, and that Mary Dyer was a comely woman,  
 and the others well ordered men according to  
 their years. <sup>b</sup> His body being stripped, his said  
 friends were suffered to put it into a coffin, and  
 bury it where they thought meet. A piece of  
 humanity owing not to the inclinations of the  
 persecutors, but to the outcry of the people  
 against the barbarity used to the dead bodies of  
 the two men who were put to death before.

There

<sup>b</sup> Besse, vol. ii. p. 219.

There was present at his execution one Thomas Wilkie, a stranger, who was much affected with his case, of which he wrote the following account in a letter to a friend of his at Barbadoes, viz.

“ Boston, March the 26th, 1661.

“ On the 14th of this instant, here was one William Leddra put to death. The people of the town told me he might go away if he would: but when I made further enquiry, I heard the marshal say, *he was chained in prison, from the time he was condemned to the day of his execution.* I am not of his opinion; but yet truly methought the Lord did mightily appear in the man. I went to one of the magistrates at Cambridge, who had been of the jury that condemned him, and I asked him by what rule he did it? He answered me, that *he was a rogue, a very rogue.* But what is this to the question, I said, *where is your rule?* He said, he had abused authority. Then I went after the man, and asked him, *Whether he did not look on it as a breach of rule to under-value authority?* I saw then, when the man was on the ladder, he looked on me, and called me friend, and said, *Know that this day I am to offer up my life for the witness of Jesus.* Then I desired leave of the officers to speak, and said, Gentlemen, *I am a stranger both to your persons and country, and yet a friend to both.* And I cried aloud, *for the Lord's sake, take not away the man's life, but remember Gamaliel's counsel to the Jews: If this be of man it will come to nought; but if it be of God, you cannot overthrow it: but be careful ye be not found fighters against God.* And the captain said, *why had you not come to the prison?* The reason was “ because

A letter relating to  
the death  
of William  
Leddra.

1661.

**C H A P.** " because I heard the man might go if he would,  
 III. " and therefore I called him down from the  
 ~~~~~ " tree, and said, *come down, William, you may go*  
 1661. " *if you will.* Then Capt. Oliver said, *It was*  
 " *no such matter,* and asked, *what had I to do*  
 " *with it? and bid me be gone.* And ' told them  
 " *I was willing,* for I could not endure to see  
 " *this.* And when I was in the town, some did  
 " *seem to sympathize with me in my grief,* but  
 " *I told them, that they had no warrant from*  
 " *the word of God, nor precedent from our country,*  
 " *nor power from his Majesty, to hang the man.*

To Mr. Geo. Lad, master  
 of the America of Dart- your Friend,  
 mouth, now at Barba- THOMAS WILKIE.  
 does.

Edward  
Wharton's  
examina-  
tion.

At the same court by which William Leddra was condemned to death, Edward Wharton, who had been imprisoned near a year, was brought before their tribunal, where, when he appeared, he very reasonably demanded *the cause wherefore he was forced from his habitation, while he was honestly following his lawful occupation, and here laid up as an evil-doer?* For which they had no better reason to assign than that *his hair was too long, and that he had disobeyed that commandment, which saith, honour thy father and mother;* which they by a violent misconstruction applied to his not taking off his hat to the magistrates, to which he replied, "I love and honour all magistrates and rulers, who are for the punishment of evil doers, and the praise of them that do well." Then secretary Rawson called out, *Edward Wharton come to the bar.*

Edward.

<sup>c</sup> *Edward Wharton.* Yea, and to the bench too, **C H A P.**  
 for thou hast no evil to lay to my charge. *Secretary.* Hold up your hand. *Edw. Wharton.*  
<sup>III</sup>  
 I will not, thou hast no evil to charge me with. *Secretary.* Edward Wharton, hear your sentence  
 of banishment. *Edw. Wharton.* Have a care what you do, for if you murder me, my blood  
 will lie heavy upon you. *Secretary.* Edward Wharton attend to your sentence of banishment :  
 You are upon pain of death to depart this jurisdiction, it being the 11th of this instant March,  
 by the one and twentieth of the same, on the pain of death. *Edw. Wharton.* I am a single  
 man, and I have dealings with some people ; it were good I had time to make clear with all,  
 and then if you have power to murder me, you may.

Sentence of  
banishment.

Then the governor and secretary laid their heads together.

*Governor.* If we should give him a hundred days, it is all one. *Edw. Wharton.* Nay, I shall not go away, therefore be careful what you do.

Then addressing the people assembled in the court, he spoke audibly as followeth, viz.

“ All people, take notice, what horrible, wicked and unjust men these are ; for after they had unrighteously taken me from my house, where, when the constable came in, I was following my honest calling in the fear of the Lord, he forced me out, and led me along the country like some evil-doer, to the governor’s house, where I asked the governor what he had to charge me withal ? who said, *you shall know hereafter.* And now, they have kept me almost a year close prisoner, night and day, they have banished me on pain of

His address  
to the people.

**C H A P.** of death, and, for ought I know, they will murder me ; and yet they have nothing to charge me withal, *but my hat and my hair.*"

<sup>III.</sup>  
1661.

Upon this Rawson the secretary, taking the book of records, read to the people, how that contrary to law, Edward Wharton had travelled up and down with W. Robinson and Marmaduke Stevenson. To which Edward replied, "What readest thou that for ? have you not plowed furrows on my back for that already, although you had no law for it?" For he had been cruelly whipped in 1659, and fined 20l. for travelling in company with the said sufferers.

Edward was then threatened, and commanded to quit the court, which he did ; but, as he told them, continued in their jurisdiction, and publickly attended the execution of William Leddra. Which the persecuting priests and magistrates now thought best to overlook, finding, that the more they condemned, the more the bloody work grew on their hands ; and that they had the further mortification to perceive that the past executions had exposed them to severe censure and infamy, with candid and unprejudiced minds in a general way. Therefore the fiercenes of their rage being in some measure damped thereby, they were induced, though reluctantly, from these and other considerations, to proceed more cautiously in enforcing their sanguinary law. With the first three that suffered under it they used very little ceremony, or form of trial, but as far as appears, condemned them to death almost as soon as brought to the bar, without much apology or prefatory introduction to their sentence. Nor did William Leddra meet with much better treatment ; yet he was allowed some semblance of a trial, but without a jury, and some liberty to

to speak for himself (a privilege arbitrarily refused to the former) and still greater liberty of vindicating his cause, was permitted Wenlock Christifon, the last who was tried for his life, upon their act for banishment, on pain of death, and who, with fortitude founded upon conscious integrity, bravely maintained his cause and his innocence, and clearly exposed the arbitrary measures of these persecutors; undismayed at their menaces, and at the prospect of losing his life under their hands, as his brethren had done, he steadfastly defended himself against power without right, and with sound reasoning pleaded his cause, to the conviction of the audience, and even some of his judges, in his favour: so that although the intemperate governor in his passion condemned him to death, he, and his associates, were discouraged by the current of popular odium, or fear of the consequence, from putting the sentence in execution.

It was at the time, when they were passing sentence of death on William Leddra, that Wenlock Christifon, who had been also banished on pain of death, not only returned to Boston, as with his life in his hand, but came openly into the court. His appearance there at that time struck the court with a sudden damp and dismay, so that for some time there was a general silence. But after a while recovering themselves, they ordered him to be brought to the bar; when the marshal bade him pull off his hat, which he refused, and a short dialogue ensued, as followeth: Secretary Rawson. *Is not your name Wenlock Christifon?* Wenlock. Yes. Endicot. *Wast not thou banished upon pain of death?* Wenlock. *Yea, I was.* Endicot. *What doest thou here then?* Wenlock. *I am come to warn you that you should*

1661.  
Wenlock  
Christifon.

CHAP. *shed no more innocent blood: for the blood you*  
 III. *have shed already cries to the Lord for vengeance.*

1661.

Whereupon the governor ordered him into custody. On the day that William Leddra was executed, the court sat again, and thinking to terrify Wenlock by the example of William's death, had him brought into court, where both the governor Endicot and deputy Bellingham endeavoured, but in vain, to daunt the valiant confessor with dreadful menaces, telling him, that except he would renounce his religion, he should surely die. But he, without the least hesitation, answered them, Nay, I shall not change my religion, nor seek to save my life; neither do I intend to deny my master, but if I lose my life for Christ's sake, and the preaching of the gospel, I shall save it. This undaunted reply put a stop to their further procedure at present; so they sent him back to prison, to be kept close prisoner till the next court, which was to be held the latter end of the third month, and the beginning of the fourth month succeeding; at which he was again brought to the bar and put upon his trial.

His trial.

The first question put to him by the governor was, What he had to say for himself, why he should not die? *Wenlock.* I have done nothing worthy of death: if I had, I refuse not to die. *Governor.* Thou art come in among us in rebellion, which is as the sin of witchcraft, and ought to be punished. *Wenlock.* I came not in among you in rebellion, but in obedience to the God of heaven; not in contempt to any one of you, but in love to your souls and bodies; and that you shall know one day, when you and all men must give an account of the deeds done in the body.

body. Take heed, for you cannot escape the <sup>CHAP.</sup>  
righteous judgments of God.

III.

*Major-general Adderton.* You pronounce woes and judgments, and those that are gone before you pronounced woes and judgments; but the judgments of the Lord are not come upon us yet.

1661.

*Wenlock.* Be not proud, neither let your spirits be lifted up; God doth but wait till the measure of your iniquity be filled up, and that you have run your ungodly race, then will the wrath of God come upon you to the uttermost. And as for thy part, \* it hangs over thy head, and is near to be poured down upon thee, and shall come as a thief in the night suddenly, when thou thinkest not of it. By what law will you put me to death? *Court.* We have a law, and by our law, you are to die. *Wenlock.* So said the Jews of Christ, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die: Who empowered you to make that law? *Court.* We have a patent and are patentees, judge whether we have not power

H h 2 to

\* It is very remarkable that some time after, this officer who did thus in a manner bid defiance to heaven, having been on a certain day exercising the soldiers with much ostentation, as he was returning home in the evening, near the place where they usually loosed the Quakers from the cart after they had whipped them, <sup>a</sup> his horse suddenly affrighted threw him with such violence that he instantly died a shocking spectacle, his eyes being dashed out of his head, his brains forced out at his nose, and the blood running out of his ears: Being taken up, and brought into the court-house, where he had been active in sentencing innocent people to death, his blood ran through the floor, exhibiting to the spectators an affecting instance of divine punishment of a daring and hardened persecutor, made a frightful example of that judgment, which when warned of, he had openly despised and treated with disdain, and which, as oretold, overtook him as a thief in the night.

<sup>a</sup> Besse, vol. ii. p. 270. Sewel, p. 343.

C H A P. to make laws? *Wenlock.* How! have you  
 III.  
 ~~~~~ power to make laws repugnant to the laws of  
 1661. England? *Governor.* Nay. *Wenlock.* Then  
 you are gone beyond your bounds, and have  
 forfeited your patent, and this is more than you  
 can answer. Are you subjects to the King, yea  
 or nay?

*Secretary Rawson.* What will you infer from  
 that, what good will that do you? *Wenlock.*  
 If you are, say so; for in your petition to the  
 King, you desire that he will protect you, and that  
 you may be worthy to kneel among his loyal  
 subjects. *Court.* Yes. *Wenlock.* So am I, and  
 for any thing I know am as good as you, if not  
 better: for if the King did but know your  
 hearts, as God knows them, he would see that  
 your hearts are as rotten towards him as they  
 are towards God. Therefore seeing that you  
 and I are subjects to the King, I demand to be  
 tried by the laws of my own nation. *Court.*  
 You shall be tried by a bench and jury \*. *Wen-*  
*lock.* That is not the law, but the manner of it;  
 for if you will be as good as your word, you  
 must set me at liberty, for I never heard or read  
 of any law that was in England to hang Qua-  
 kers. *Governor.* There is a law to hang Jesuits.  
*Wenlock.* If you put me to death, it is not be-  
 cause I go under the name of a Jesuit, but a Qua-  
 ker, therefore I appeal to the laws of my own  
 nation. *Court.* You are in our hands and have  
 broken our laws, and we will try you.

*Wenlock.*

\* Those who had been condemned to death before him were deprived of this privilege; but the government of England being changed by the King's restoration, they began to be afraid to go on in the former course, of condemning without a trial by jury, as being subversive of the fundamental laws of England, and rights of Englishmen.

*Wenlock.* Your will is your law, and what you have power to do, that you will do: and seeing that the jury must go forth on my life, this I have to say to you in the fear of the living God: ‘*Jury, take heed what you do, for you swear by the living God, that you will true trial make, and just verdict give, according to the evidence.*’ Jury, look for your evidence: what have I done to deserve death? Keep your hands out of innocent blood.’ This one of the jurymen acknowledged to be good counsel, yet the generality, either prejudiced in their minds, or afraid of the displeasure of the court, from which they had received their lesson, soon brought him in guilty. Wenlock then said, I deny all guilt, for my conscience is clear in the sight of God. *Governor.* The jury hath condemned thee. *Wenlock.* The Lord doth justify me, who art thou that condemnest?

Then the court proceeded to vote as to the sentence of death, to which several of them would not consent, being by his steadfastness in manifesting his innocence, and the iniquity of their unsanctioned law, convinced in their consciences that he had done nothing worthy of death. This dissent provoked the governor to that unseemly decree, that in a rage, throwing something down on the table, he cried *I could find in my heart to go home.*

To which Wenlock replied, It were better for thee to be at home than here, for thou art about a bloody piece of work.

*Governor.* You that will not consent record it. I thank God, I am not afraid to give judgment. *Wenlock Christison,* hearken to your sentence: You must return to the place from whence

C H A P.  
III.  
1661.

**C H A P.** whence you came, and from thence to the place  
 III.  
**1661.** of execution, and there you must be hanged  
 Yet the until you be dead, dead, dead, upon the 13th  
 governor sentence of day of June, being the fifth day of the week.  
 passes sen-  
 tence of  
 death upon  
 him.

*Wenlock.* The will of the Lord be done. In whose will I came amongst you, and in whose counsel I stand, feeling his eternal power, that will uphold me to the last gasp, I do not question it : known be it to you all, that if you have power to take my life from me, my soul shall enter into everlasting rest and peace with God, where you yourselves shall never come : and if you have power to take my life from me, the which I do question, I believe, you shall never more take Quakers lives from them. Note my words. Do not think to weary out the living God by taking away the lives of his servants : what do you gain by it ? For the last man you put to death here are five come in his room. And if you have power to take my life from me, God can raise up the same principle of life in ten of his servants, and send them among you in my room, that you may have torment upon torment, which is your portion : for there is no peace to the wicked, faith my God.

*Governor.* Take him away.

The holy confidence with which this concluding speech of Wenlock's was uttered, considered with the sequel, seem sufficient to authorize the opinion, that a supernatural influence suggested it, notwithstanding the prevailing notion amongst the learned of this world that all pretensions to inspiration are enthusiastick ; the scripture informs us that great men are not always wise, neither do the aged understand judgment ; but there is a spirit in man, and the inspiration of the Almighty giveth them understanding.

According

According to the governor's order, Wenlock C H A P. Christifon was taken back to prison, where he continued in faith and patience, resigned to the will of God, and to suffer death for the testimony of a good conscience. But before the day appointed for his execution, an order of court was issued for the enlargement of him, and twenty seven others then in prison for their christian testimony.

When the marshal and constable came to set them at liberty, they informed them it was in consequence of a \* new law : upon which Wenlock remarked that " It was thought the gallows had been their last weapon, that their magistrates had alledged that their law was a good and wholesome law, made for their peace, and the safe-guard of their country, adding, what ! are your hands weakened ? the power of God is over you all." The prison doors being set open, the prisoners were by appointment of the court, by a guard armed with swords, driven out of the jurisdiction into the wilderness-country, and there left.

This cessation of sanguinary proceedings, by the subsequent, plainly appears not to be owing to any tenderness, or recovery to a better mind in the persecutors ; but partly to the general odium and outcry of the more rational and moderate part on both sides the Atlantic, against their putting men to death for religion, whilst themselves and their party, were not only stigmatizing, with every opprobrious epithet, that hierarchy, from whom they had experienced far less severity ; but had recourse to arms, or to flight

\* This new law was for banishing them, and if they returned, whipping them from town to town out of their jurisdiction.

1661.  
An order  
for releas-  
ing the  
Quakers  
out of pri-  
son.

C H A P. III.  
1661.

flight to get the power into their own hands, and abuse it, even in a superior degree; yet chiefly, I apprehend, owing to the change of government in England. From the king and ministry, betwixt whom and them there was no cordiality, they had no reason to expect any partiality in their favour, and being convicted in their consciences, that they had transgressed the bounds of their authority, and the limitations of their charter, fearfulness of being called to account at this time, when their party had lost the power of skreening them, was I believe the most prevalent reason with them to drop the execution of their illiberal and persecuting law; but the spirit \* of malevolence and persecution continued to actuate them still. In imitation of their brethren here, they called the Quakers vagabonds, and made a law to whip them as such through every town in their way out of their jurisdiction; of the severe execution of this law, we shall see many affecting instances in the succeeding parts of this history, and that they finally ceased not their inhuman severities until the principal agents were arrested to appear in judgment before an higher tribunal than theirs.

When the tidings of these severe executions reached their friends in England, from the impulſe

\* In Thomas Chalkley's journal, in his travels in New-England, in 1693, we meet with the following passage, "I  
" being a stranger and a traveller could not but observe the  
" barbarous and unchristian welcome I had into Boston, the  
" metropolis of New England, *Oh what a pity, said one that*  
" *all your society were not hanged with the other four!*" This shews that the spirit of persecution was alive in some of that people, long after the power of gratifying it was restrained. Besse.

pulse of that fraternal sympathy and affection, C H A P. which made them nearly feel for and with each other in their afflictions, they thought it their duty to make immediate application to the king. For this purpose Edward Burrough, who had on many former occasions, solicited for the relief of his friends, when under sufferings in the various changes of government, repaired to court, to repeat his solicitations on behalf of the sufferers in New-England; and having obtained access to the King's presence, informed him, *there was a vein of innocent blood opened in his dominions, which if it were not stopped might over-run all:* to which the king replied, *I will stop that vein.* It seems the king was pre-disposed to stop their career by a previous information of their proceedings and disposition from George Bishop's book, containing a narrative of the cruel persecution in New England, wherein reading a passage of Major General Dennison's reply to some that threatened to complain of their illegal proceedings, which was this; *this year you will go to complain to the parliament, and the next year they will send to see how it is; and the third year the government is changed:* This passage immediately struck him, so that calling to some of the lords to hear it, he said, *Lo, these are my good subjects of New-England, but I will put a stop to them.* The king being hereby prepossessed against them, readily complied with Edward Burrough's solicitations, who representing the case as urgent, as not knowing how many more might suffer death, in case of delay, he immediately gave orders to the secretary of state to prepare a mandamus to stop their proceedings, which being soon drawn and perfected,

Edward Burrough solicits the king to stop the persecution in New England.

The king in compliance with his solicitation orders his mandamus to stop it, and deputes Samuel Shattock his commissioneer to carry it over.

CHAP. perfected, the king at the instance of Edward  
 III. Burrough, granted a deputation to Samuel Shattock,  
 ~~~~~ an inhabitant of New England, and under  
 1661. sentence of banishment on pain of death, to  
 carry over the mandamus, a copy whereof fol-  
 loweth, viz.

### " CHARLES R.

" Trusty and well beloved, we greet you well.  
 " having been informed, that several of our sub-  
 " jects amongst you, called Quakers, have been  
 " and are imprisoned by you, whereof some  
 " have been executed, and others (as hath been  
 " represented unto us) are in danger to undergo  
 " the like; we have thought fit to signify our  
 " pleasure in that behalf for the future: And  
 " do hereby require, that if there be any of  
 " those people called Quakers amongst you, now  
 " already condemned to suffer death, or other  
 " corporal punishment; or that are imprisoned,  
 " and obnoxious to the like condemnation, you  
 " are to forbear to proceed any further there-  
 " in; but that you forthwith send the said per-  
 " sons (whether condemned or imprisoned) over  
 " into their own kingdom of England, together  
 " with their respective crimes or offences laid to  
 " their charge: To the end such course may be  
 " taken with them here, as shall be agreeable  
 " to our laws and their demerits. And for so  
 " doing, these our letters shall be your sufficient  
 " warrant and discharge. Given at our court  
 " at Whitehall, the 9th day of September, 1660,  
 " in the thirteenth year of our reign.

" Subscribed:

“ Subscribed : To our trusty and well beloved C H A P.  
 “ John Endicot, Esq; and to all and every III.  
 “ other the governor or governors of our Plan- <sup>W</sup>  
 “ tations of New England, and of all the Co- 1661.  
 “ lonies thereunto belonging, that now are, or  
 “ hereafter shall be; and to all and every the  
 “ ministers and officers of our Plantations and  
 “ Colonies whatsoever, within the continent  
 “ of New England.

By his Majesty's command,

WILLIAM MORRIS.”

In order to lose no time in expediting a matter of such consequence, Ralph Goldsmith, A ship hired on purpose to carry it over. commander of a good ship, and one of their own society, was engaged for three hundred pounds to sail in ten days, who immediately preparing and failing accordingly, arrived at Boston in about six weeks. On their arrival in the harbour, some of the citizens coming on board to look for letters (which would not be delivered that day) at their return on shore, reported that the ship was full of Quakers, and amongst them was Shattock, who was under sentence of banishment on pain of death ; but of his errand and authority they were ignorant.

Next morning Samuel Shattock went on shore, accompanied only by the master of the ship, and going directly to the governor's house, produced his commission with the King's mandamus to the governor, who after the perusal thereof, and consulting the deputy governor, The mandamus delivered and partly stopped. said, *We shall obey his Majesty's command.* After this the passengers came ashore, and had a religious

CHAP. gious meeting with their friends in the town, to  
 III. return thanksgivings to the God and Father of  
 ~~ all their mercies, for his signal mercy manifest-  
 1661. ed in this admirable deliverance.

Not long after, the following order of the court at Bolton was issued.

“ To William Salter, keeper of the prison at  
 “ Boston.

*Order for  
the release  
of prisoners.* “ You are required, by authority and order  
 “ of the general court, to release and discharge  
 “ the Quakers, who at present are in your cus-  
 “ tody: See that you do not neglect this,

“ By order of the court,

“ EDWARD RAWSON, Sec.”

*Boston,  
9th Dec. 1661.*

## C H A P. IV.

*The Rulers of New England send a Deputation to the King with an Address of Congratulation, and Accusation of the Quakers.—Interview between some of the People called Quakers and the New-England Deputies.—The Deputies, being alarmed, returned home.—Act against the Quakers brought into the House of Commons.—Friends of London use endeavours to get it stopped.—Edward Burrough replies to the suggestion of danger to the public Peace.—Richard Hubberthorn to the danger of Insurrections from their Meetings.—George Whitehead to their Meetings being termed unlawful.—They assert their Right to the Benefit of the King's Declaration from Breda.—The Bill passed.*

THE rulers of the province of New England,  
during the time of the Commonwealth, and the  
succeeding revolutions of government in Eng-  
land, seem to have considered themselves as in-  
dependents in state, as well as church, and we  
see had acted accordingly; making violent  
and arbitrary laws, without paying any regard  
to the restrictions of their charter, and execut-  
ing them in as arbitrary a manner; looking upon  
the power as established in their own hands  
there, and those of their own party on this  
side, they would admit of no appeal to Eng-  
land, while they had nothing to fear from Eng-  
land:

C H A P.  
IV.  
1661.

CHAP. land : But after the king's restoration the case  
 IV. was altered, and then they seemed to be really  
 1661. alarmed with fear of the consequences of the  
 undue exertion of unlicensed authority, and  
 their refusing to acknowledge the supremacy of  
 England, in refusing appeals for trial by its  
 laws : In order to avert the danger and appre-  
 hended ill consequences of their misrule, they  
 concluded to send a deputation to the king\*.  
 Colonel Temple was previously sent to acquaint  
 him that in submission to his commands the  
 Quakers were set at liberty ; and not long after  
 he was followed by Simon Broadstreet, secre-  
 tary of the Massachuset's colony, and John  
 Norton, chief priest of Boston, with an ad-  
 dress of congratulation to the king on his ac-  
 cession to the throne. This address introduced  
 in a style of abject servility, proceeds to apolo-  
 gize for the unlicensed severities against the  
 Quakers, by a most virulent and false accusa-  
 tion of them, as a people not fit to live on the  
 earth ; and, as if the king had not a better op-  
 portunity of knowing their principles and prac-  
 tice in England, where the body of them resided,  
 they tell the king, " That the Quakers were  
 " open capital blasphemers ; † open seducers  
 " from the glorious Trinity, the Lord Christ,  
 " and from the scriptures as the rule of life ;  
 " open

The New  
England  
rulers send  
a deputation  
to the king  
with an ad-  
dress of con-  
gratulation  
and accusa-  
tion of the  
Quakers so  
called.

\* Neale.

† This declamatory abuse proves nothing but that the penmen were versed in bearing false witness and calling names, and that their implacability to the Quakers retained its full strength after their hands were tied up from putting them to death.

“ open enemies to government itself †, establish- CHAP.  
 “ ed in the hands of any but men of their own IV.  
 “ principles ; malignant promoters of doctrines  
 “ directly tending to subvert both our church  
 “ and state.—That after all other means used  
 “ in vain, they were at last constrained, for  
 “ their own safety, to pass sentence of banish-  
 “ ment on pain of death.”

~~~~~  
1661.

After this notable apology for persecution, and depriving their fellow-subjects of their civil and religious rights, their property, liberty and lives, they proceed to supplicate the king for his protection in the continuance of their religious and civil liberties, acquainting him, \*that for liberty to walk in the way of the gospel, with all good conscience, they had chosen the wilderness, to which they removed, before the pleasant land they had left behind, rather than submit to the impositions of the then prevailing hierarchy, which they could not do, without an evil conscience.

*+ Turpe est doctori cum cuique redarguit ipsum.*

This again is not only mere declamation without proof, but the most groundless assertion, and most diametrically opposite to their real character, that could be imagined, to which a series of conduct from their first rise had given the lie. Men that by principle had been always submissive to every government under which they lived ; sought after neither the emoluments, the honours, nor the power of the kingdoms of this world, but simply for protection in their religious and civil rights, were not, nor could be either open or secret enemies to government ; neither did they ever discover even a wish to have the secular government in their hands. But here they measure the Quakers by their own rule of action, having, in purple characters, manifested themselves enemies to every government, but in their own hands, and stopped neither at deceitful nor violent measures to seize and retain it in them.

\* Neale.

**C H A P.** science. Who could imagine that these tender-  
 IV. conscienced men, should so soon lay aside all re-  
**1661.** regard to the tender consciences of others, all  
 remains of tenderness and common humanity?

That voluntary exiles for religious liberty, should almost immediately forget the value of it so far, as to refuse the enjoyment thereof to all but themselves; that those who could not submit to the impositions of the hierarchy, without an evil conscience, should surpass that hierarchy in the cruelty of punishing such as would not violate their consciences in submitting to them; or that any men should be so inconsistent as to justify and deprecate persecution in the same address.

Whilst these New England deputies were in London, the Quakers, so called there, had several interviews with them upon the subject of putting their friends to death; in which they endeavoured to palliate their proceedings, and disguise the cruelty in which they were both deeply concerned: Norton, who had been a principal promoter of all their sanguinary laws, excused himself by saying he did not assist at the trial of those who were put to death, nor had advised it; but John Copeland, who had suffered the amputation of his ear at Boston, charged the contrary upon him. Broadstreet could not help owning his being a party in condemning them to death; and being, with his associates, interrogated whether they would acknowledge themselves subject to the laws of England, they answered in the affirmative: Being asked by what law they did it? They replied, by the same law that Jesuits were put to death in England. George Fox, upon this, demanded of

Interview  
between  
some of the  
people call-  
ed Quakers  
and the  
New Eng-  
land depu-  
ties.

of them, whether they believed that his friends whom they had executed were Jesuits, or jesuitically inclined; they answered, Nay. Then said he, ye have murdered them, for it plainly appears you have put them to death arbitrarily without any law. Upon which Broadstreet insinuated their aim was to insnare them. But George Fox observed they had catched themselves; and if the father of William Robinson (who was not of their persuasion) were in town, it was probable he would question them, and bring their lives into jeopardy. And some of the royalists were earnest with the Quakers to prosecute them as murderers of the king's subjects without any law or authority from him. But their security lay in the pacifick and forbearing principles of those whom they had persecuted, whereby they were directed not to avenge themselves, but commit their cause to the righteous judge, who will render to every man according to his works.

However, these deputies being alarmed, and fearing the danger of staying in England, thought it safest to secure themselves by a precipitate retreat, and return home, where it seems they met with a cool reception.

What they had in commission, besides delivering the address, I meet with no clear account; but Neal informs us the country was not satisfied with their conduct, he adds, "Whether they flattered the court too much, or promised more for their country than they ought is uncertain; but when Norton came home, his friends were shy of him, and some of the people told him to his face that he had laid the foundation of the ruin of their liberties,

C H A P.  
IV.  
1661.

C H A P. IV. which struck him to the heart, and brought  
 ~~~~~ him into such a melancholy habit of body,  
 1661. " as hastened his death\*." William Sewel informs us that this Norton bowed to the archbishop with no less reverence than to the king; that by fawning upon the church party (whom they hated) they found means to reserve a power to be vexatious to the Quakers so called, although they were prohibited from putting them to death: That many of the bishops and others entertained inimical dispositions to this society, the severe persecutions soon after raised against them evidently demonstrate.

For they and their partisans at court and in parliament having now the ascendancy, after excluding the Presbyterians from all offices of trust or emolument in church or state, proceeded to punish the Quakers, who affected neither, nor had

\* His death was very sudden; having been at his worship in the fore part of the day, and intending to go thither again in the afternoon, as he was walking in his own house he was observed to fetch a great groan; and leaning his head against the chimney piece was heard to say, *The hand, or judgment of the Lord is upon me,* and so sunk down, and spoke no more, and had fallen into the fire, if an ancient man present had not prevented it. He having been a principal instigator of the magistrates to all their severe persecution of this innocent people, even to put them to death, it was natural for them to consider the manner of his death as a judgment upon him, and to rank him with several others who had been active promoters of cruelty against them, many of whom died not a natural death, but were either cut off by a sudden stroke, or died with disagreeable and loathsome symptoms about them. Neale says, " This reflection of the Quakers (upon Norton's death) is very unjust, it being impossible for us to distinguish between a natural and judicial death; yet I heartily wish that neither he nor any body else, by their unchristian severities, had given them occasion to make it."

had administered any just occasion of offence, C H A P. merely on account of their religious scruples IV.  
and way of worship. For this purpose a bill was brought into parliament, entitled *An act for preventing mischiefs and dangers, that may arise from certain persons called Quakers, and others, refusing to take lawful oaths.*

1661.

Act against  
Quakers  
brought  
into the  
house of  
commones.

Although the title of the bill mentions only the refusal to take oaths ; yet the bill itself takes in their religious assemblies, enacting that if five or more Quakers of sixteen years of age or upwards assemble under pretence of joining in religious worship, as well as refusing to take an oath, the party offending shall forfeit for the first offence a sum not exceeding five pounds, or suffer three months imprisonment, for the second offence the penalty to be doubled, and for the third they were to abjure the realm or be transported.

Some of this society in London getting early intelligence of this bill, and the contents thereof, thought their duty to themselves and their brethren demanded their intercession with the parliament to stop its progress. Edward Burrough, Richard Hubberthorn, and George Whitehead attended the parliament to solicit against passing the bill into an act : When it was committed, they attended the committee sundry times ; but their solicitations were not followed with the like success as Edward Burrough's late application to the king had been. They were again admitted to give their reasons against the act, at the bar of the house. But political considerations, party animosity, and bigotted and exasperated zeal for the church (so called) were the moving causes of action with the majority :

Friends in  
London use  
endeavours  
to get it  
stopped.

C H A P. Appeals to their reason and humanity were vain:

IV. A resolution determined upon these motives

deafened their ears to the clearest arguments

1661. addrest to the one, and deadened their hearts

to the feelings of the other. Their admission  
of these Quakers to plead their cause seems no  
more than matter of form, and to save appear-  
ances; for if they had not been predetermined  
to pass the bill at all events, the weakness  
and futility of the charges brought in support  
thereof, and the urgent reasons advanced against  
it, appear sufficient to influence any rational and  
unprejudiced body of men to lay it aside.

Their sentiments respecting oaths had been  
lately presented to the king and council in writ-  
ing by Edward Burrough, in a paper he entitled  
*a just and righteous plea*, wherein he exhibited  
at large the reasons why the people called Qua-  
kers refused oaths in general, and particularly  
the oath of allegiance; that it was not from any  
disrespect or unfaithfulness to the king and his  
government, but merely for conscience-sake, be-  
ing afraid of disobeying Christ's command, which  
was express and determinate *swear not at all*:  
That they are and shall be faithful, innocent and  
peaceable in their respective stations and condi-  
tions, under the government of king Charles II.  
whom they acknowledge supreme magistrate and  
governor over this kingdom, and are conscien-  
tiously obedient to him in all his commands,  
either by doing what he justly requireth, or pa-  
tiently suffering whatever is inflicted upon them,  
when any thing is required which they appre-  
hend inconsistent with the just law of God.  
That it had ever been with them an established  
religious principle, confirmed by a consonant  
practice,

practice, to enter into no plots, combinations or C H A P. rebellions against government, nor to seek de- IV.  
liverance from injustice or oppression by any such means.

1661.

Having thus lately presented to the government their reasons for declining oaths; their remonstrances to the parliament were principally confined to their religious meetings : \* In the preamble to the bill it was recited that their meetings were to the great endangering of the public peace and safety, and to the terror of the people; this they denied, Edward Burrough al- Edward  
Burrough  
replies to  
the suggest-  
ed danger  
of the pub-  
lic peace.  
ledging they were in nowise to the terror of the people, but peaceable and harmless, and purely for the worship of God in that manner and form, which by his law in their hearts, they were persuaded he required of them; that in this respect they endeavoured to copy after the example of the primitive christians; that being convinced of the necessity of preserving a good conscience inviolate and void of offence to God or man, no human law or ordinance could dissolve the obligation of the superior law of God in their consciences, or exculpate them in disobeying thereof; and that as the worship of God was an indispensable duty required by this law, they could not refrain keeping up their meetings for that purpose, whatever sufferings human laws might subject them to on that account; because if, through fear of man, they should neglect this reasonable service of their maker, they thereby violate this divine law in their consciences, and that peace of

\* George Whitehead's Journal, page 261, 262, &c.

CHAP. of mind, which they preferred to every temporary enjoyment; that, therefore, they presume they ought not to pass a bill of this nature, it being contrary to the law of God.

IV.  
1661.

It being also suggested in the said preamble that being numerous and holding a strict correspondence amongst themselves, their meetings might be more dangerous to contrive and cause insurrections, &c.

Richard  
Hubber-  
thorn to  
the danger  
of insurrec-  
tions from  
their meet-  
ings.

To this Richard Hubberthorn made answer to this purport. That there could be no such danger in their meetings as was implied, because being public, and open for the reception of all persons, who chose to resort to them, to see and hear all that was transacted therein, there was no probability that they should plot or contrive insurrections in the face of the world; that the reducing of their meetings to the number of four or five, besides the family, appeared to be a measure not calculated for the preventing of such pernicious designs, if they were a people of such bad principles (which they were not) but rather to furnish more convenient opportunities for promoting them, for it would not break their correspondence, but afford them the means of carrying it on more privately, and in a manner better accommodated for forming and advancing a plot: Wherefore it appeared more prudent and eligible to suffer their meetings to be public, as they were, rather than to punish a numerous body of people, on causeless suspicion of danger, supported by no matter of fact, or the least occasion administered by them.

One of the members, called Sir John Goodrick, being liberal in his invectives and common-place

place calumnies against them and their meetings, terming them unlawful or contrary to law, and tending to seduce the people from the church;

George Whitehead replied to him, that if their meetings were contrary to law, it implied there exists some law already to which they are contrary; and if there be a law already in force against them, it seems quite superfluous and unnecessary for you to make a new one: But, we trust, no such thing can be proved against us, as that our meetings, properly speaking, are in themselves unlawful, being in obedience to the Lord, only for his worship, and agreeable to the practice of the primitive christians, and therefore not unlawful in the proper sense of the word. He also observed, that if they suffered for keeping them up, under persuasion of duty, they should suffer for the cause of God, and so commit their cause to him who would judge righteously between them and their persecutors, exhorting the house to act in his fear; for they might as well make a law, that the Quakers (so called) should not pray in the name of Jesus Christ, as one that they should not assemble for divine worship, which they dared no more to refrain, than Daniel did to pray to the true God, although it was contrary to king Darius's decree.

He desired them to consider what guilt and disrepute they might bring upon themselves, by making a law, the execution whereof must produce grievous sufferings upon thousands of innocent people in the nation (who in justice ought to be protected by law) endanger the utter ruin of many families, and the loss of many lives in prisons.

When

CHAP. When mankind, from the illusions of party-  
 IV. heat, come to recover sound and dispassionate  
 1661. judgment, what an indelible stain must it leave  
 on the reputation or memory of those, who deaf  
 to every sentiment of justice and compassion,  
 could be instrumental to the oppression of an  
 innocent people! against whom no matter of  
 fact, or crime worthy of suffering, could be prov-  
 ed, or justly laid to their charge.

He observed further, that if the bill before  
 them was passed into a law, it would give en-  
 couragement to wicked, rude and lawless per-  
 sons to abuse them beyond the law, as they had  
 lately done upon the King's proclamation; when  
 several of their friends were by rude fellows  
 taken out of their beds; poor men dragged  
 from their lawful employments, and their poor  
 families, whose subsistence depended on their  
 daily labour; others seized travelling about their  
 lawful occasions on the King's highway, and all  
 hurried to prison illegally, without warrant, or  
 authority, even from the proclamation. There-  
 fore, in case the intended act was passed, they had  
 reason to apprehend the repetition of these abuses  
 to a greater degree; as such rude and unprin-  
 cipled persons would look upon it as a licence,  
 to gratify their malicious dispositions with all  
 kinds of cruelty and injurious treatment of  
 them.

They assert their right to the benefit of the King's declaration from Breda. Finally, they assert their right to the indul-  
 gence to tender consciences upon the King's so-  
 lemn promise in his declaration, that no man  
 shall be called to account for differences of op-  
 nion in matters of religion, which do not disturb  
 the peace of the kingdom. That their demean-  
 our having been peaceable, inoffensive to their  
 neighbours,

neighbours, and submissive to the government, C H A P. they were within the description of those who IV.  
were entitled to the indulgence; and having never forfeited their right thereto, they could not be restrained in matters of worship and conscience towards God, without wounding the King's honour, and violating the publick faith.

Conclusive as these arguments were, although they had an effect upon several of the members, so that they appeared serious and sober in their carriage towards the appellants, and some of them owned, what they advanced was very reasonable, and if the members had feared God, or regarded equity, they would not have passed the act; and although supported by the abilities of Edmund Waller, (distinguished for his poetical performances,) in a candid and liberal speech on the occasion; as also by Michael Mallet, Sir John Vaughan and others; yet they were ineffectual with the majority of the house, composed of courtiers, pensioners to the crown, and bigots to episcopal authority, with whom the dictates of the court, and the imagined interests and power of the episcopal church preponderated, The bill against reason, right and justice, so that the bill passed. was passed into a law; in consequence whereof, great persecutions and imprisonments ensued.

## C H A P. V.

*Account of Imprisonments.—Steadfastness of the People called Quakers.—Modelling the Magistracy in consequence of the Corporation Act.—Disposition of the Judges.—The People called Quakers the greatest Sufferers.—Conjectural Enquiry into the Causes. 1. Their pacific Principles. 2. Their Constancy in keeping up their Meetings openly. 3. Their Plain-dealing.—Richard Brown's Proceedings.—Account of John Perrut.—Commencement of the Execution of the late Act.—Rude and illegal Behaviour of Philip Millar.—Trial of John Crook and others.—They are not prosecuted by the late Act; but by the 3d. James I. for declining the Oath of Allegiance.—Third Day's Trial. The first Jury discharged, and a new one picked for the Trial.—The Prisoners move for Time to traverse the Indictment, which is refused.—The Jury sworn and Evidence given out of the Hearing of the Prisoners.—Sentence of Premunire passed upon them.—Reflection on the Hardships attending the Society, and their Constancy.—Several others run to a Premunire for not swearing.—Robert Smith, Thomas Storly, and Stephen Pearson, John King and others, Ambrose Rigg, Thomas Good-year, and Benjamin Staples.*

C H A P. AMONGST the great number imprisoned  
 V. upon this act were the three before-mentioned  
 1661. advocates against the law, Edward Burrough,  
 Account of Richard Hubberthorn and George Whitehead,  
 imprisonment. the

the two former of whom, with many others, C H A P.  
V.  
finished their testimony to the truth, by laying w  
down their lives in prison for the conscientious  
discharge of their duty, in obeying God in con-  
tradiction to the ordinances of men. The sin-  
cerity of the members of this society was put to  
a severe test, by the multiplied calamities that  
befel them by this and other persecuting laws,  
of which this parliament are reckoned to have  
made more than any other since the reformation;  
but the unwearied patience and fortitude with  
which they bore their sufferings, to the loss of  
the substance, liberty and lives of many, is an  
irrefragable proof of their integrity; and that  
they were sustained by divine support, to bear  
hardships above the power of mere humanity to  
endure, with a firmness, which the persevering  
cruelty of their persecutors could not overcome;  
heartily disposed, above all things, to please their  
Maker, and having an eye to the recompence of  
reward, they were enabled, in the steady pursuit  
of future happiness, patiently to endure the af-  
flictions permitted to befall them in their pilgri-  
mage on earth.

\* In pursuance of the corporation act, the cor-  
porations had been modelled by commissioners  
appointed by the parliament, and invested with  
an absolute authority to deprive every officer or  
magistrate, who was not entirely devoted to the  
King and church of England, of their offices.  
This power was exercised with the greatest ri-  
gour, so that few or none were continued in the  
magistracy, or put into commission in corpora-  
tions or elsewhere, who were not of the same  
principles with the majority of the house of com-  
mons,

1661.  
Steadfast-  
ness of the  
persecuted  
Quakers.

\* Rapin.

C H A P. mons, and determined to execute the penal laws  
 V. with severity.

1662.  
 Disposition  
 of the  
 judges.

Not only the justices and inferior magistrates were chosen from men of this partial cast; but the judges and other administrators of the law, who ought to be strict dispensers of justice without respect to persons, seem to have been selected to fill the benches, more in consideration of a passionate spirit against non-conformists, than that jurisprudence or that conscientious reverence to equity and legal justice, which are the peculiar ornaments and peculiar qualifications of that important station, to which the security of life, liberty and estate is entrusted: it is manifest that, on many occasions, they paid little regard to equity or decorum, but discovered an intemperate party spirit, and palpable partiality in the seat of judgment, influencing the juries by undue means to bring in unjust verdicts, menacing and fining them, when they were too conscientious to do so: loading the prisoners with abusive reproaches, and passing sentence upon them in an insulting and passionate temper.

Quakers  
 the greatest  
 sufferers.

Of this combination of inimical dispositions all the classes of non-conformists felt the severe effects; but the heaviest weight of sufferings fell

Conjectural  
 enquiry in-  
 to the  
 causes, I.  
 their pacific  
 principles.

upon the Quakers, who had administered least occasion. The reason why they were marked out in particular as objects of such unrelenting cruelty, were probably these; first, their pacific principles, which ought to have secured them protection from equal government, might encourage such magistrates, as were at this time in authority, to prosecute them with the utmost rigour of the law, and frequently beyond the law, as apprehending no danger of being called to account by

by them, or as depending upon the protection of C H A P. V.  
their superiors.

Secondly, while other dissenters could temporize so far as to disguise and conceal themselves, and hold their meetings clandestinely to escape the enacted penalties; the Quakers, perfect strangers to dissimulation, and undaunted in bearing a publick testimony against the iniquity of human laws, prohibiting them from their conscientious duty of worshipping God, in the way they were persuaded was most acceptable to him, thought it base and dishonourable, as not confessing Christ before men, to desert their religious meetings for fear of suffering: therefore they valiantly, and often singly, kept them up in the hottest time of persecution at the appointed times and places, as believing no law of man could exempt them from the obligation they were under to obey the law of God, of which his worship, according to the conviction of their own consciences, and not according to the prescriptions of men, was an especial part; nor rescue them from his righteous judgment for the violation of known duty. This their persecutors would needs consider as flying in the face of law and government, and being greatly provoked at their constancy (which they termed obstinacy) as baffling their scheme of totally subduing all the dissenting sects, they exerted every effort of their malice, and their power, to make them more compliant to their wills.

Thirdly, believing it their duty to promote righteousness in the earth, and testify against sin and iniquity wherever or in whomsoever it appeared, as they had, under the former government, borne plain testimonies against the hypocrisy and outside sanctity of the formal professors of

Their plain dealing even with the greatest.

C H A P. V.  
 of religion, so they honestly testified against the  
 open profanity, debauchery and contempt of  
 1662. all religion of this age.

We have two epistles to King Charles, long before Robert Barclay's dedication of his apology, written by the two George Foxs ; the first from George Fox the elder, so called for distinction, as the elder member of the society, written soon after the King's restoration, and the other some time after, a copy of each whereof I insert, as a specimen of the honest plain-dealing of men, who, with Elihu, knew not to flatter, lest in so doing their maker should take them away.

“ To the KING.

“ King Charles,

“ Thou camest not into this nation by fword,  
 “ nor by victory of war; but by the power of  
 “ the Lord: now if thou dost not live in it,  
 “ thou wilt not prosper. And if the Lord hath  
 “ shewed thee mercy, and forgiven thee, and  
 “ thou dost not shew mercy, and forgive; the  
 “ Lord God will not hear thy prayers, nor them  
 “ that pray for thee. And if thou do not stop  
 “ persecution, and persecutors, and take away  
 “ all laws, that do hold up persecution about  
 “ religion; but if thou do persist in them, and  
 “ uphold persecution; that will make thee as  
 “ blind, as them that have gone before thee.  
 “ For persecution hath always blinded those,  
 “ that have gone into it: and such God by his  
 “ power overthrows, and doth his valiant acts  
 “ upon; and bringeth salvation to his oppressed  
 “ ones. And if thou dost bear the fword in  
 “ vain,

" vain, and let drunkennes, oaths, plays, may-<sup>C H A P.</sup>  
 " games, (with fiddlers, drums, trumpets, to play <sup>V.</sup>  
 " at them) with such like abominations and  
 " vanities, be encouraged, or go unpunished ; as  
 " setting up of may-poles, with the image of  
 " the crown a top of them, &c. the nations will  
 " quickly turn like Sodom and Gomorrah, and  
 " be as bad as the old world ; who grieved the  
 " Lord, till he overthrew them : and so he will  
 " you, if these things be not suddenly prevent-  
 " ed. Hardly was there so much wickedness at  
 " liberty before now, as there is at this day ;  
 " as though there was no terror, nor sword of  
 " magistracy ; which doth not grace a govern-  
 " ment, nor is a praise to them that do well.  
 " Our prayers are for them that are in authori-  
 " ty ; that under them we may live a godly life,  
 " in which we have peace : and that we may  
 " not be brought into ungodliness by them. So  
 " hear, and consider, and do good in thy time,  
 " whilst thou hast power ; and be merciful, and  
 " forgive ; that is the way to overcome, and  
 " obtain the kingdom of Christ.

GEORGE FOX."

Extract of an Epistle of George Fox the younger  
to King Charles II.

" The King of Kings hath beheld all thy act-  
 " ings in the dark, and he hath traced thy walk-  
 " ing in obscure places ; and thou hast not hid  
 " thy counsels from the Almighty, but he hath  
 " seen all the intents of thy heart, and thy good  
 " words have not deceived him, nor those that  
 " purely stood in his counsel : For he hath seen  
 " the snares and the pits, which have been privily  
     " preparing

C H A P. " preparing for the innocent, even in the time  
v.      " when smooth words have been given. Oh!  
~~~~ " that thou wouldest have taken counsel of the  
1662. " Lord, and obeyed the same, thou shouldest  
" have been prospered; but thou hast taken  
" counsel of them that have caused thee to err:  
" Thou hast also sought to exalt and establish  
" thyself and thy own honour, and not the truth  
" and honour of God only, which if thou hadst  
" truly done, God would have honoured thee.  
" Thou hast greatly dishonoured and grieved the  
" Lord, by setting up ministers, whom he ap-  
" proveth not, and by providing them a forced  
" maintenance, that so they may make a prey of  
" his people, who for conscience-sake cannot put  
" into their mouths, being spiritually gathered  
" therefrom by the word of the Lord.—O friend,  
" it is not the person of any man which the Lord  
" regards, but it is righteousness which he hath  
" regard to; and so far as man acts in righteous-  
" ness, so far only is he accepted of the Lord,  
" whatever his station may be.

" Thou hast also grieved the holy Spirit, by  
" thy suffering all these wicked and profane  
" shows and sports, which have abounded since  
" thy coming in. Thou hast highly displeased  
" the Lord God, by thy suffering persecution to  
" be carried on in thy name, even whilst thou in  
" words hast promised liberty: Yea many are  
" this day confined in holes and prisons for the  
" testimony of a good conscience. The Lord is  
" displeased with the pride and wickedness that  
" abounds both in thy dominions and in thy fa-  
" mily; and thou thyself hast not been such a  
" pattern and example as thou oughtest to have  
" been. When I behold the wickedness, cruelty  
" and oppression, which abound in this nation  
" in

“ in open view, besides the secret abominations, C H A P.  
 “ which are committed, and are plotting and V.  
 “ lurking in chambers, what idolatry is intended  
 “ in secret to be introduced, I am ready to con-  
 “ clude it had been better for thee, thou hadst  
 “ never come. Although many men flatter and  
 “ applaud thee for selfish ends, yet I see the Lord  
 “ is displeased with thy ways. Such as thou sow-  
 “ est, such thou must reap. This is the truth  
 “ that must stand, and in love to thy soul it is  
 “ declared by him, who must deal uprightly  
 “ with all men: Though for it I suffer out-  
 “ wardly, yet I have a witness in thy conscience,  
 “ to which I am made manifest, and peace with  
 “ the Lord is my portion, which is better than  
 “ an earthly crown.”

GEORGE FOX, the younger.

<sup>1</sup> This letter being delivered to the king, it is said he seemed to be considerably affected with the contents; but that his brother the duke of York, whose temper was more gloomy, reserved, and vindictive, being greatly exasperated at the writer, advised the king to punish him; but the king, with much propriety, replied, *It were better for us to mend our lives.*

The mayor, Richard Brown, continued his R. Brown's severity, and sent fifty-seven more to prison; for proceed-<sup>ings.</sup> such was his pride and passion, that he could not endure the sight of a Quaker without wrath and resentment. It happened on the 31<sup>st</sup> of the month called March this year, he espied Edward Gollin, a pretty way from him in Guildhall, with his hat on, inoffensively discoursing with some persons met there about business, whereupon the mayor

K k ordered

<sup>1</sup> Sewel.

CHAP. V.  
1661. ordered him to be sent to Newgate: Another time, as he was going to the same place, he saw two men in the yard near Blackwell-hall, with their caps on, whereupon he sent for them, and committed them to the counter, where they were detained till the expiration of his mayoralty.

As one Philip Harwood was coming up Foster-lane, the mayor riding by, stopped his horse, and asked Philip *whether he was not a Quaker?* He answered, I am so called: Upon which the mayor, without any more words, ordered him to Newgate, where he lay about three months. He gave many instances of the cruelty of his disposition, one of which was, that when the wife of Nicholas Ridley had been sent by him to Bride-well, and fell sick there, her husband came to the mayor, interceding for her liberty; to whom he gave this churlish answer, *Let her lie there and rot, thee mayest get another wife the sooner;* and instead of shewing mercy to the sick woman, sent her husband to Newgate for asking it.

About this time, beside the heavy sufferings from the secular powers, this people were affected with intestine troubles, occasioned by the caprice and vanity of one John Perrot.

This man had joined in society with the people called Quakers pretty early, and too early taken upon him the ministerial office: Being puffed up with a vain opinion of his own abilities, he must needs go to Rome to convert the pope, and procuring one John Love to accompany him, when they arrived at Leghorn they were taken up and examined by the inquisition, and are reported upon their examination to have given their answers in a manner so satisfactory, as to obtain their

© T. Elwood.

their dismission with impunity. <sup>a</sup> From thence C H A P. they went to Venice, and afterwards to Rome, <sup>V.</sup> where they had not been long till they were taken up and imprisoned; *Love*, as reported, in the inquisition, and Perrot in their Bedlam or hospital, for madmen. *Love* died in prison, not without well-grounded suspicion of his being murdered there. The report divulged was, that he had fasted to death; but it is said, some nuns confessed he was privately dispatched in the night, for his testifying against the idolatry of their religion. Perrot lay there sometime longer. Sewel represents him as a man of great natural parts; but Thomas Elwood as not very unfit for the prison in which he was confined, because during his confinement he writ some epistles, to be printed in England, in such an affected fantastical stile as bespoke him scarce found in mind.

At length, through the solicitation of friends to some person of note and interest there, he was released, and returned to England. If he was elevated with spiritual pride and vain conceit before he went abroad, the report of his great sufferings, joined with a great appearance of sanctity, gaining him the compassionate affection and esteem of many friends, his imaginary consequence and exaltedness of mind was encreased to that degree, that he thought himself farther enlightened than George Fox, and the rest of his friends, and as an evidence thereof maintained that the custom of putting off their hats in joining in public prayer, was only a piece of formality and custom of the world, which ought not to be practised without an immediate motion thereto. That regard, which the exaggerated report of his sufferings had

K k 2

procured

<sup>a</sup> *Sewel*, p. 290.

CHAP. procured him, and the fondness for novelties natural to many, attached a considerable number of adherents to him, to the introducing confusion and disorder in worship. The next extravagance he adopted, was to let his beard grow, in which he was followed by several of his partisans. George Fox and the principal body of friends, foreseeing the danger of drawing off the mind from a proper attention to the necessary work of inward sanctification, into jangling and contention about outward observations of little importance, exerted their endeavours to prevent the spreading of the deception, which they could not effectually do for some years; till Perrot manifested more plainly the error of his spirit, and depravity of his heart, by the instability and enormity of his conduct. He went to America, and there his airy unstable notions led him into manifest sensualities and fleshly liberties, fantastically putting on gaudy apparel, and wearing a sword; and under the pretence of being above forms, went so far at last, as to reckon meeting for worship a form; and by his example and doctrine led many to forsake the assembling themselves together, as we shall have occasion more particularly to specify, when we come to treat of the state of this society in America, where having obtained some post under the government, he who had before professed that Christ had forbidden all swearing, is reported to have distinguished himself as a most rigorous exacter of oaths.

About the time that George Fox was excited to establish an orderly discipline in the society, he felt a warm impression of duty on his mind to appoint a meeting in London with those who had been seduced by the said Perrot into a separation from the society, to endeavour to recover them

to

to a sound understanding, and restore them to C H A P. that unity of the body, which they had broken (in part at least) by their deviation; and through the divine blessing and assistance attending his and his friends labour of love, they were generally recovered, acknowledged their error, and returned into the unity of the society; whereby an end was put to this separation in England.

It was with the commencement of this year 1662. that the aforementioned act against the Quakers came in force, and the same hostile spirit that dictated the framing and passing it, discovered itself in the execution. Commencement of executing the act.

One Philip Millar appears to be the first that molested them in London; who, although vested with no office or legal authority, without any order or warrant, came to the meeting in John's-street, with a rabble of people attending him, and having a cane in his hand, commanded the attendant rabble to seize whom he pleased: He then applied to the constable, and with menaces obliged him to go with him: Of those he had ordered to be seized he selected five, and had them carried before a justice, who committed them to prison. Some days after he came again to the same meeting place, and because the persons assembled would not depart at his command, he struck several of them with his cane, and then charged the constable, whom he had brought with him, with as many of them as he thought proper, amongst whom was John Crook, who before his conviction had been a justice of peace; they being taken before a justice, he took their words to come to him next morning, which they did, when he ordered them to appear before the justices, then sitting at Hicks's-hall, who committed nine of them to Newgate.

Rude and illegal behaviour of Ph. Millar.

They

CHAP. Thus we see the apprehension of those of this  
 v. society, who appeared at the house of commons,  
 1662. against this law, that, if passed into an act, rude  
 and unprincipled persons might take occasion to  
 abuse them beyond law, was not visionary; and  
 Remark. of such-like illegal treatment we meet with nume-  
 rous instances. Next let us take a view what satis-  
 faction they received for their false imprisonment,  
 as a specimen of the kind of justice dispensed in  
 this reign.

Trial of John Crook and others. John Crook and others being brought before the justices at Hick's-hall, and on their examination pointing out the illegality of their apprehension without warrant, and the proceedings there-upon, were notwithstanding committed to prison. An indictment was drawn up against them, upon the late act against Quakers; after which they were removed to Newgate in order to their trial at the Old Bailey. On the 25th of the month called June, three of them were selected to begin with, viz. John Crook, termed gentleman, Isaac Grey, physician, and John Bolton, goldsmith, men of property and character, who notwithstanding, as the first symptom of the disposition of the court, were now ranked with the vilest criminals, being thrust into the baledock amongst felons and murderers; from whence John Crook being called to the bar, instead of being charged with any crime, or any indictment upon the late act, it seems a surer and severer method of crimination had been concerted. The judge began with the following question:

Not pro-  
cuted on the  
late act.

Judge. When did you take the oath of allegiance?

John Crook. I have been six weeks in prison, and am I now called to accuse myself? which you ought

ought not to put me upon. Nemo debet seipsum <sup>C H A P.</sup> accusare. I am an Englishman, and by the law <sup>V.</sup> of England I ought not to be taken or imprisoned, nor disseized of my freehold, nor called in question, nor put to answer, but according to the law of the land. I stand here at this bar as a delinquent, and do desire that my accuser may be brought forth, and then I shall answer to my charge, if any I be guilty of.

*Judge.* You are here demanded to take the oath of allegiance, and when you have done that, <sup>Required to take an oath.</sup> you shall be heard about the other, for we have power to tender it to any man.

*John Crook.* Not to me upon this occasion, in this place, for I am brought hither as an offender already, and not to be made an offender here, or be obliged to criminate myself. I challenge the benefits of the laws of England; for by them is a better inheritance derived to me as an Englishman, than that which I received from my parents; for by the former the latter is secured: This the 29th chapter of magna charta, the petition of right of Car. I. and other good laws of England have confirmed; therefore, in claiming the benefit of them, I demand no more than my right. And you that are judges on the bench ought to be my council, and not my accusers, but to instruct me in the benefit of the laws, that I may not, through ignorance, lose any advantage, which the laws of my country afford me, as an Englishman.

*C. Judge.* We sit here to do justice, and are upon our oaths \*; and we are to tell you what is law,

\* This chief judge would have done well seriously to consider, while he was preparing and predetermined to punish honest

C H A P. law, and not you us : Therefore, sirrah, you are  
v. too bold.

*John Crook.* Sirrah is not a word for a judge:  
1662. I am no felon, neither ought you to menace the prisoner at the bar. For I stand here as arraigned for my life and liberty, and the preservation of my wife and children and outward estate : Therefore I have a right to be fully heard, what I can say in my own defence, according to law ; and I hope the court will bear with me, if I take the freedom to assert my liberty as an Englishman and a christian ; if I speak loud, it is from zeal for the truth ; and mine innocency makes me bold. Let me see my accuser, that I may know for what cause I have been six weeks imprisoned, and do not put me to accuse myself by asking me questions. Let my accuser come forth, or else discharge me by proclamation, as you ought to do.

*Judge Twisden.* We take no notice of your being here, otherwise than as of a straggler, or as of any other person, or of the people that are here this day ; for we may tender the oath to any man.

nest men, merely for a religious scruple to take an oath, by the severest law he could take hold of ; and which without any real occasion he put to them, because he knew for conscience-sake they could not take it, in order to criminate them, and put it out of their power to seek justice for their false imprisonment, if they had been so inclined : Whether was a greater enormity to refuse taking an oath, or to take oaths, and afterwards pay no regard to the obligation thereof ? I suppose that taken by a judge must be to do justice, without favour or affection, enmity or ill-will, without respect of persons ; which, how far this was regarded in this trial, let the reader judge. Judge's Oath,  
—“ You shall do equal law and execution of right to all his  
“ subjects, rich and poor, without having regard to any per-  
“ son.”

man. This was seconded by another judge: And c H A P. the chief judge, in the process of the trial, ex-  
pressed himself thus: We look not upon what  
you are here for; but finding you here, we ten-  
der you the oath.

1662.

The judges persisting in the oath being admi-  
nistered, John Crook enquired by what law they  
had power to tender it? and was answered by the  
third of King James; John Crook demurring, de-  
sired the statute might be read, that it might ap-  
pear upon what occasion, and against whom it  
was made, but this would not be admitted, and  
his objection was over-ruled.

The prisoners were remanded to prison, and <sup>2d. day.</sup>  
brought into court again next day, when they  
were demanded again to take the oath; but still  
insisting on the plea that they ought to be first  
tried and convicted upon the cause of their im-  
prisonment, the judge was provoked to transgres-  
s the bounds of decency so far, as to call John Crook  
a saucy and impudent fellow.

In the afternoon of the same day they were  
again brought to the bar, and a new indictment  
for refusing to take the oath of allegiance having  
been drawn up, they were required to plead to it,  
guilty, or not guilty; to which objecting, as not  
being satisfied whether they ought to plead to a cre-  
ated offence, and thereby acquiesce in the intro-  
duction of a precedent of an unusual proceeding in  
courts of judicature, and dangerous to the liberty  
of the subject; as also whether their pleading  
would not deprive them of the benefit of the law,  
and quashing the indictment, or making excep-  
tions against it; and being informed it would  
not, they pleaded in such form as their scrupu-  
lous consciences would permit, that they were  
not

**C H A P.** not guilty of what was false in the indictment, which was the substance thereof; which at last was accepted.

**V.**  
**1662.**

**3d day's trial.**

**First jury discharged, and a new jury picked for their trial.**

**The prisoners move for time to traverse the indictment, and are refused.**

Next day being brought to their trial, the jury, who had been present, and witnesses of the previous proceedings, were discharged; a new jury was empanelled (as was said) on purpose for their trial. In this jury were divers soldiers, some of whom had been actually concerned in offering illegal violence to this society, by haling some out of their meetings or out of their houses. So that they had no better quarter to expect from their jury than their judges; the indictment being read, they moved to have the trial put off till next quarter sessions, to traverse the indictment, it being long and in Latin, and like to be a precedent, and that having no copy of the indictment till that morning, and then suddenly hurried down to the sessions, they were neither allowed time to advise with counsel, nor to be prepared (as to matter of law) to plead in their own defence. To this reasonable request the judge replied, We have given you time enough, and you shall have no more, for we will try you at this time, therefore swear the jury. The prisoners remonstrating against the swearing of the jury till this point was properly discussed, and they were heard in their own defence, the court fell into confusion, during which the prisoners were hurried about in consequence of the confused orders of the court to the officers; some crying, take them away; others, stay, let them alone; some to put them in the bale-dock; others within the farthest bar, whither they were thrust accordingly: during this confusion and uproar some cried, go on to swear the jury, which the crier seemed to be about; but

but such was the tumult in court and distance of ~~C H A P.~~  
 the prisoners, that they could not distinctly tell v.  
 what was doing : during the confusion also the ~~the~~  
 evidence (they supposed) was given, that they re- 1662.  
 fused to take the oath, which they had not posi- The jury  
 tively done : These arbitrary proceedings occa- sworn and  
 sioning the prisoners, with just reason, to com- evidence  
 plain ; the executioner, as often as they attempt- given out of  
 ed to speak, was ordered to stop their mouths, hearing of  
 which he repeatedly did with a dirty cloth ; and the prison-  
 having a gag in his hand, endeavoured to gag Threatened  
 John Crook and others. Upon this they cried to be gag-  
 out, Will you not give us leave to speak ? we ged.  
 except against some of the jury, as being our ene-  
 mies, and of those who by force commanded us  
 to be pulled out of our meetings, and carried us  
 to prison without warrant or legal process ; and  
 must these be our judges ? we except against  
 them.

Judge. It is too late now, you should have done it before they had been sworn jurymen. Jury, go together, that which you have to find is, whether they have refused to take the oath, which hath been sworn before you that they did : you need not go from the bar. The like said the recorder and others, the confusion and noise continuing, and several speaking together.

The prisoners demanded their privilege to make their defence before the jury brought in their verdict, but this was refused them, the chief judge having remarked, that " if the Quakers had liberty to speak, they would make themselves famous, and their judges odious ;" instead of guarding the subjects rights, they had recourse to their usual exclamation, " Stop their mouths, executioner," which he did with his dirty cloth, as  
 The prisoners demand to be heard, refused.

CHAP. as before. Yet when the jury was ordered to give in their verdict, John Crook took the opportunity to express himself finally thus, " Let me have liberty first to speak, it is but few words, and I hope I shall do it with what brevity and pertinency my understanding will give me leave, and the occasion requires ; it is to the point of these two heads, *matter of law, and matter of conscience.* To matter of law I have this to say, the statute by which you proceed against us was made against papists, occasioned by the gun-powder plot, and is entitled, for the better discovery and suppressing of popish recusants ; but they have liberty, and we are destroyed, what in you lies," (this pinch produced an interruption from the court) " As to conscience, I have something to say, it is a tender thing, and we have known what it is to offend it ; and therefore we dare not break Christ's command, who said, *swear not at all;* as also the apostle James's, *above all things, my brethren, swear not.*" Interrupted again with executioner, stop his mouth." Then the judge called to hear the jury, who said something which the prisoners could not hear, but was supposed to be giving in the verdict according to the judges' orders, for they were fit for the purpose, having seemingly agreed upon their verdict, before they heard the prisoner's defence.

Then silence being proclaimed, the recorder taking a paper in his hand, read to the following purpose, viz.

Sentence of premonition. " The jury for the king do find that John Crook, John Bolton, and Isaac Grey, are guilty of refusing to take the oath of allegiance, for which you do incur a premonition, which is the

“ the forfeiture of all your real estates during C H A P.  
“ life, and your personal estates for ever, and V.  
“ you to be out of the king’s protection, and to  
“ be imprisoned during his pleasure. And this  
“ is your sentence.” John Crook replied, “ We  
“ are still under God’s protection.”

1662.

The Court was adjourned, and the prisoners remanded to Newgate.

Such a mockery of justice as this trial exhibits, Remark.  
I trust, for the reputation and honour of the nation, our history affords few or no instances at this day. It demonstrates, beyond the power of all apologies to palliate, that the government of England at this æra, was as arbitrary to the dissenters in general, and particularly the quakers, as any other absolute government whatsoever. We are here presented with an instance of natural-born subjects, who had violated no duty, committed no crime, contrived no sedition, neither broken the peace, nor disturbed the government, deprived of their birth-right in the charters of the Englishman’s liberty, confirmed by the most binding ratifications, as the perpetual and inviolable privileges of the people of England. Magna charta and the petition of rights infringed;—subjects illegally imprisoned: brought to trial, and no crime charged upon them: The court of judicature turned into an inquisition to make them criminate themselves, and to deprive them of the means of demanding legal satisfaction for injury sustained: Persons of property abused, not allowed to speak in their own defence; stripped at once of their personal liberty and all their property; time to traverse the indictment till the next sessions refused men upon trial for their liberty and property, although ordinarily granted in

CHAP. V.  
1662.

in case of trespass to the value of 5s. the errors whereof were sufficient to quash it: Just exceptions to jurymen evaded by artifice. And all this only because they could not reverence the devices of bishops and convocations as gospel, or blindly devote themselves to the instructions of a priesthood, who were, for the major part, themselves more devoted to the court, to a party, and to their own interest and preferment, than to the pure ministry of the gospel; and because they durst not disobey the command of Christ.

**Prisoners' estates seized.**

**John Crook draws up a narrative of the trial.**

Immediately after the aforesaid unjust and severe sentence was passed, the prisoners' estates were seized on. During their imprisonment, John Crook drew up a narrative of their trial, and committed it to the press, that the king and the nation might not be ignorant of the measures now pursued, and their tendency to despotism and the ruin of the subject; which narrative is preserved at length in Sewel's History, p. 358, &c. and Besse's Collection of Sufferings, p. 369, &c. from which the foregoing abridged account is abstracted. On the 23d of the following month (as was supposed by order from the king) they were set at liberty by the jailer; but two days afterward, John Bolton and Isaac Grey were taken again by the jailer's servants, and carried back to prison; (John Crook being gone to the country and not to be found) how long they were detained there, or how or when discharged, we have no account.

**Prisoners set at liberty.**

It was one argument advanced by George Whitehead, in his pleading against the late act, that as there were divers laws before, whereby the Quakers were brought under grievous sufferings, as this particularly of 3. Jac. for the oath of

of allegiance, &c. and that therefore to make a C H A P new law, particularly pointed at them on that account, was not only superfluous, but adding grievance to grievance upon a body of people already under heavy oppression, against whom nothing worthy of suffering had been proved. And seeing in the first succeeding instance, the new law was not enforced; but an old law made against popish recusants, and them only, perverted to the punishment of innocent men, while those against whom it was made, were left unmolested and encouraged. It seems the legislature and ministers of the law had no meaning by new laws to supersede the old, or let them lie dormant; but to keep them all in force, in order to persecute in the severest manner all ranks of this people.

Such was the disposition of those who had the power in their hands at this time, the bishops, the legislature, judges, justices, ecclesiasticks and laicks to extirpate this society; that under the pressure of afflictions and calamities the most feelingly distressing to mankind, and the apprehension of more to come, there seemed for them no human help; yet trusting in that divine Being, for the serving and obeying of whom in the sincerity of their hearts, they were persecuted, and supported through all by the testimony of an approving conscience, they firmly bore the utmost malice of their persecutors without shrinking; by their constancy they even wearied them out, and at last by patient suffering attained quietude; but at present they were only at the beginning of sorrows; they had many close trials of their faith, and a long fight of afflictions to sustain, before their patience could get the better of the resentments and virulence of their adversaries.

Neither

*Reflection  
on the hard-  
ships attend-  
ing this so-  
ciety, and  
their con-  
stancy un-  
der them.*

1662.

CHAP.  
V.  
1662.

Neither is this a singular case, but seems, on account of the severity of the penalty, a preconcerted mode of proceeding at present and several years after, frequently adopted against such of this body as appeared most considerable for their services or estates, contrary to equity or reasonable construction of law, to apply a partial law for the better discovery of popish recusants, in consequence of a desperate enterprize concerted by some of that class only, at the distance of two reigns<sup>d</sup>, to the punishment of men the most remote from that denomination, and who neither had, nor, I believe, were even suspected to have any concern in any plot whatever.

<sup>e</sup> In the next month at the assizes of Worcester, Robert Smith was likewise indicted for refusing to take the oath of allegiance, having been imprisoned in like manner with those before mentioned; and when he was brought to the bar, demanded also the cause of his imprisonment for five or six weeks, in reply to the judge's enquiry, "When did you take the oath of allegiance?" The judge's answer was, "I meddle not with your imprisonment, but finding you here, I tender you the oath of allegiance; will you take it or no? I tell you the danger that will follow: You will incur a premunire, and forfeit your estate to the King."

*R. Smith.* Who was that law made for, the papists or us?

*Judge.* For both.

*R. Smith.* Why then is it not tendered to them, as well as us?

*Judge.* They have taken it already.

*R. Smith.*

<sup>d</sup> Beff.

<sup>e</sup> Beff.

Trial of  
Robert  
Smith at  
Worcester  
for refusing  
to take the  
oath of al-  
legiance.

R. Smith. Suppose I find some papists, or C H A P.  
popishly affected, on the bench, shall it be done V.  
to them ?

1662.

Judge. They have done it already.

R. Smith. Let us and the people see, that we may be satisfied.

Judge. Will you take the oath or not? Otherwise we will record your refusal, and call you again to-morrow, and on your second refusal record it also, and pass sentence of premunire upon you.—Accordingly the next day the like sentence was passed upon him, as J. Crook and companions, to which he replied, “The Lord gives, him. “ and if he permits to take away, the will of the “ Lord be done.”

Thus with christian meekness and patient resignation to the divine will, R. Smith received the severe sentence of premunire, under which he lay close confined in prison near ten years. About three days after sentence given, the sheriff made a seizure of his personal estate for the king, and took an inventory of the same to the minutest article.

Thomas Stordy being at Carlisle assizes, went to visit some of his friends in prison there, where he was illegally detained by the jailer; and the next day he, with Stephen Pearson, then a prisoner, was taken to the sessions' house, where the oath of allegiance was tendered to them, which they refusing, were sent back to jail among the felons. Next day they were indicted on the aforesaid statute of 3. Jac. and had the sentence of premunire past upon them. Soon after the sheriff seized their corn, cattle and other goods, and proclaimed a publick sale of them, at which they were sold far below the value, because few

He and S.  
Pearson in-  
dicted on  
the stat-  
ute of  
3. Jac. and  
premu-  
nir ed.

CHAP. cared to buy them, as esteeming them no better  
 V.  
 ~~~~~  
 1662. than plunder: However, they were disposed of  
 and carried away, without any regard to the pri-  
 soners or their families; nor would the sheriff,  
 upon application, even allow any thing to the  
 poor labourers, who had been employed in ga-  
 thering in the corn, and the price of whose labour  
 lay therein, as their employers, now plundered  
 of their all, were disabled from paying them.  
 Under this hard sentence, they were continued  
 close prisoners several years, enduring their heavy  
 suffering with exemplary patience, being under  
 their afflictions supported by the testimony of a  
 good conscience, in their obedience to the pre-  
 cept of Christ, *Swear not at all.*

John King  
 and others  
 appearing  
 to answer a  
 process for  
 not attend-  
 ing the na-  
 tional wor-  
 ship, are  
 prosecuted  
 and premu-  
 nired on  
 the said  
 statute.

\* At the quarter sessions at Hertford in October  
 this year, John King, Richard Thomas, Abra-  
 ham Rutt and Henry Sweeting, appeared to an-  
 swer a process against them for absence from the  
 national worship, when one of the justices, a  
 counsellor, made an invective against the Quakers  
 and their meetings, as dangerous and formid-  
 able, whereupon the bench let the first process  
 stop, and tendered them the oath of allegiance  
 on the first day of the sessions, giving them time  
 till next morning to consider whether they would  
 take it or not; telling them, that if they refused  
 they would incur a premunire. Next morning  
 they appeared again, and refusing to take it, they  
 were immediately indicted, found guilty, and had  
 sentence of premunire passed upon them.—Un-  
 der this cruel sentence they were returned to pri-  
 son, and close confined during a sharp winter,  
 whereby their health was much impaired. At  
 the

\* Besse.

the same sessions an order was issued to the Sheriff to seize all the lands, tenements, goods and chattels of the prisoners; the execution of which order was prevented by timely application to the King, and the prisoners, after thirty-one weeks confinement, were released by the King's warrant.

V.  
1662.

Their lands  
&c. seized,  
but on ap-  
plication to  
the King  
restored,  
and their  
liberty  
also.

In Sussex, Ambrose Rigge was committed to prison, indicted next assizes, tried immediately, and sentence of premunire passed upon him, by which he was adjudged to lose all his lands and tenements during life, his goods and chattels for ever, and suffer imprisonment during the King's pleasure. Upon that sentence he was kept in prison ten years and four months.

Ambrose  
Rigge.

To recite all the hard and illicit treatment this society met with by the misapplication of this law, and how many of them suffered the loss of all their substance, personal liberty and protection of law, by premunires during the present year, would carry me far beyond my bounds, and might disgust the reader in a tedious detail of similar cases. But the treatment of Thomas Goodyear and Benjamin Staples at the quarter sessions at Oxford in the preceding year demands particular notice. After receiving the sentence of premunire on the like account, Thomas Goodyear, who was brought like a common malefactor with bolts on his legs, asking the court, "Whether the jailer had orders to fetter him?" was answered, "the jailer may do as he will with you, for you are out of the King's protection." The jailer, encouraged in obduracy (habitual, it is probable, in him) by the example of his superiors, when he brought them back to prison, told the other prisoners, "that if they

Thomas  
Goodyear  
and Benja-  
min Staples.

**C H A P.** " wanted clothes, they might take theirs off their backs, for they can have no law against you :" **v.** But one of the prisoners humanely answered, **1662.** *He would rather go naked than strip honest men of their clothes*, who were stripped of all they had beside.

---

## C H A P. VI.

Several tried on the *Act 35 Q. Elizabeth*, in order to Banishment on pain of death.—George Fox presents an *Address to the King*, informing him of the Sufferings of his Friends.—Five hundred imprisoned in London, of whom many died.—Remarkable Petition to the Mayor.—Great Abuses of the Soldiers and Trained Bands.—Particularly at the Bull and Mouth.—Sessions at the Old Baily.—General Release of Prisoners by Order of the King.—Persecution continued.—Wheeler-street Meeting broken up.—The Assembly at Bull and Mouth shamefully abused, whereby many are grievously wounded, and one [John Trowell] dies of his Wounds. The Coroner's Inquest being empannelled to enquire into the Cause of his Death, decline bringing in a Verdict.—An Account of this Murder presented to the King.—And to the Lord Mayor (so called)—The Author of the Narrative committed to Newgate.

**C H A P.** **VI.** **W**HAT measures more arbitrary and inhuman could the utmost malice of man invent, short of capital punishment, than those now vainly pursued to exterminate this body of people. Nay, it may be a question whether at once taking away

away their lives had not been a lighter punishment, than condemning men of repute, who had been inured to a comfortable way of living, on competent estates or by laudable industry, to languish out their days in noisome jails ; robbed of their property ; they and their families reduced to want ; deprived of all company, but the refuse of mankind, and of every thing that makes life tolerable, except the testimony of a good conscience, which their persecutor's power could not reach.

Yet as if all this were not sufficient to gratify the ill will of their enemies, it was even attempted at this time to bring their lives into danger. As we have just described the mode adopted for making men offenders against the first part of the late act, viz. the case of oaths, I proceed to the first trial I meet with upon the second part thereof, the attendance of their religious assemblies. These were not tried upon the late act, but upon that of 35 Elizabeth, as the more severe, and the severest they could lay hold of, because it gave power to proceed to banishment and to endanger life at once ; whereas by the latter they could not have that power till the third offence.

Several persons, taken from their religious meetings and committed to the White-Lyon prison, Southwark, after about nine weeks imprisonment, were brought to their trial before Richard Onslow, president of the sessions and others, and arraigned upon the following indictment.

“ The jurors for our lord the King do present upon their oath, that Arthur Fisher, late of the parish of St. Olave in the borough of Southwark in the county of Surry, yeoman ; “ Nathaniel

Several tried upon the act of 35 Eliz. in order to banishment on pain of death.

CHAP. " Nathaniel Robinson of the same, yeoman ;  
VI. " John Chandler of the same yeoman, and others,  
~~~~ " being wicked, dangerous and seditious secta-  
1662. " ries, and disloyal persons, and above the age  
" of sixteen years, who, on the 29th day of  
" June in the year of our Lord Charles the se-  
" cond, by the grace of God, King of England,  
" Scotland, France and Ireland, &c. the four-  
" teenth, have obstinately refused ; and every  
" one of them hath obstinately refused to repair  
" unto some church, chapel, or usual place of  
" common prayer, according to the laws and  
" statutes of this kingdom of England, in the  
" like case set forth and provided, after forty  
" days next after the end of the session of par-  
" liament begun and holden at Westminster on  
" the 19th day of February in the year of our  
" Lady Elizabeth late Queen of England, the  
" thirty fifth, and there continued until the disso-  
" lution of the same, being the tenth day of  
" April in the 35th year above said, to wit, on  
" the 3d day of August in the year of the reign  
" of the said Charles King of England the four-  
" teenth abovesaid in the parish of St. Olave  
" aforesaid, in the borough of Southwark afore-  
" said, in the county aforesaid ; of themselves  
" did voluntarily and unlawfully join in and  
" were present at an unlawful assembly, con-  
" venticle and meeting at the said parish of St.  
" Olave in the county aforesaid, under colour  
" and pretence of the exercise of religion, against  
" the laws and statutes of this kingdom of Eng-  
" land, in contempt of our said Lord the King  
" that now is, his laws and to the evil and dan-  
" gerous example of all others in the like case,  
" offending against the peace of our said Lord  
" the King that now is, his crown and dignity,  
" and

" and contrary to the form of the statute in the C H A P.  
" same case set forth and provided."

VI.

1662.

The indictment being read, the prisoners desired to be tried by the late act of parliament against conventicles; but were answered they might try them by what law they would, that was in force. Then the prisoners desired the act they were to be tried by might be read, viz. that of 35 of Elizabeth, which was done only in part. They observing, in regard thereto, that it was made in times of ignorance, whilst the principles of the reformation, and of civil and religious rights, were not yet well understood, and that therefore they accounted themselves unjustly dealt with, in having obsolete laws that had been long suffered to lie dormant, revived for the mere purpose of subjecting them to the heaviest punishment that could be devised. The answer they received was a requisition to plead to the indictment, and some not being hasty to answer, were haled out of court to prison, as taken pro confessis. The rest, being twenty in number, pleaded not guilty. The jury was called over, and they excepted against two, one of which was set aside, having openly expressed his ill-will towards the Quakers: the witnesses testified at most that in such a place they took such persons, whose names were specified in writing. In their defence against the facts charged in the indictment, they asserted, that whereas they were accused of being wicked, dangerous and seditious sectaries, that was not true; for they were neither wicked nor seditious, but such as endeavoured to lead a *peaceable and quiet life in godliness and honesty*. For the truth whereof they durst appeal to themselves. And the charge of

not

CHAP. VI.  
1662.

not coming to hear the common prayer was highly preposterous, as the service-book was not quite printed several weeks after the said 29th of June, and what crime could it be, not to go hear that which at that time, was not to be heard any where. The court was considerably embarrassed by this, and other pinching reasons advanced by the prisoners, some of whom were men of abilities and literature, to that degree that the judge was at a loss to answer them only by shifts and evasions. When the jury went out to consider of their verdict, one of them was heard to say, as they were going up, *Here is a deal to do indeed, to condemn a company of innocent men.*

After some time they returned, and brought in their verdict guilty in part, and not guilty in part; but this verdict would not be accepted; so being sent out again, prevailing upon one another, they soon returned and declared the prisoners guilty. Whereupon judge Onslow pronounced the following sentence: "That they should return to prison, and there continue three months without bail or mainprize, after which time, if they recanted not, they must abjure the realm, or be proceeded against as felons."

Just before passing the sentence, the judge signified there was a means to escape the penalty, viz. "submission;" that is, "to come to common prayer, and refrain their meetings." To which giving their reasons for the refusal of both, he said, "then you must abjure the land." It being remarked that *abjure* meant to *forswear*, one of the justices scoffingly added, "and you can't swear at all;" either barbarously sporting

sporting himself in other mens' misery, or wan- C H A P.  
tonly exulting in the prospect, that they must VI.  
of course incur the penalties of felony.

1662,

At a sessions at the same place on the 11th of November, thirteen more of the prisoners were brought to the bar, and indicted as before; five of them pleading not guilty, were tried, convicted and sentenced as the former; the other eight seeing the court so partial that a fair hearing could not be expected, refused to plead and were sent back to prison.

It hath been before remarked, that the instances of enforcing this law were not many, nor equally encouraged with other modes of prosecution, as the full enforcing thereof must terminate in public executions, and it is likely, the ministers and principal promoters of these severities did not chuse to incur the odium or the guilt of inflicting capital punishment merely for religion, as there had been few precedents since the reformation, except where some pretext of treason or sedition could be picked up to palliate the severity: Yet the justices and inferior magistrates, being most of them invested with authority on account of their bitterness against non-conformists, seemed disposed in some cases to put this statute fully in force, but for the intervention of higher authority. It was however kept alive, and repeated menaces thrown out of enforcing it in terrorem; but the proceedings thereon generally terminated in arbitrary imprisonment, frequently till a release came by proclamation or pardon; a punishment severe enough.

Such

**C H A P.** Such was the universality of party rage at this time against this people, that they were left unmolested in few or no parts of the nation.

**VI.**

**1662.** G. Fox presents an address to the King, informing him of the sufferings of his friends.

George Fox, in an address to the king, acquaints him that three thousand and sixty-eight of their friends had been imprisoned since his restoration; that their meetings were daily broken up by men with clubs and arms, their friends thrown into the water, \* and trampled under foot till the blood gushed out. Another narrative was printed, signed by twelve witnesses, relating that upwards of four thousand two hundred of those called Quakers, both men and women, were in prison, specifying the number in each county, and upon what account. Many of these had been grievously abused with beatings, tearing their clothes, and taking them away. Some put into such noisome prisons as were owned not fit for dogs. Some prisons so crowded that the prisoners had not room to sit down all together. In Cheshire sixty-eight persons were thus locked up in a small room. No age or sex found any commiseration from the ill-principled magistrates of this reign. Men of sixty, seventy or more years of age, were without pity or remorse subjected

\* About the 3d of October, 1660, a constable and others armed with pitchforks, bills, staves and such like weapons, entered a meeting at Steventon in Berkshire, pulled out Thomas Curtis and threw him into a pond, tearing his coat in pieces: With the like barbarity they used several others, sparing neither age nor sex. One of them was trodden on and kept down in the water till some of their own company cried out, *you'll drown the man.* After which they drove the innocent people along the highway, inhumanly abusing and bemiring them. This abuse was said to be given them at the instigation of a drunken priest, who being told, *that his weapons ought to be spiritual,* replied that *he would fight the Quakers with such weapons as he had.*

jected to all the rigours of such imprisonments C H A P. VI.  
under the infirmities of a natural decline ; many times they were forced to lie on the cold ground, without being permitted the use of straw, and kept many days without victuals. No wonder that many grew sick and died by such barbarous imprisonments as these. 1662.

In London and its suburbs were no fewer than five hundred imprisoned at this time, and some in such narrow holes that every person had scarcely convenient room to lie down ; and the felons were suffered to rob them of their clothes and money. In consequence many grew sick, and some died. Amongst them were many poor men, whose families were exposed to want, their customers lost and their trades ruined ; those multiplied hardships, which moved little or no compassion in magistrates, who seem steeled against all the feelings of men, were so sensibly felt with true brotherly affection and sympathy by several of their fellow-members, that about thirty of them, who were at liberty, presented a petition to the mayor and sheriffs of London, offering themselves, if no other means of relief could be found, to lie in prison instead of the sick and the poorest of the prisoners, that they might have liberty to go about their necessary occasions for a few weeks to retrieve their business, and rescue themselves and families from impending ruin ; which though not so legal as to be accepted, yet demonstrates the affection of those that made the offer, and conveyed to the magistrates such a lively representation of the disastrous consequences of their merciless usage, as must have inclined men, who had the least remains of humanity left, to mitigate the severity

Five hundred imprisoned in London, of whom many died.

Petition to the mayor.

C H A P. rity of their proceedings, but with the men now  
VI. in authority it had no such effect.

1662. Those who were left at liberty had but a very precarious enjoyment thereof, being daily in danger of following their friends to prison for the same cause, keeping up their religious assemblies from a religious persuasion of duty to their Maker; yet whilst they were at liberty, they were not suffered to be at ease, the soldiers and trained-bands, by the encouragement of the Great abuses of the magistracy, were let loose upon them, to beat, soldiers and to bruise, to wound them nigh unto, and even quite unto death; so that in the city of London, and divers other parts, the treatment of this people bore more the appearance of the French dragoonings of those called Hugonots, than the metropolis of England, entitled to the privilege of a constitution limited to legal rule; and looks as if, by accumulated abuses, they designed to provoke them to some act of resistance, which might furnish a pretence for proceeding against them as rioters and seditious, which when they could not do, they termed their peaceable meetings riots, and thereupon indicted and punished the attenders as such.

Particularly at the Bull and Mouth. The meeting, distinguished by the name of Bull and Mouth, being near the center of the city, was particularly exposed to the tumultuous intrusions of these disturbers of the peace (for they were employed for no other purpose, by magistrates who were bound by their office and oaths to preserve it.) To this meeting the soldiers came several first days successively, with muskets, lighted matches, pikes and halberts, conducted by a military officer, with his sword drawn in one hand and a cane in the other; they

they usually made their entrance with violent C H A P.  
rushing and uproar to terrify the assembly, com- VI.  
manding the people assembled to be gone ; which  
when they were not hasty to do, as believing  
themselves in the way of their duty, and those  
who gave the command invested with no legal  
authority ; then they began the shameful attack  
with their canes and clubs upon the unresisting  
people, unmanfully beating women as well as  
men, for they spared no age nor sex, but laid  
on their blows with great force, not only wound-  
ing their bodies with their blows, but their ears  
with scoffs, menaces, oaths and imprecations,  
and threatening *to fire at them* ; this treatment  
they continued at one time about two hours,  
striking them with swords, staves and the buts  
of their muskets, and haling them out of doors ;  
by such violence many were grievously wounded,  
some fainted away, and some survived it but a  
short time.

When they had wearied themselves by these  
acts of violence, they generally added the  
preacher, if they found one, and as many of the  
hearers as they thought fit, to the number already  
imprisoned.

On the 12th, 13th and 14th days of the Sessions at  
month called August, the sessions were held again the Old  
at the Old Bailey, to which, numbers of the Bailey.  
Quakers were brought as malefactors through the  
streets, sometimes twelve sometimes twenty in a  
company. This seemed to turn the tide of the pub-  
lic temper into compassion, the people exclaim-  
ing as they passed along, “ Ah ! what woeful days  
“ are these ! what pity it is that such honest  
“ people with such good countenances should  
“ be haled up and down to courts and prissons ? ”

Their

**C H A P.** Their trials were conducted in the accustomed  
 VI.  
1662. manner ; the bench and jury prepared to convict them, the witnesses, those men who ought to have been substituted in their places for breach of the peace, being mostly the officers who had commanded the party that had abused them, called as witnesses against the very persons whom themselves also had stricken and dragged out of their meetings with violence : it was remarked that these witnesses hesitated, and even contradicted themselves : one being asked by the judge, “ Are you certain these are the persons you took at that meeting,” replied, “ My lord, I don’t know the faces of the men, but these mens’ names I have in a note here.” Yet such was the temper of the court and of the jury, that this defective evidence was accepted as sufficient to convict them ; upon which they were sentenced in fines, some one hundred marks, some twenty pounds, and others in less sums, and committed again till they should pay the fines. Against several no evidence appeared, yet they were not discharged, but sent back to prison with the rest.

General re-  
lease of pri-  
soners.

It was not long however before they met with an unexpected release, for before the end of the month the King was pleased to grant them a general amnesty, by an order to the mayor, to the following purport : “ That whereas divers persons going under the name of Quakers, and other names of separation, were imprisoned for being at unlawful meetings, yet did profess all obedience to him, and it was hoped that for the time to come some of the said people would conform themselves ; and upon the occasion of his royal consort’s coming

“ ing to his palace at Whitehall, he would have C H A P.  
 “ them discharge and enlarge all the said people VI.  
 “ out of the jails of London and Middlesex, ex-  
 “ cepting such as had been indicted for refusing  
 “ the oaths of allegiance, or were ringleaders or  
 “ preachers among them.”

1662.

In pursuance of this order all that had been committed by Sir Richard Brown and others were released, and the jails of London and Middlesex almost entirely cleared of Quakers, a few only excepted; but in a short time were filled again, for the King's mandate for their release gave little or no interruption to the persecuting measures carried on against them. Their meetings continued to be disturbed in like manner as is before related, even with an additional degree of violence.

Persecution continued.

The very next day after the publication of the King's letter the meeting at Wheeler-street was broken up. <sup>Wheeler-street meeting broken up.</sup> nine persons taken and sent to New-prison, whence after a detention of twelve days they were released. The same day Sir Richard Brown, in company with some military officers, meeting a person in the street going about his lawful occasions, who had been discharged from Newgate the day before by the King's letter, called out, *There's a Quaker, take him up and carry him to the counter,* which by his attendants was accordingly done; and he, thus arbitrarily committed, was detained for some time.

On the last day of the month called August, when the meeting at Bull and Mouth was near breaking up, Major-general Brown with a party of men entered the meeting-house, with their swords drawn, in a manner rude and terrifying beyond

The assembly at the Bull and Mouth shamefully abused.

CHAP. beyond expression, and ordering *the doors to be made fast*, fell upon the assembly with their swords and cudgels in such an unmerciful and unmanly manner, without regard to age or sex, cutting, bruising and levelling those before them, as carried an appearance of open hostility, beyond what had ever been seen in a time of peace. Six or eight together being knocked down were dragged out, and lay in the kennels senseless, helpless, and seemingly half dead with the wounds and bruises they had received, their blood lying visible in the streets, so that the passengers and spectators, compassionating this abuse of unoffending people, cried out, Shame upon the perpetrators, that such a resemblance of massacre should be committed in the streets of London ; some of whom, for their compassionate expressions, felt their share of the like treatment. The soldiers being asked, why they could be so cruel to their neighbours ? One of them answered, Nay, we are more merciful than we ought to be, for we have orders to kill ; and that his musquet was double charged, as most of those of the party were to his knowledge\*.

In consequence of this barbarous treatment several were ready to faint through loss of blood ; many

\* This looks as if some of the persecutors had suffered their spirits to be imbibed to so intemperate a degree as to thirst for blood, as intending by this cruel usage to provoke some of this body to some act of resistance, and then make it a pretext for carnage and massacre. But I own myself at a loss to conceive what motive (except insatiable malice) any could have even to meditate such cruelty, which no attempts of this body, nor any security to government gave the least shadow of occasion for.

many so disabled as to keep their beds some time ; one man so wounded in the head that his brains were said to be visible, and being immediately taken to a surgeon, his life was thought to be in the utmost danger ; and one John Trowel actually dying by the wounds and bruises he received there, it was judged expedient that his dead body should be conveyed to the meeting room at Bull and Mouth, where he received the violence which occasioned his death, for public inspection. The coroner being called, empanelled a jury of the neighbours, and gave them the usual charge, to make true enquiry, and present upon their oaths what they found to be the cause of his death. The jury accordingly viewed the body, with a surgeon or two attending them. It was evident the man was murdered by some or other of the trained bands ; but as in the confused crowd the particular man who murdered him could not be pointed out, the jury desired his friends to inter the corps, and departed without bringing in a verdict, alledging as their reason, that if they brought in a verdict of wilful murder, and the murderer could not be found, the city would be liable to a fine ; the verdict was therefore suspended, and the business dropped. An account of that day's barbarity and this person's murder was presented to the king by one of those called Quakers, to whom the king expressed, " I assure you it was not by my advice that any of your friends should be slain ; you must tell the magistrates of the city of it, and prosecute the law against them ;" but to what purpose, whilst the magistrates of the city and ministers of justice were ranking themselves

C H A P.  
VI.  
1662.

One man  
dies of his  
wounds.

The coro-  
ner's in-  
quest de-  
clines  
bringing in  
a verdict.

An account  
of the mur-  
der presen-  
ted to the  
King.

C H A P. in the number of their professed enemies. The  
VI.  
1662. mayor was by letter duly apprized of this trans-  
action ; but giving no redress, the said letter,  
and to the with a narrative of these grievous abuses, was  
mayor, printed and published, for which the author  
for which was committed to Newgate by Brown, for dis-  
the author persing scandalous papers, as he was pleased to  
was impri-  
foned. call them.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

---

I        N        D        E        X  
TO THE  
F I R S T V O L U M E.

---

A.

**A**BERDEEN, priests there alarmed at the convincement and loss of several of their hearers, p. 297.

Act called corporation act, and act of uniformity, passed, p. 469.

Act against Quakers, p. 499.

Acts of parliament (obsolete) enforced against the people called Quakers, p. 458, &c.

Albigenses, p. 24.

Aldam, Thomas, imprisoned, p. 129.—With A. Pearson visits the several jails to prove the number of friends in prison, p. 263.

Apology for persecution in New-England, p. 397, &c.

Audland, John, convinced, p. 112.—Travels to Bristol in company with John Camin, where they have large meetings, and many are convinced, p. 145.—The mob instigated to abuse them, p. 146.

Austin, Anne. See Mary Fisher.

B.

Baptists, account of them, p. 51. note, p. 398, &c.

Bennet, Gervas, commits Geo. Fox to Derby jail, p. 91.—Gives him and his friends the appellation of Quakers, p. 96.

Bewley, George, being taken up at Bridport, is arbitrarily whipped three several times, p. 232.

Birkhead,

I N D E X.

Birkhead, Christopher, goes to France, and thence to Middleburg in Zealand, p. 414.—Where he is condemned to the Rasphouse for two years, p. 417.

Blaugdon, Barbara, account of her, p. 153, &c.—Lands in Dublin and visits the deputy, p. 317.—Imprisoned, p. 321.

Brend, William, barbarously whipped at Boston, p. 359, &c.

Brown, Richard, a temporizer, and a violent persecutor, p. 446—Imprisons in an arbitrary manner, p. 507.

Bulland Mouth, at the meeting there, great abuses committed by the soldiers at trained-band, p. 540.

Burden, Anne, imprisoned at Boston, whither she went to recover a debt, p. 350.

Burnyeat, John, visits Ireland, and travels in company with Robert Lodge, p. 319.

Burrough, Edward, convinced, p. 113.—The first who in company with Francis Howgill visits the city of London, p. 143. See Francis Howgill.—Writes to Oliver Cromwell an account of the persecution of his friends, p. 255—His proposal to vindicate the Quakers doctrine rejected, p. 263.—Applies to Richard Cromwell in behalf of friends, p. 265.—He and Francis Howgill travel in Ireland, p. 313.—At Limerick are assaulted and turned out at the gate, p. 314.—Taken prisoners at Cork and sent under a guard to Dublin, and banished, p. 315.—Edward Burrough's remonstrance, *ibid.*—Solicits King Charles's interposition to stop the

executions in New England, p. 489.—Endeavours with others to prevent the act against Quakers being passed, p. 501.

C.

Callow, William, his sufferings, p. 298, 300.

Caun, John. See John Audland.—Account of him.—His death and character, p. 251, &c.

Caton, William, account of him, p. 114.—He and John Stubbs travelling in Kent are offered money for preaching, and are whipped at Maidstone, and turned out of the town, p. 166, 167.—Travel into Scotland, 168.—Goes to Calais, p. 412.—To Holland, p. 413.—Is imprisoned at Middleburg and sent back to England, p. 414.

Charles second. See King.

Chauncy, Charles, preaches a lecture to encourage persecution, p. 369.

Clarke, Mary, whipped at Boston, p. 351.

Clayton, Richard, for fixing a paper on the Steeple-house door at Bures, is taken up, and whipped, p. 174.—Travels in Ireland, p. 311.

Copeland, John, hath his right ear cut off, p. 372.

Crisp, Stephen, convinced, p. 182.—Travels in Scotland, p. 294.

Cromwell, Oliver, dissolves the long parliament, p. 132.—Declared protector, p. 138.—Reflection on his conduct towards the Quakers, p. 197, &c.—Conference with George Fox, p. 156.

Crook,

# I N D E X.

Crook, John, a justice of peace, convinced by Geo. Fox, p. 158.—His trial at the Old Bailey, p. 518.—Sentence of premunire, p. 524.—He draws up a narrative, &c. p. 526.

Cudworth, James, his account of the persecution in Plymouth colony New England, p. 406, &c. Curtis, Thomas imprisoned at Exeter, and fined, p. 226.

## D.

Declaration from Breda, p. 428, note.

Declaration against plots, &c. drawn up by Geo. Fox and R. Hubberthorne, p. 451, &c.

Dennison, Major-General, of Boston, a persecutor, p. 375.

Dewsbury, William, joins in fellowship with George Fox, p. 108.—Imprisoned at Northampton, p. 191.—Travels into Scotland, where many are convinced, p. 295.

Dyer, Mary, being banished from Boston, p. 386, and returning is condemned to death along with Marmaduke Stevenson and W. Robinson, p. 383.—Her letter to the general court, p. 389.—Is led to execution, p. 391—but reprieved, p. 395.—Returns again to Boston, p. 402.—Sentenced to death a second time, ibid.—Her behaviour and discourse at the place of execution, p. 404.

## E.

Edmundson, William, the first of the people called Quakers in

Ireland, p. 302—Account of him, p. 303, &c.—Takes up his residence in Antrim, p. 304.—Removes from Antrim to Lurgan, and settles a meeting there, p. 309.—Receives a gift in the ministry, p. 310.—Travels on foot with Richard Clayton, p. 311.—Quits shopkeeping and takes a farm, p. 318.—Put in the stocks at Belturbet, p. 323.

Ellington, Francis, his examination before judge Atkins, p. 195, &c.

Endicot, John, governor of New-England, a violent persecutor, p. 375, & paſſim.

## F.

Farnsworth, Richard, convinced, p. 108.

Fell, Thomas, alarmed at the account he received of his family being convinced, p. 115.—Reconciled by George Fox's conversation, and offers his house for a meeting-place, p. 117, and thenceforward continues friendly.

Fell, Margaret, publishes a narrative of George Fox's apprehension, p. 436.—Lays his case before the King, and obtains a habeas corpus, p. 437.—Solicits the King in favour of friends, p. 455.

Fifth-monarchy men, p. 274. See Insurrection.

Firbank chapel, remarkable conviction there, p. 111.

Fisher, Samuel, convinced, an account of him, p. 163, &c.—Attempts to deliver a message to the

# I N D E X.

the Protector, parliament, &c.  
and being prevented, publisheth it  
in print, p. 222, 223.

Fisher, Mary, the first who in  
company with Anne Austin vis-  
its Boston, p. 343.—Their suf-  
ferings there, to p. 346.—She  
travels to Adrianople to visit  
Sultan Mahomet IV. p. 422.—  
Is favourably received, p. 423.

Fox, George, his birth, p. 59.—  
Early turn to religion, p. 60.—  
Put apprentice, ibid.—He leaves  
his relations, p. 61.—Under  
trouble applies to sundry priests,  
p. 62.—Withdraws from the  
public worship, ibid.—His first  
appearing as a minister, p. 72.—  
His first appearance in prayer,  
p. 73.—Symptoms of disgust a-  
gainst George Fox and his  
friends, p. 76.—His first im-  
prisonment at Nottingham, p.  
82.—His ill treatment in several  
other places, p. 84.—Is again  
imprisoned at Derby, p. 91.—  
Gervas Bennet gives George  
Fox and his friends the appella-  
tion of Quakers, p. 96.—The  
jailer repents of his evil treat-  
ment of George Fox, p. 98.—  
George Fox solicited to go into  
the army, declares his principle  
against war, p. 102.—Is there-  
fore imprisoned amongst felons,  
p. 103.—Discharged, p. 107.  
Recommences his travels, and  
several are convinced, p. 108.  
—Much abused by the populace,  
p. 110.—Remarkable convinc-  
ment by his preaching at Sed-  
bergh and Firbank, p. 111.—  
Goes to Swarthmore, and  
preaches in Judge Fell's family,

whereby most of them are con-  
vinced, p. 115.—Accused of  
blasphemy, and acquitted, p.  
122.—At Carlisle summoned be-  
fore the magistrates and com-  
mitted to prison, p. 133.—Ru-  
mour of his being to be hanged,  
ibid—Confined among felons, and  
cruelly treated, p. 134.—Re-  
leased, p. 136.—At Drayton  
disputes with Nathaniel Stephens  
and other priests, p. 154.—Ta-  
ken before Colonel Hacker, p.  
155.—Who sends him to Oliver  
Cromwell, p. 156.—George Fox  
with Edward Pyott and Wil-  
liam Salt takes up in Cornwall,  
and committed to Launceston  
jail, p. 211.—Their trial before  
Judge Glyn, p. 213.—They are  
fined, and remanded to prison,  
p. 215.—In Doomesdale. Dis-  
charged, p. 217.—Their im-  
prisonment conducive to spread their  
principles, p. 218.—Applies to  
Oliver Cromwell to stop perse-  
cution, p. 254.—Cautions his  
friends against joining in parties,  
p. 273.—Travels into Wales. At  
Brecknock rudely treated, p.  
289.—Many convinced, p. 290.  
—Committed to prison at Lan-  
caster by Henry Porter, mayor,  
p. 432.—A copy of his mittimus  
demanded, and refused; his  
friends obtain a sight of it, and  
upon their report he answers  
it, p. 434, 435.—Removed by  
habeas corpus to the King's  
Bench, and released, p. 438.—  
Presents an address to the King,  
informing him of the sufferings  
of friends, p. 538.

## I N D E X.

## G.

Gibbons, Sarah, sent to the house of correction in Boston, p. 354.

## H.

Halhead, Miles, greatly abused, p. 136.—He and Thomas Salt-house imprisoned in Cornwall, and afterwards sent away as vagrants, p. 205, 206.—Again imprisoned at Exeter, by the procurement of a priest, and cruelly used, p. 206, &c.

Harris, Thomas, his sufferings at Boston, p. 354.

Heavens, Elizabeth, and Elizabeth Fletcher cruelly treated and whipped at Oxford, p. 147, &c.

Higginson, vicar of Kirby Steven, his account of the Quakers, remonstrance against it, Note, p. 127.

Holder, Christopher, severely whipped at Boston, p. 351.—Has his right ear cut off, p. 372.

Holmes, Thomas, travels into Wales, p. 289.

Howgill, Francis, convinced, p. 112.—Imprisoned in Appleby, p. 126. See E. Burrough.—Intercedes with O. Cromwell to stop persecution, p. 144.—He and E. Burrough travel to Bristol, p. 145.—Ordered to depart the city, p. 146.

Hubberthorn, Richard, imprisoned in Norwich, p. 169.—Imprisoned at Cambridge, p. 225.—Hath a conference with K. Charles II. p. 440.—Endeavours to prevent the passing the act against Quakers, p. 502.

## I.

Independents, account of them, p. 47.—They seize the government, p. 72.

Insurrection of fifth-monarchy men, p. 441.—Occasion taken from thence to bring the dissenters under suspicion of disloyalty, p. 442.—Proclamation against Anabaptists, Quakers and fifth-monarchy men, p. 443.—Whence followeth a general imprisonment of the people called Quakers, p. 445, &c.

Ireland, account of friends there, p. 302, &c.

Isle of Man, sufferings of Friends there, p. 298, &c.

## K.

Kellam, Margaret, her cruel treatment, p. 209.

King Charles II. restored, p. 428.—Declaration from Breda, ditto.—Upon a conference with Richard Hubberthorn promises protection to his friends, &c. but doth not keep his promise, p. 440.

## L.

Law in New England against Quakers, p. 347, 357.—For cutting off their ears, p. 352.—For banishing them on pain of death, p. 377. See acts of parliament.

Leddra, William, his sufferings in New England; he is brought to his trial, p. 472.—He appeals to England, but is overruled, p. 473.—Sentenced to death, ibid.—His execution,

# I N D E X.

- p. 475.—A letter relating to his death, p. 477.  
Lilburn, John, account of him, p. 200, &c.  
Literature not essential to a minister of the gospel, p. 64.  
Loe, Thomas, visits Ireland, p. 318.  
Lower, Thomas, convinced, p. 217.  
Lurgan, first settled meeting in Ireland, p. 309.  
Luther, Martin, account of him, p. 32, 33.

## M.

- Meetings settled in London, p. 144.  
Millar, Philip, his rude and illegal behaviour, p. 517.  
Modelling the magistracy in consequence of the corporation act, p. 507.  
Mosheim, remarks upon his account of Quakers, p. 96, note.—p. 100, note—p. 249, note.  
Mountmellick, meeting settled there, p. 320.

## N.

- Naylor, James, convinced, p. 108.—His sufferings, p. 125.—Imprisoned and tried for blasphemy, but acquitted, p. 127.—Account of his life, p. 233.—Comes to London, and gains a party there, 234.—Darkened in his understanding, p. 235.—Suffers his adherents to behave to him in an unbecoming manner, p. 236.—Taken up at Bristol, and sent to the parlia-

- ment, his sentence, execution of the sentence, p. 240, 243.—His recantation, p. 244, 245.—Taken ill and dies, p. 246.—His dying expressions, p. 247.  
Neal, Daniel, remarks upon his historical account of the Quakers, note, p. 82, 84.—Upon his representation of friends sufferings in New-England, note, p. 355, &c. 363, &c. 385.  
New-England, first planters thereof, Brownists or Independents, p. 326.—Reflections on the spirit of these colonists, prone to persecution, p. 331.—Roger Williams banished, p. 332.—John Wheelwright banished, p. 334.—Anne Hutchinson, p. 336.—Anabaptists committed to prison, p. 339.—Obadiah Holmes whipped, and two of his friends fined, p. 340.—Law against Anabaptists, p. 341.—Persecution of friends there, from p. 342 to p. 411.—Apology for it, p. 397, &c.—Again, from p. 471 to p. 498.  
Norton, John, priest of Boston, foments the persecution there, p. 264, 375.

## O.

- Occasions of disgust against the people called Quakers, from p. 76 to p. 82.  
Oxford, Mayor of, his moderation, p. 143.

## P.

- Parliament dissolved, p. 466.—New parliament inimical to dissenters, p. 467.

Parnel,

# I N D E X.

Parnel, James, convinced, p. 155.—Travels in the work of the ministry, p. 181.—Imprisoned at Colchester, and thence carried to Chelmsford assizes in chains, p. 184.—Fined and continued in prison at Colchester, p. 185.—Used with great cruelty in prison, p. 186.—Whereby he loses his life, p. 187.—His character, *ibid.*

Perrot, John, his schismatical notions, p. 514, &c.

Plots, rumours thereof, with design to make way for persecuting laws, p. 469.

Presbyterians, account of them, p. 45.

## Q.

Quakers, a name of contempt applied by Gervas Bennett, a justice of Derby, to George Fox and his friends, p. 96.—Calumniated from a soldier's wild discourse with G. Fox, p. 100.—Encrease under sufferings, p. 124.—Their benevolence and mutual affection, p. 140.—Their prosperity in commerce, p. 141.—Greatly abused by the populace, p. 266, &c.—Fined as sabbath-breakers, &c. p. 271.—Released from prison, p. 431.—General imprisonment in consequence of the insurrection of the fifth-monarchy men, p. 445.—Proclamation for their discharge, p. 456.—Afterwards persecuted on obsolete laws against popish recusants, p. 457.—Act against Quakers brought into the house of commons,

VOL. I.

p. 499.—Friends endeavour to get it stopped, *ibid.*—Their steadfastness under persecution, p. 507.—Quakers the greatest sufferers by the penal laws, p. 508.—Their constancy in keeping their meetings openly, p. 509.—Shamefully abused at their meeting at the Bull and Mouth, p. 543.—Whereby one man dies of his wounds, p. 545.

## R.

Reasons of the people called Quakers for declining the customary modes of salutation, and using the singular appellation to one person, p. 76, &c. notes.

Reckless, John, Sheriff of Nottingham, convinced by George Fox, p. 83.

Robinson, William, and Marmaduke Stevenson, &c. banished from Boston on pain of death, p. 386.—Continue about Salem, are taken up, tried and condemned to death, p. 388.—Account of their execution, p. 391.—Inhumanity to their dead bodies, p. 395.

Robinson, George, goes for Jerusalem, and meets with a variety of occurrences, p. 418.—Returns in safety, p. 422.

Rouse, John, suffers the amputation of his right ear at Boston, p. 372.

## S.

Sabbath-breakers, the people called Quakers fined as such for going

N n

to

# I N D E X.

- to their meetings, p. 267, &c.
- Salthouse, Thomas, See Miles Halhead.
- Scotland, first meetings there, p. 290.—First preachers, p. 291.—Convincement at Inverary, p. 296.
- Shattock, William, whipped and banished, p. 353.
- Shattock, Samuel, committed to prison, p. 365, 368.
- Smith, Humphry, in company with Samuel Curtis, taken up, whipped as vagrants, and sent away with a pass, p. 231.
- Smith, Robert, sentenced in a pre-munire, p. 529.
- Southick, Laurence and Cassandra, their sufferings, p. 353, 365.
- Southick, Josiah, p. 353, 365.
- Southick, Daniel and Provided, ordered to be sold for bond-slaves, p. 385.
- Stevenson, Marmaduke, see William Robinson.
- Stordy, Thomas, illegally imprisoned, p. 529.—And premunired, *ibid.*
- Storr, Joseph, imprisoned with William Dewsbury at Northampton, p. 191.
- Storr, Marmaduke, his brother coming to visit him in prison is himself also imprisoned, p. 192.
- Stubbs, John, account of him, p. 162. See Caton, William.
- Stubbs, Thomas, imprisoned and whipped, p. 197.
- T.
- Tithes, sufferings of friends for
- not paying them, p. 279, 280, &c.—Remarks upon them, p. 284.
- Trial of William Dewsbury, &c. p. 19.
- of James Naylor, p. 127.
- of George Fox, &c. p. 122, 213, 438.
- of Francis Ellington, p. 695.
- of William Robinson and M. Stevenson, p. 388.
- of Mary Dyer, 388 and p. 402.
- of William Leddra, p. 472, &c.
- of Wenlock Christison, p. 482.
- of John Crook and others, p. 518.
- of Robert Smith, &c. p. 528.
- of several friends on 35 Eliz. in order to banishment, on pain of death, p. 533 to 537.
- Trowel, John, dies of his wounds and abuse received at the Bull and Mouth. The coroner's inquest summoned, but decline to bring in a verdict, p. 545.

## V.

- Vagrants, Quakers punished as such, p. 224, 225, 226 to 232. See Whipped.
- Upshaw, Nicholas, for testifying against a persecuting law in New-England, fined and banished, p. 348, 349.

## W.

- Waldenses, account of them, p. 24.

Wales,

## I N D E X.

Wales, account of the rise of friends there, p. 287.

Wharton, Edward, sentenced to banishment, p. 479.

Whipped as vagrants, during the commonwealth and protectorate, Elizabeth Fletcher and Elizabeth Heavens, p. 149.—Barbara Blaugdon, p. 151.—William Caton and John Stubbs, p. 166.—Richard Clayton, p. 174.—Thomas Stubbs, p. 197.—John Martindale, Humphry Sprague and Thomas Dyer, p. 226.—George Whitehead, p. 229.—Humphry Smith and Samuel Curtis, p. 231.—George Bewley, John Ellis and Humphry Sprague, p. 232.

Whitehead, George, imprisoned at Norwich, p. 170.—Visiting Thomas Symonds in prison is de-

tained there, p. 171.—Violently assaulted by the rabble, and rescued by a trooper, p. 172.—Taken up with Richard Clayton and Joseph Harwood, imprisoned and fined, p. 174.—Their hard usage in prison, p. 176, &c.—Released by order of Oliver Cromwell, p. 179.—Cruelly whipped, and passed as a vagrant by order of Gurdens justices in Suffolk, p. 229.—Endeavours with others to prevent the act against Quakers being passed, p. 503.

Wickliff, John, p. 26.

Wilson, John, priest of Boston, foments the persecution there, p. 375.—Attends the execution of William Robinson and Marmaduke Stevenson, p. 393.

## E R R A T U M.

Page 30, line 6, for *brother* read *son*.









Date Due

FACULTY

FACULTY



PRINTED IN U. S. A.



